**Notions on the chorography of Brazil / by Joaquim Manoel de Macedo ; translated by H. Le Sage.**

### Contributors

Macedo, Joaquim Manuel de, 1820-1882.
Royal College of Physicians of Edinburgh

### Publication/Creation

Leipzig : F.A. Brockhaus, 1873.

### Persistent URL

https://wellcomecollection.org/works/zudzf4gc

### Provider

Royal College of Physicians Edinburgh

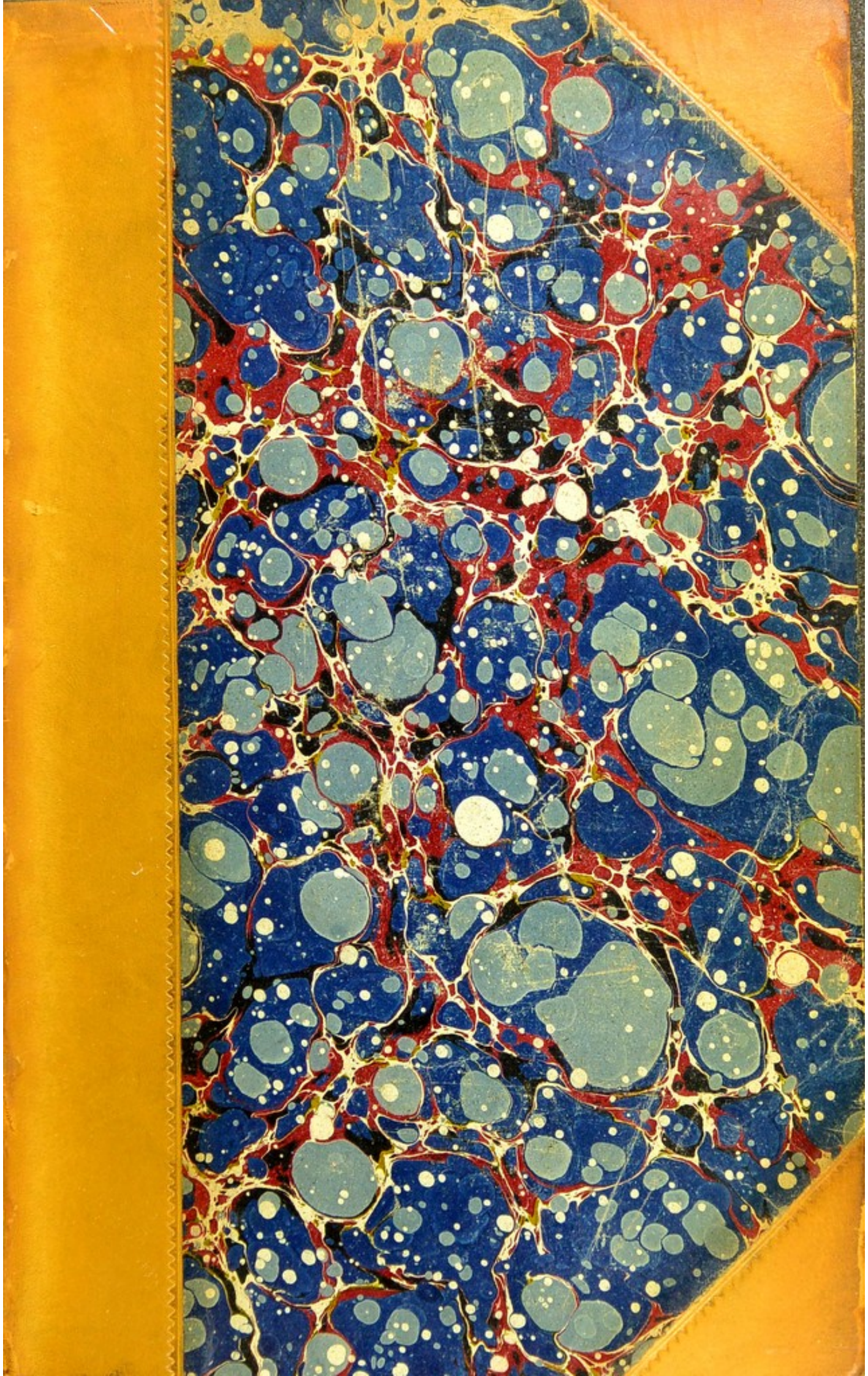
### License and attribution

This material has been provided by This material has been provided by the Royal College of Physicians of Edinburgh. The original may be consulted at the Royal College of Physicians of Edinburgh. where the originals may be consulted.
This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.

wellcome collection

Wellcome Collection
183 Euston Road
London NW1 2BE UK
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722
E library@wellcomecollection.org
https://wellcomecollection.org



Y 3.12

Cb 4.12

R32048

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

https://archive.org/details/b21944775

# NOTIONS

ON THE

# CHOROGRAPHY OF BRAZIL.

# NOTIONS

ON THE

# CHOROGRAPHY OF BRAZIL

BY

JOAQUIM MANOEL DE MACEDO.

TRANSLATED

BY

H. LE SAGE.

LEIPZIG.
PRINTED BY F. A. BROCKHAUS.
1873.

# CONTENTS.

## FIRST PART.

### GENERAL SURVEY.


| | | | Page |
|---|---|---|---|
| CHAPTER | I. | A Historical Sketch of Brazil | 3 |
| » | II. | Astronomical Positions and Boundaries of Brasil | 29 |
| » | III. | Climate | 38 |
| » | IV. | Chief Islands | 42 |
| » | V. | Principal Straits and Capes | 53 |
| » | VI. | Bays and Ports | 57 |
| » | VII. | Brazilian Orographic System | 79 |
| » | VIII. | The Brazilian Hydrographic System | 91 |
| » | IX. | Natural Productions of Brazil | 133 |
| » | X. | Industry, Agriculture, Commerce and Material Progress of the Country | 154 |
| » | XI. | Governmental and Administrative System | 171 |
| » | XII. | Supplementary to the preceding | 187 |
| » | XIII. | Civilization and Population | 196 |
| » | XIV. | Colonization and Religious Instruction | 209 |


### PROVINCES AND MUNICIPALITY OF THE CAPITAL OF RIO DE JANEIRO.


| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| CHAPTER | I. | Province of Amazonas | 225 |
| » | II. | Province of Grão-Pará | 239 |
| » | III. | Province of Maranhão | 257 |
| » | IV. | Province of Piauhy | 272 |
| » | V. | Province of Ceará | 280 |
| » | VI. | Province of Rio Grande do Norte | 293 |
| » | VII. | Province of Parahyba | 301 |

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| CHAPTER | VIII. | Province of Pernambuco | 311 |
| » | IX. | Province of Alagôas | 327 |
| » | X. | Province of Sergipe | 334 |
| » | XI. | Province of Bahia | 343 |
| » | XII. | Province of Spirito Santo | 366 |
| » | XIII. | Province of Rio de Janeiro | 377 |
| » | XIV. | Municipality of the Court | 406 |
| » | XV. | Province of S. Paulo | 420 |
| » | XVI. | Province of Paraná | 446 |
| » | XVII. | Province of Santa Catharina | 460 |
| » | XVIII. | Province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul | 475 |
| » | XIX. | Province of Minas Geraes | 506 |
| » | XX. | Province of Goyaz | 535 |
| » | XXI. | Province of Matto Grosso | 550 |
| » | XXII. | Public Revenue, and Commercial and Maritime Movement of the Provinces | 574 |

# FIRST PART.

## GENERAL SURVEY.

# CHAPTER I.

A historical Sketch of Brazil.

Pedro Alvares Cabral, chosen by Don Manoel the *Fortunate*, king of Portugal, as the continuator of the great achievements of Vasco da Gama, who, the first, after a long age, had just effected the circumnavigation of Africa, and the planting of the flag of Portugueze dominion in India, sailed from the Tagus on the 9th March 1500, and as, in order that his squadron might avoid the calms of the coast of Guinea, had kept away considerably from the African coast, and fallen off much more than he had calculated on, to the west impelled by the ocean currents, at that time ignored, he saw on the 22nd April an unknown land; two days after which he entered and anchored in a sheltered bay, which he called *Porto Seguro*, and on the 1st of May, caused to be erected on the continent, a great cross of wood, which served for the celebration of the sacred bloodless sacrifice, as well as for the purpose of carving thereon the arms and device of the king of Portugal, in testimony of his sovereignty over the newly discovered country, which was taken, erroneously, for a large island, and immediately received the name of *Vera Cruz*, shortly afterwards changed to that of *Terra de Santa Cruz;* and finally — a few years later — this name was substituted by that of Brazil, which has since become perpetuated.

Notwithstanding that three Spanish navigators, Alonzo de Hojeda in June 1499, Vicente Yanes Pinçon, in January

1500 and Diego de Lepe in February or March of the same year, had reached certain points of this part of the South American continent, before the renowned Portuguese captain, still history conferred on Pedro Alvares Cabral the title of discoverer of Brazil, not merely because he really was such, but because the acknowledgment of the rights of the Portuguese crown to the possession and dominion of the newly found land was immediately and uncontestedly declared in Europe.

The Portuguese on their arrival found Brazil sparsely populated by numerous tribes of savages: they appeared to belong to two distinct nations, one of which, the *Tapuya*, shewed that they were advancing from the North towards the South, and pursuing with hostility the other, the *Tupy* or *Guarany*, which tribes still commanded a great extent of the seaboard, and country to the South; they were, however, all uncivilised, and went about in a state of nudity, more or less complete, merely wearing ornaments made of feathers, or of other rude materials; they lived a wandering life, changing their places of abode within short intervals of time; they subsisted by the chase, and by fishing, as well as on roots and fruits: they had no regular government, neither had they a religion or social ties; they were ignorant of the rights of property; they frequently made war, one upon the other, having for arms bows and arrows, and the club or mace which they called *tacapé;* some of them were cannibals from a horrible liking for human flesh; and all of them devoured their prisoners from a vengeful spirit; they were above all things jealous of their independence, notwithstanding their being incapable, through their profound ignorance, of maintaining the same, as well as through their being subdivided into small clans, and from the animosities which still further separated them.

Don Manoel paid but slight attention to Brazil, which, beyond some little known and inefficient explorations of its

coast, the passing visit of navigators bound for India, and the longer stay of French vessels of marque which immediately commenced smuggling the wood, which gave it's name to the country, and which lay unvalued, and almost despised during a quarter of a century.

Dom João III., successor of Dom Manoel, initiated and developed the colonization of Brazil. In 1534, scarcely two years after, Martim Affonso de Souza had, according to orders given to him, founded the colonies of S. Vicente Piratininga, in the present province of S. Paulo, he divided the immense Portuguese dominion in America into extensive hereditary Captaincies, he endowed with extraordinary powers and privileges, and with absolute independence one of the other certain noblemen and notable vassals, who, in compensation, should bear the expenses and charge of founding, peopling, governing, and defending their real fiefs.

Experience soon shewed in the captaincies which could make head, the serious difficulties that accompanied such a system, and the King himself created in 1549 the general government of Brazil, which had for its capital the city of *Salvador*, which was ordered to be raised for that purpose in Bahia.

The administrative organization of the great colony was, at it's commencement, very simple; a Governor-General was at the head of the colonial government; a Magistrate-General distributed justice: a Commissary-General presided over the treasury; a *Captain-General* the coast and a *Provost-General*, these had entrusted to them, the former, the defense of the coast, the latter the military affairs of the capital city.

In 1551, the ecclesiastical affairs received, as their high director, the bishop of Brazil. Each captaincy contained authorities, which in their subaltern character corresponded to those civil, fiscal, and military functionaries, the Governors or their heirs and successors being in all cases the competent donees.

The municipal element transplanted from the Metropolis had entered at once essentially in the life of the rising foci of population.

In the course of time, and owing to events, circumstances, and various other causes, the hereditary provinces went on reverting to the crown until the last which still remained to privileged possessors, rapidly and successively followed the same course, receiving an indemnification which was wisely counselled by the celebrated statesman, arbitrator of Portuguese policy in the reign of Dom José I., the King, who shewed himself so strong in his wrongly denominated or at least his truly patriotic and very serviceable weakness.

During two centuries and some odd years repeated irregularities, and changes were suffered by the regulations of that colonial system, tending to centralise under one single head the governing power, for besides having twice raised, although only for a short time, the city of Rio de Janeiro to the category of capital of a general government of the provinces of the south, and besides those of Ceará, Maranhão, and Pará having formed the State of Maranhão, exclusively subject to the supreme authority of Lisbon, it yet happened that at different periods there were provinces with governors independent of the Governor-General of Bahia.

Nor even were the title and hierarchy of the chiefs of high colonial rank maintained unchanged, but were altered by a well based and permanent reform: after 1641, when Brazil possessed her first Vice-roy, there succeeded without rule or justifiable foundation such functionaries, sometimes with that same title of superior rank, at others with the ancient one of governors-general, until an uninterrupted series of vice-roys of Brazil commenced in Bahia, and continued from 1763 onwards, in the city of Rio de Janeiro, whence was definitively transferred the capital of the

great colony, and to which the Portuguese Royal Family emigrating from their kingdom were received in 1808, an event which put an end to vice-royalties, and which brought about a serious alteration in the economy of the country, which in this year not only ceased to be a colony, but even at once assumed a political position, and raised herself up, guarding in her bosom during thirteen years the capital of the Luzitanian Monarchy.

The conquest and colonization of Brazil contested with the Portuguese by the savage tribes, who inhabited it, was a long, difficult, and painful labour, for the performance of which three elements co-operated, all of them important, and each one directed for a special purpose,—the action of the Government, the religious teaching of the Jesuits, and the adventurous and indomitable spirit of the Mountaineers of S. Paulo.

The conquest and official colonization effected, by means of warlike expeditions more or less regular, which from the last quarter of the 16th century until almost the end of the following one were directed with almost exclusive preference towards the northern part, defeating the natives, and founding towns and fortresses in Sergipe, Parahyba do Norte, Rio Grande do Norte, Ceará, Maranhão and Pará; from 1580 onwards the solicitude of the Government took an opposite course, with the desire of giving, as the southern boundary of Brazil, the left bank of the Plata, and thenceforth S. Catherina and Rio Grande do Sul began systematically to be peopled.

The Jesuits succeeded in gaining prodigious victories by civilizing the heathen; they frequently anticipated the Government conquests, and always accompanied them closely; they increased their colleges, and their *Missions*, knowing how to take them to great distances in the interior of the Country, and not only did they domesticate, but they also collected them together, and subjected to a

severe discipline many thousands of savages, whose obédience was wonderful, and became at last dangerous and injurious to them.

In the early times there was no difficult or hazardous undertaking, in which those priests did not make themselves of the greatest utility, but who otherwise, after most transcendent services, compromised their characters by lamentable errors and abuses, which ended in bringing about their banishment, when in the excess of their influence and power they endeavoured to set themselves up as a State in the State.

The S. Paulo Mountaineers, intrepid adventurers impelled by greed of gain, and by a certain natural ardour, which appeared to set their blood boiling, and to render them as incapable of leading an indolent or quiet life, as they were always ready to rush on to the most daring exploits, were the great pioneers of the deserts, and of the immense inland wastes of the vastness of Brazil. In the beginning, seeking out, fighting, and pursuing the savages to enslave and sell them, and later hotly engaged in the discovery of gold mines, and of deposits of precious stones, they went through mountain forests, gigantic rivers, and over mountains, they went on subjecting to vassalage Minas Geraes, Matto Grosso, and Goyaz, the first villages of which are due to them, and they arrived with their celebrated banners at places even in the interior of Pará, and also at places of some of the other provinces of the North.

Having thus succinctly explained the system of colonial administration and the co-operation in some measure jealous and dissentient of the three impulsive forces of the conquests and colonization of Brazil, history will more easily present the same in a short sketch.

Under the dominion of the last Portuguese kings of the Aviz dynasty, Brazil up to the year 1580 remained dormant, without her colonizers having advanced either to

the North or to the South on her march to conquest: only in the years between 1577 to 1580 were the first attempts made, at the time when Lourenço da Veiga was Governor-General, to wrest Sergipe and Parahyba do Norte from the Indians. Every effort was made to organize the administration, and to provide for the safety of the existing provinces. The Jesuits arrived in 1549 in company with the first Governor-General, Thomé de Souza; and they immediately set about civilizing the Indians, a most difficult and dangerous mission in which they gave proofs of extraordinary capacity and tried devotion; the certainty of protection and liberty which they afforded the Indians against the right which the colonists assumed to make them captives, and to sell them as slaves, being otherwise of great assistance.

From such antagonism there immediately arose divergencies, which gave cause for almost incessant conflicts and at times serious struggles between the priests of the company and the colonists, principally towards the end of the 17th century.

In the time of Duarte da Costa, the second Governor-General (from 1553 to 1558) already those Indians called by the name of *Mamelukes* of S. Paulo had attacked in 1556 the college of the Jesuits on account of this very question of the Indians, and although repulsed, they gave cause for an aggravation of the misunderstanding between the Governor-General and the first Bishop of Brazil D. Pedro Fernandes Sardinha, who departing in order to lay his complaint before the King, was cast on shore, and died by the hands of the aborigines of Pernambuco.

Besides the war with the aborigines, both in the captaincies of the Ilhoes and of Porto Seguro, as well as in that of S. Vicente, the glory of attacking and conquering the French who since 1555 occupied the bay of Rio de Janeiro, pertains to Mem de Sá, third Governor-General

(1558—1572), who founded the city, which is now the capital of the empire (1567) and which six years afterwards, in 1573 is raised to the head quarters of the Government-General of the captaincies of the South, in the administrative division of Brazil, which barely maintained themselves till 1576 or 1577.

With the death of Dom Henrique, Cardinal-King, the dynasty of Aviz came to an end,—of which dynasty Brazil had for her sovereigns:

Dom Manoel (king of Portugal since 1496) from 1500 to 1521.

Dom João III. from 1521 to 1557.

Dom Sebastião from 1557 to 1578.

The Cardinal Dom Henrique from 1578 to 1580.

Following the destiny of its metropolis, the Portuguese colony of America passed under the dominion of Spain, which dominion lasted till 1640.

During those sixty years, conquest and colonization advanced along the coast northwards, obtaining Parahyba in 1585, Sergipe in 1590, Rio Grande do Norte in 1599, Ceará in 1610, Maranhão in 1615, the French who occupied it since 1612 being expelled, and finally Pará in 1616, the year in which was founded the city of Nossa Senhora de Belem, of the new province with which and together with the foregoing was created the State of Maranhão in 1621. The S. Paulo backwoodsmen were already advancing into the interior *in chase* of the savages to capture and sell them, and went as far as Paraguay, giving as a reason the complaints and protests of the Jesuits, who not less bold, went there implanting, together with their religious instruction, their influence and dominion.

It was likewise at that epoch of the Spanish dominion that the Metropolitan Government was moved by greedy desire at the news of the auriferous treasures and again established the General-Government of the captaincies of the

South in Rio de Janeiro in 1609, which otherwise came to an end in 1617, without having produced the result which had been calculated upon.

The disputes of the Jesuits with the colonists became during, but principally towards the end of that time so serious and disturbing to the public peace especially in Rio de Janeiro, and in S. Paulo, that they only pale in the history of the times, dazzled by the terrible lightning of the foreign war which broke out in the North.

The English and French pirates and cruisers had already caused to be felt in Espirito Santo, Bahia and Pernambuco the general enmity which Spain under Philip II. had provoked in Europe; Holland more open and daring, however, renewing the war against Philip IV. after a truce of twelve years, attacked and took in 1624 the city of Salvador, and losing it in the year following, returned to the charge in 1630, when with an easy victory, they got a firm footing in Olinda and the Recife, from whence after long and persevering struggles they extended the empire of their arms from the river S. Francisco to Rio Grande do Norte.

Far greater harm to the Portuguese interests in Brazil, than the military power of the Dutch wrought, was the striking picture of the political and administrative wisdom of the ensuing material improvements drawn from the fountain of civilization and progress which began to be put in force in the conquered captaincies, thanks to the able and provident government of Prince Maurice of Nassau.

During those sixty years of Spanish dominion the Portuguese colony of America had the following kings:

Philip II. (1st of Portugal) from 1580 to 1598.

Philip III. (2nd of Portugal) from 1598 to 1621.

Philip IV. (3rd of Portugal) from 1621 to 1640.

With Dom João IV. in 1640 commenced for Portugal,

and therefore for Brazil, subject to the same destiny, the dynasty of Braganza.

The Dutch war continued, shortly entering into its final period: notwithstanding Maurice of Nassau had pushed his dominion as far as the river Real, and his Lieutenants had effected in 1641 the conquest of Maranhão and Ceará; on one side the egoism of the West Indian Company and the intrigues set in motion against that prince, who in disgust retired to Holland, weakened the victorious conquerors, and on the other hand the profoundly catholic feeling of the Portuguese offended by persecuting intolerance, and their patriotism becoming enthusiastic with the revolution of 1640, caused the conquered to become conquerors: in 1644 the Dutch were driven out from Maranhão and Ceará, and in 1645 there broke out the so-called insurrection of the independents, who with unsurpassable valour and heroism struggled without ceasing; they gained notable battles, and finally succeeded in 1654 in driving the foreign invaders out of Brazil, the whole of which remained under the dominion of Portugal.

Peace was celebrated between Portugal and Holland for seven years.

The Dutch war had caused to be made much better known the interior, as well as the natural resources of the province, where so many battles had been fought, and compelled their neighbours to draw closer, more than hitherto, their relations; the Paulistas increased and carried their banners to, and through far distant deserts; gold and precious stones were attracting to the centre, in the West, great numbers of adventurers; there rose up villages in the midst of forests, and on the banks of rivers, yielding abundance of riches; and thus it happened, that during the reigns of Affonso VI., of Pedro II. and of João V., the increase of population, and the progress of Brazil in the bishoprick of Rio de Janeiro, and in that of Pernam-

buco manifested themselves, that of Bahia being raised to the Arch-bishoprick in 1676,—that of the bishoprick of Maranhão in 1677, of the captaincy of S. Paulo, and Minas, independent of that of Rio de Janeiro, in 1709, and still further that of Minas Geraes in 1720, of Goyaz in 1744 and of Cuyaba in 1748 separated from that of S. Paulo.

Nevertheless there was no lack of lamentable misunderstandings and events which disturbed the tranquillity of the great colony. The disputes with the Jesuits, now somewhat cooled down in the southern provinces, boiled over in the province of Maranhão, on account of the temporal jurisdiction over the Indians; and it so happened that on two occasions in 1661 and in 1684, those priests were driven out by the people who rose up in rebellion, although they were afterwards allowed to return to their colleges. Even in Maranhão a company assuming to itself the right of a monopoly of import and export merchandize gave rise in 1684 to the outbreak of Beckman, so called from the name of its chief, who about twelve months afterwards underwent the punishment of death on the scaffold, as well as one of his accomplices. In Rio de Janeiro in like manner, also in 1660, the people already driven to desperation rose up in mutiny on account of the monopoly, and also by the annoyances of another company, called General of Commerce, on a large scale.

A far greater calamity than this occurred in Minas Geraes in the years 1708 and 1709, when the Paulistas and strangers, jealous of precedency, quarelled, and in Pernambuco from 1710 to 1711 the civil war (the Pedlars) broke out between the sons of the soil, and those from the Mother Country, or from the capital, which arose from questions of boundary limits of the new town of Recife separated from that of Olinda, — rivalry thereby breaking out in the conflicts of the North as well as in those of the South, — a

rivalry and hatred to cause an abyss to open which should separate for ever Brazilians and Portuguese.

Two French expeditions, taking advantage of the "War of succession", one under the command of Duclerc in 1710, the other led by Duguay-Trouin in 1711, attacked the city of Rio de Janeiro, which defeated and took prisoner Duclerc and his men, but given over to Duguay-Trouin, after being sacked, the city paid the amount of her ransom in gold.

Nevertheless the culminating point of this period which embraces almost a century, was the foundation of the colony of Sacramento, on a starting point of the Plata in the year 1680; inasmuch as was made manifest the desire of the Regent at that time, and afterwards King of Portugal Dom Pedro II., an aspiration which passed to his successors (the said Platine boundary), which was to give to Brazil the said platine boundary for southern boundary. This transcendent semi-geographic-political combination remained marked in the continued wars carried on with much obstinacy between the Banda Oriental and the colony of Sacramento, a starting point of rivalry between Spain and Portugal in their respective possessions in America.

Early in 1680 the Spaniards in South America took possession by force of the yet infant colony which nevertheless was restored to Portugal in 1683; in the year 1705, Valdez, Governor of Buenos Ayres reconquered it;—and again Spain was obliged to give it up to Dom João V., under the treaty of Utrecht in 1715; not forgetting, however, to give peremptory orders that the city of Monte-Video should be founded, in order that its position should be a lively protest against the ambitious views, geographical, political, and territorial, of the Kings of Portugal. Even in the year 1735, and in spite of the treaty of Utrecht, Don Miguel de Salcedo, also one of the Governors of Buenos Ayres attempted, but without success, to make himself master of

the colony of Sacramento, the garrison of which made an energetic and honourable resistance. The treaty of Madrid in 1750 came opportunely to put a termination, unhappily ephemeral, to this grave international or rather colonial rivalry.

By the treaty of Madrid, Spain recovered possession of Sacramento, the object of her ardent ambition, inasmuch as it was tantamount to her holding possession of both the banks of the river Plate; but she gave up to Portugal in exchange the seven settlements of Missões, which now belong to Brazil. In their diplomatic agreement both powers lost, on one side, established dominions, to gain another boundary less threatened by conflicts and wars; but, as it was natural, however, on both sides, the natural feeling or passion taking only into consideration concessions, without looking at the advantages of peace and harmony, received with ill-favor, and in opposition to confirmed right the stipulations of the treaty of 1750.

The rivalry and disputes between Spain and Portugal on account of the left bank of the river Plata served at least for the purpose calculated on of peopling the island and continent of S. Catarina, and which in 1739 received a distinct form of government, but subject to that of Rio de Janeiro, and those of Rio Grande do Sul, which henceforth remained belonging to that new captaincy.

From 1750 to 1777 a remarkable period of economical development, of progress and prosperity manifested itself remarkably in Brazil, if we except the ill fortune which attended the last year of the above dates. This period embraces the entire reign of Dom José I. during which the political and administrative genius of the Marquis de Pombal made itself felt.

In 1757 the province of S. José de Javary or of Rio Negro, subject to that of Pará, was created on the Alto Amazonas, and in 1760 that of Rio Grande de

S. Pedro do Sul subject to that of Rio de Janeiro, and to this city was transferred from that of Salvador the capital of Brazil in 1763. Navigation and commerce acquired a lively impulse: many manufactories were established; agriculture flourished; the cultivation of indigo was introduced, the production of cochineal and flax was developed, coffee plantations were begun, the manufactory of cordage and others, handicraft trades were pushed on with spirit, schooling was much more looked after and disseminated, and many Brazilians were called upon to exercise important functions, which up to that time had been of rare occurrence.

The freedom of the Indians deserved effectual protection, marriages between Portuguese and Indians were rendered easy, through the incentives held out by the Goernment.

The high colonial administration and the collection of the treasury dues being revised and properly regulated, the military force and reserves organized, better disciplined, and augmented by easily understood endeavours gave a new and animated aspect to the colony; the disputes and differences with the Jesuits came to an end by the banishment of the latter in 1759, and the people breathed freely and fearlessly on seeing the terrible power of the inquisition destroyed.

This flattering picture does not exclude the oppression and the judgments very often tyrannical exercised by the vice-roys, governors, and captains-general; this evil, however, was not of recent date, and was in accordance with the system of government. — The greatest vexation and the sorest calamities still emanated from the question of the South.

The Portuguese and Spanish Governments tried to put in force the Madrid treaty; but the task of settling the boundary limits failed in the beginning through the oppo-

sition of the Jesuits, who in the North multiplied every material impediment, and in the southern plains the Indians broke out into rebellion and war; and later through the disagreement of the surveying commissioners.—

In 1761 the two Powers annulled that diplomatic contract of 1750, and soon after, in 1762 hostilities broke out, the Spaniards gaining possession of the colony of Sacramento, a good part of Rio Grande, of which they retained unjust possession,—only restoring that colony in the following year; from 1767 to 1776 continued struggles went on, and the Portuguese regained all that they had previously lost. Spain, irritated at this, sent in 1777 a powerful army which took possession of the island of St. Catherine, and soon after of the colony in dispute, whose fortifications they razed, and they would have extended their conquests still further had it not been for the peace to which Portugal had to submit, getting back again the island of St. Catherine, but losing her much cherished post on the left bank of the Plate, the Missões of Uruguay, and no small portion of the Rio Grande do Sul territory through the unfortunate treaty of St. Ildefonso in 1777 when Dom José I. being dead, the Marquis de Pombal was no longer the Minister of the Portuguese Crown.

Brazil emerged from a season of prosperity when she began to feel and to be aware of the natural elements of her future greatness; the revolution and independence of the United States of North America, the regenerating ideas, and aspirations taught by French writers caused the hearts of many Brazilians to beat with hope. Dreamt of by students, cherished by poets, the first conspiracy for the independence of the Portuguese colony in America was generously although precociously planned: it was crushed by the Government, even before it was openly declared in Minas Geraes, in which was its centre; the principal leaders being made prisoners in 1789, and condemned to death

and subsequent infamy, their sentence was commuted to banishment as punishment, with the exception of Joaquim José da Silva Xavier—surnamed Tiradentes, who received on the gallows the crown and glory of a martyr in 1792.

Meanwhile it is an undeniable fact and matter for historical reflexion that for some years previous and even afterwards, Brazilian artists and poets took pains in giving to their works the marked colouring and characteristics of their country, it was already the feeling of their country's independence which found a place in their hearts and understandings — Napoleon appeared on the scene and hastened the course of events.

Flying from the modern Cesar, who imposed his will on Europe, and who led kings captive that he might rule over their dominions, the royal family of Portugal emigrated to Brazil in 1808, and Dom João, the Prince Regent, fixing on Rio de Janeiro as the seat of the monarchy, was pleased to confer on it all the rights and institutions indispensable to the ennobled capital.

Brazil ceased to be a colony in 1808 by the decree which set open her ports to the commerce of all friendly nations, and was raised to the category of a kingdom in 1815. In all the provinces, was felt the influx into the capital of the monarchy established in the bosom of the neighbouring sister city,—as well as the presence of the king in his American kingdom, which was scarcely inferior to that of Portugal, and which latter flattered herself by considering Rio de Janeiro the metropolis of Lisbon, which had been her capital.

The rights of position and hierarchy may be denied for a long time to a people who had never enjoyed them; but to take away from them what they already enjoy, is a mistake which rarely escapes impunity.

Fatality forced Portugal to this patriotic task, which was in other respects for her interest, her dignity and for

the imprescribable right of her rank as an European power. Portugal desired to have her king in Lisbon, she had a right to this desire, and had it satisfied, but the enforcement of her claim cost her dear, for through it she lost Brazil.

In 1820 a political revolution was enthusiastically effected in European Portugal, which found steady support in many of the Brazilian provinces, and in the capital, the city of Rio de Janeiro, although the manifesto of the revolutionary Junta organized in Oporto gave as the chief causes for complaint on the part of Portugal the permanent stay of the Court far from its home, and the ruin of her commerce, and that of her industry caused by the opening of the Brazilian ports to the commerce of all the nations of the world.

Those persons are mistaken who attribute that adhesion exclusively to the influence of the Portuguese troops in garrison in the cities,—although doubtless they assisted greatly in the *pronunciamento;* what chiefly determined it was the development of liberal ideas already so far advanced in Brazil, that in 1817 it caused the breaking out in Pernambuco of a daring republican revolution, which was quenched in blood. The triumphant movement in Portugal held out the promise of a constitutional representative government, and the first result of it was a convocation of the constituted Cortes; the Brazilians adopted it on that account.

But the consequent Brazilian Portuguese antagonism immediately made itself manifest: the King was obliged, much against his will, to set out for Lisbon, deciding upon leaving in Brazil as Regent, the prince Dom Pedro, heir to the throne; this provision was not sufficient to lessen the displeasure of the capital, which considered itself slighted, and on the electors of the capital assembling in the Exchange, in order to choose their deputies to the Cortes and

endeavouring by arbitrary and extravagant resolutions to oppose the retirement of Dom João VI., they were forcibly dissolved by the military, who without any previous warning fired into the room of the meeting, and invaded it with fixed bayonets.

This deplorable occurrence of the 21st April 1821 was shortly followed by the departure of the King, who on the 26th of the same month quitted Brazil never to return: he foresaw her approaching independence,—advising Dom Pedro, on the eve of his, Dom João's, departure, in such hypothesis, to accept the throne of the new Empire.

The policy of Dom João, Prince Regent until 1816, and afterwards King, was not always a peaceable one. In 1809 Cayenne fell into the power of Portugal, Victor Hugues, the governor of this French colony having capitulated; this colony was, however, restored to France in 1817, by the convention of the 28th August of that year.

Availing themselves of the wars in Europe, the Portuguese had already in 1801 avenged themselves for the disasters of 1777, taking the seven Establishments of Missões, the Serro Largo, and laying waste the frontiers beyond Jaguarão, and Santa Tecla in Rio Grande do Sul.—Soon after the revolutions of the States of Spanish America came suddenly on, and Dom João, becoming more sanguine, undertook to carry out to the end the aspirations of Dom Pedro II.

What ought to have been an easy campaign, having been mismanaged when about to terminate, another was resolved on with numerous forces in 1816, and after a war of more than three years duration accompanied by brilliant victories the whole of the Banda Oriental was accompanied by the Portuguese army, and finally on the 31st July 1821 with the free and spontaneous acquiescence of the settlement of Monte Video and of the deputies of the different towns, it was incorporated with Brazil under the denomination of the Cisplatine Province.

The regency of the Prince Dom Pedro during its short space of fifteen months and some odd days, ending on the 7th September 1822 signalised an era of laborius and coveted transition.

The Portuguese Cortes reckoning upon the assistance of regular and disciplined troops, who, being sent from the Mother Country in Europe, formed the garrisons of the principal Brazilian cities, launched against the sister kingdom provocative decrees, discentralizing their provinces, doing away with the tribunals established by the King in Rio de Janeiro, and ordering the Prince Regent to return to Europe.

Rio de Janeiro, S. Paulo, and Minas made a representation to Dom Pedro II. begging him to remain in Brazil: which was equivalent to proposing to him disobedience and revolution; the Prince, at first, adverse to the idea of independence, in the first months of his regency, hesitating afterwards, but resolved at last, accepted the revolution, and became the head of it, declaring on the 9th January 1822—*that he would remain in Brazil.*

The Portuguese garrisons in vain attempted to oppose the Brazilian mouvement; that of Rio de Janeiro yielded after a haughty refusal and departed for Portugal being forced thereto; the garrison of Pernambuco was driven out with the captain-general (Luiz do Rego Barreto)—detested on account of the cruel reaction in 1817;—that of Bahia all powerful in the capital found out by experience in combats what was Brazilian valour, and on the 2nd July 1823, that garrison evacuated the glorious city founded by Thomé de Souza.

After having passed the Rubicon, on the 9th January, Dom Pedro frankly and openly became a revolutionist, satisfying the representations and requests of the senate of Rio de Janeiro, called together on the 16th February, a council consisting of the procurators of the provinces

accepted on the 13th May for himself and for his successors, "the title and office of *Perpetual Defender of Brazil*"; he called together on the 6th June a constitutional and legislative assembly for the Kingdom of Brazil, he declared, by a decree of the 1st August, enemies and to be treated as such all the troops that might be sent to Brazil either from Portugal or from any other country without his previous knowledge and consent, and after other acts and decrees to the same purport and each time more clearly declared the revolution which he had adopted, and which he would carry out to its utmost extent, on finding himself on the 7th September 1822 in S. Paulo,—he raised on the banks of the Ipiranga, the patriotic, historical, and solemn cry of—*Independence or Death!*—this was the first day in the annals of Brazilian national glory, and he came to be proclaimed, in the city of Rio de Janeiro, the constitutional Emperor of Brazil, on the 12th October of the same year.

Never was there a prince or citizen who in a country politically regenerated was more fervently, spontaneously, and loudly applauded and glorified by the people over whom he reigned than was Dom Pedro I., Emperor of Brazil.

Soon after, in 1823, Dom Pedro compromised his reign, by dissolving on the 12th November the Brazilian chambers, which had been opened on the 3rd May. The constitution of the empire granted by Dom Pedro I., and sworn to on the 25th March 1824 could not overcome the resentment which the dissolution of the chambers caused, and on the 2nd of July of same year Pernambuco declared herself republican, inviting the northern provinces to establish the *Confederation of the Equator*, for which however she received much less assistance than she counted on from Parahyba, Ceará, and Rio Grande do Norte. The rebellion being easily crushed, a victorious reaction took place, the

lawful power spreading terror by the excessive severity of its punishments.

In addition to the troubles and dissensions of 1823—1824 so serious, the rising of the Cisplatina Province, which claimed its independence still further complicated affairs. The government of Buenos Ayres, the instigator of that insurrection declared that it recognised the Banda Oriental as incorporated with the republic of the United Provinces of the river Plate, and thus Brazil found herself also at war with the neighbouring State, an unfortunate war which lasted until 1828, ending by the preliminary convention of the 27th August, by virtue of which the Banda Oriental was declared independent for five years, it resting with her to adopt afterwards the form of government which might best suit her.

It must be observed, that by supporting the war against the independence of the Cisplatina Province, the imperial government fulfilled its duty—of defending and maintaining the integrity of the empire, of which it formed a part, as a sister province of the others, and already represented in that character, there was not therefore in this political war of annexation, neither was there at any time from 1828 onwards the slightest idea, either manifested by words or still less so by deeds, of annexing the Oriental State to Brazil, whose political endeavours on the contrary have been tried and dearly manifested by the evident interest in the preservation of the independence of that State, on the other hand the republic on the other side of the river with a frankness often shewn by words and deeds, desires and endeavours to annex,—to that tended the ambition of Paraguay also.

In 1825 the political regeneration of Brazil had been recognized by the government of the ancient capital; but soon after in 1826 the death of Dom João VI., the proclamation of Dom Pedro, as King of Portugal through his

regency, the abdication of this prince in favour of his daughter Dona Maria da Gloria, the legitimist and absolutist reaction in favour of Dom Miguel, and therefore an important question of dynasty for the Emperor in Europe took place.

To this serious subject were added the impediments which Dom Pedro I. met with in the vigorous and systematic opposition on the part of the liberal party then in great force throughout the whole of Brazil—unpopular as he knew himself to be in the Empire, weary of struggling, and having in Europe, in Portugal, a double incentive of interest and glory, the Emperor, on his return from a political journey to Minas Geraes, which undeceived him, arrived sad and dispirited in Rio de Janeiro in March 1831, and was an almost indifferent witness for about a month, to the exasperation of the people, to the conflicts between Portuguese and Brazilians, and finally in presence of a numerous and threatening multitude of citizens and of almost all the military quartered in the city, and who had assembled on the evening, and in the night of the 6th April in the campo of St. Anna, demanding that the ministry, which had been formed on the morning of that day, should give in their resignation,—the Emperor would not yield to the demand imposed on him, but he saved the monarchy, by abdicating on the morning of the 7th April the imperial throne in favour of his son, heir to the crown, Dom Pedro II. the present Emperor, and at that time only 5 years and 4 months old.

Although the whole of Brazil was profoundly shaken especially during the first years of the minority, the monarchical and constitutional system was maintained, thanks to the promulgation of the Additional Act to the Constitution, to other liberal institutions, to the National Guard, which was immediately formed, and to the civic devotion of the people and the government; rebellion raised its head in many of the provinces; but it was everywhere put

down except the most important, that in Rio Grande, which broke out on the 20th September 1835, and which lasted vigourously and haughtily, when the majority of the Emperor Dom Pedro II. was proclaimed on the 23rd July 1840.

From 1840 to 1872 in the present reign the rebellion of Rio Grande do Sul was put down, and the balm of a general amnesty healed the wounds which the civil war had inflicted: in 1842, in the provinces of S. Paulo, and Minas Geraes; and in 1848 Pernambuco partially revolted, but the movement was put down; and at the expiration of little more than two years all the principal leaders of the revolt were pardoned.

There were two wars: the first in 1851 against Rosas, the dictator of the Argentine Confederation, who fournished with arms and supported Oribe against the government of Monte-Video, with the manifest intention of incorporating the Oriental State with that Republic. Brazil allied with general Urquiza, governor of Entre-Rios and of Corrientes, and with the government of the capital threatened, gained the victory, the generous results of which were the freedom of the Argentine Confederation, and the maintaining the independence of the State of Uruguay.

In the same year of that conflict she was provoked to the second war, which was preceded by a serious and hostile military demonstration on the part of the Empire against the constituted power in Monte-Video under the Presidency of Aguirre, who obstinately refused to give satisfaction for the violence, insults, and assassinations of which Brazilian subjects had been victims:—in 1864 the dictator of Paraguay, Francisco Solano Lopes, without any previous declaration of war, captured a vessel, took prisoner, and cruelly treated a functionary of high category, and other persons in the service of Brazil, who were passengers in that vessel, and next invaded with armed and brutal force the provinces of Matto Grosso and Rio Grande do Sul.

The Argentine Confederation and the Oriental Republic of Uruguay being also offended, and attacked by the invasion of their territories became allies of the Empire in this great war struggle, which lasted with tremendous battles and engagements from 1867 to 1870, terminating in the total destruction of the military power of Lopes, who lost his life in the last encounter with the Brazilian forces who were pursuing him.

The war lasted a long time, and was remarkable for the immense sacrifice of the noblest lives and of an enormous expenditure: the army and navy of Brazil covered themselves with glory; on the part of both arms of the service the greatest and most arduous exertions were made, without the slightest diminution on the part of the allies of the Empire, of bravery, daring, and most efficient co-operation; the latter, however, reaped the principal fruits of the victory, in welcoming and promoting the liberty of Paraguay; respecting the integrity of this State, and protecting her independence; this besides being generous as an international, political principle, is, in reality, requisite and necessary to her interests for tranquillity and peace.

In the country itself the complete and absolute extinction since 1852 of the criminal African slave trade dried up the principal spring of an evil in every point of view, more than shameless, and even fatal; and on the 28th September 1871 the law which emancipated the offspring of women slaves closed for ever the second source of the Tophet of Slavery, ennobled Brazil, by taking from her the slur cast on her as the country of slavery, and causing every cradle to be rocked by the sacred breeze of liberty.

The cessation of the barbarous slave trade led speculators to seek other lawful and honourable as well as promising fields for the employment of their capital. The first and highly beneficial result of the abolition of the

iniquitous trade was the material progress which soon began to smile upon the country and bring her happiness.

Railroads and the electric telegraphs extended and are extending civilization by their rails and wires from the emporiums of the sea-shore to the very heart and vastness of the fertile interior, industry seeks the sources of riches; gas lights up the principal cities, which gain time and gold by the facility, rapidity, and commodiousness of the best vehicles of conveyance, which have done away with distance in the suburbs: the navigation of the Amazonas has been opened to the world; the lines of steamers have rendered more intimate the intercourse between the provinces and the towns on the sea-coast, or on the banks of great rivers. Enterprise multiplied; and in the emulation struggle, in the eagerness, as it were, for great gains, the general interest always gains advantages, which aid to aggrandize the State; public instruction receives a vigorous impulse, and the liberty acquired by teaching gains possession of all minds, and takes its place in the order of facts.

As yet it is little, but very little in the nicest calculation as to what is wanting and of urgent necessity to be accomplished, but above all, as to the two questions, on the solution of which notably depend the development, the wealth, and the future of the nation—European emigration, and the administrative decentralization of the provinces, which more enlarged and vivifying, advance so much the union of all enlightened intellects, that very soon the legislative action will meet, with prudent reforms and adequate laws, these most transcendent public necessities, insuring to immigrants their rights of worship, of country, and of family, and to the provinces their rights of administration, economy, and special activity.

The part precisely relative to the internal policy in the present reign being, as it ought to be, the debating ground of various aspirations, where all opinions and all

parties meet and clash, and where, therefore, each citizen is an interested and partial claimant, and cannot be an impartial judge, belongs exclusively to the competency of the tribunal of posterity, who later will record their sentences in the historical trial of the present age.

As regards ourselves, it behoves us only to trust to the constant, lawful, indispensable, and as it were religious labour of civic and constitutional life, to have our minds fixed upon God, our hearts on our country, and to act according to the dictates of an honest and pure conscience,— exercising our rights and fullfilling our duties as Brazilian citizens.

From 1640 to 1822 the Braganza dynasty held Brazil under the following reigns:

of Dom João IV. from 1640 to 1656,

of Affonso VI. from 1656 (at that time yet a minor) to 1683,

of Dom Pedro II. (otherwise Prince Regent from 1667 by the seclusion of Affonso VI. his brother) from 1683 to 1706,

of Dom João V. from 1706 to 1750,

of Dom José I. from 1750 to 1777,

of Dona Maria I. from 1777 to 1816,

of Dom João VI. (otherwise reigning as heir to the throne in consequence of the derangement in the mental faculties of the Queen since 1792, and with the title of Regent of the Kingdom by decree of the 18th July 1799) from 1816 to 1822,

of Dom Pedro I. from 1822 to 1831, springing from the said Braganza dynasty, but of a race declared and recognized by the constitution of the Empire, was Emperor of Brazil,

of H. M. Dom Pedro II. (who was in his minority until 1840) since 1831.

## CHAPTER II.

### Astronomical Position and Boundaries of Brazil.

The vast territory of Brazil embraces the most eastern part of South America, and in an astronomical position regulated by the meridian of Rio de Janeiro lies in 5° 10′ of north latitude, and in 33° 45′ of south—without including the archipelagoes of Fernando da Noronha and of Trindade—and in 7° of east longitude and 32° of west, on the tops of the mountains where the rivers Uaupés and Cumiary or dos Enganos have their sources.

Her length of coast offers an extent of about one thousand three hundred leagues of coast and bays from Cape Orange to the mouth of the river Chuy, she extends eight hundred and five leagues from north to the south of the Serra Pacaraima at the sources of the river Mahú to the frontier of the Chuy, and eight hundred and twenty six leagues from east to west, from Cape Frio to the sources of the Uaupés, occupying an area of two hundred and ninety one thousand, and eighteen square leagues.

She is bounded on the north by the Atlantic Ocean, French, Dutch and English Cayenne, and by the republics of Venezuela, and of Nova Granada, now called the United States of Columbia.

To the east and south east, still by the Atlantic Ocean.—To the south by the republic of Uruguay, and the Argentine Confederation. To the west, by this same Con-

federation, and by the republics of Paraguay, Bolivia, Peru and Equador.

In spite of the exertions of her government, Brazil has not got her frontiers definitively in her boundaries with all the neighbouring countries, where, however, they are already so, it was not in any case by the sword of Brennus, with which she traced out the line of demarcation, to the pacific, fair dealing and conciliating action of diplomacy alone was owing the solution of doubts which existed, and the conciliations of interests and pretentions on both sides.

The war in the river Plate in 1851, and that of Paraguay in 1864 to 1870, followod shortly afterwards by treaties of limits with this republic in 1872, and with that of Uruguay in 1851 in other respects modified by the treaty of 1852, were caused and had a motive entirely foreign to the disputes raised on questions of territories; the first war, the consequences of which were so advantageous to the liberty and civilization of the river Plate States, was carried on by Brazil for no other reason than to maintain the independence of the Oriental Republic threatened by the dictator of the Argentine Republic: the second was the patriotic and glorious crusade to vindicate the national honor, and on both occasions the Empire even with the prestige, and moral force of her victories did not impose any limits to her frontiers; she knew on the contrary how to negociate for them in so liberal a manner as to banish all suspicion of taking any advantage as a conqueror. In examining the confines of Brazil, setting out from the North, Cayenne, with whom no divisionary line has been agreed upon, is prominent in the first place.

As regards French Cayenne the rights of Brazil are based an the treaty of Utrecht in 1713 strengthened by that of Vienna in 1815, and still further confirmed by the Convention of Paris in 1817 celebrated between France and Portugal. According to these treaties and convention, the

*country denominated North Cape, and situated between the river Amazon, and the Oyapock or Vicente Pinçon, whose mouth is situated between the 4th and 5th degree of north latitude, up to 32° 2′ longitude to the east of the island of Ferro by the parallel of 2° 24′ of north latitude once belonged to Portugal and now to Brazil.*

The faithful execution of this agreement and international compromise twice referred with faithful observance to the treaty of Utrecht remained „*ipso facto*" under the mediation and guarantee of England.

But neither the clearness of the treaties and convention nor the importance, and duty of the guaranteeing and mediating Power could prevent France from shuffling, as she sought to confuse and bring forward geographical doubts to the rights established by the treaty of Utrecht, which otherwise is clearly shewn, and undeniably to be accepted by the monumental work—The Oyapock—by the learned Brazilian Dr. Joaquim Caetano da Silva.

In international questions, it is to be supposed that the interest, even unfounded and illegitimate, of the country, favours and excuses the unjust proceedings of governments.

Morality condemns, but an abusive and very often unpunished example has favoured this false and injurious principle by which France is obstinately guided in the question of the Oyapock.

Putting on one side the negotiations which are still open at the present moment, and which have always, hitherto, failed, we must always bear in mind that with French Cayenne, as regards the question of limits, almost the only thing positive even of a character essentially temporary is the accord of 1841, by which the two governments interested decided the Amapa to be neutral ground.

There is not yet any settlement of boundaries with Dutch Cayenne: Brazil considers as the common boundary the mountains Tumucuraque; if however the claims of

France prevail, she would lose that Dutch possession as a neighbour.

The Brazilian boundary lines with British Cayenne are two,—the first to the north, and the second to the east; in the former as well as in that of Dutch Cayenne, is the right of Brazil contested by France; in the former it is England who disputes it,—the origin of her unexpected pretentions and diplomatic contests having arisen from the President of the Province of Pará, having obliged an English missionary, who was there teaching the Indians, to depart from the territory always considered and acknowledged Brazilian, as far as the Serra *Pacaraima* an admitted divisionary line. The result of the negotiations between the two respective governments was the neutralization of the *land* between the rivers *Tacutu* and *Regumury until that after the necessary explorations finally define the true limits.*

The boundaries of the Empire with the republic of Venezuela depending merely on the work of demarcation are fixed by the treaty of the 5th May 1859—which thus determines:

"The divisional line shall begin at the sources of the river *Memachy*, and proceeding along over the highest land shall pass by the sources of the *Aquio* and *Tomó* and of *Guyania* and *Iquiaré* or *Issana*, so that all the waters that flow to the *Aquino* and *Tomó* shall belong to Venezuela, and those which flow to *Guyania*, *Xié*, and *Issana* to Brazil, and shall cross the river Negro opposite the *island* of *S. José*, which is near to the rock of *Cucuhy*.

"From the island of S. José, it shall pass along in a direct line cutting in half the *Maturacá* channel, or at that point at which the surveying commissioners may agree, and that shall conveniently divide the said channel, and passing from thence by the cluster of hills *Cupy*, *Imery*, *Guay*, and *Urucusiro*, shall cross over the road that joins

by land the river *Castanho* to the *Marary* and by the mountain ridge *Tapirapecó* shall be directed to the tops of the mountain ridge *Parima*, so that the waters which run to the *Padauiry*, *Marary*, and *Cababoris*, shall belong to Brazil; and those which flow to the *Turuaca*, or *Idapa*, or *Xiabá* to Venezuela.

"It shall go over the line of the mountain ridge Paraima as far as the angle which this makes with the mountain ridge of Pacaraima, so that all the waters which flow to the river *Branco* shall belong to Brazil, and those which flow to the Orinoco to Venezuela, and the line shall continue on over the highest points of the said mountain range *Pacaraima*, so that the waters, that flow to the Rio Branco shall belong, as has already been said, to Brazil, and those which flow to the Essequibo, Cuyuny, and Carony to Venezuela, as far as the territories of the two States shall extend in their eastern parts."

The republic of Nova Granada (now United States of Columbia) would not accept the proposition of a boundary treaty offered to them in 1853 by the Brazilian Government, who otherwise ceded to them very much more than belongs to them by the *uti possidetis*, and thus remained evidently very much weakened the regulations of this boundary as long as the two States do not come to an agreement which it appears she will have to give to New Granada, that which Spain had not succeeded in obtaining there by the treaties of Madrid in 1750, and of S. Ildefonso in 1777.

With the republic of Equador now in a measure partly removed from Brazil by the boundary treaty which the latter celebrated with the republic of Peru, the confine will disappear altogether once that the United States of Columbia shall adopt the divisional line proposed to them.

The frontier of the republic of Peru and of the empire of Brazil established on the principle *uti possidetis* was by the treaty of 22nd October 1858 respectively acknow-

ledged, commencing at the village of Tabatinga and from thence to the north in a direct line to meet the river of Japurá opposite the mouth of the Apaporis, and from Tabatinga to the south the river *Javary* from its confluence with the *Amazonas*.

A mixed Commission named by both governments charged with ascertaining in accordance with the principle of *uti possidetis* the frontier and to propose an interchange of territories which they may judge expedient to fix the boundaries which may be most natural and suitable to both nations—fixed on the 28th July 1866 the first land mark in the bend of the Iguape S. Antonio, an affluent to the left of the river *Amazonas*, and distant from the Brazilian parish of Tabatinga two thousand four hundred and ten metres in a due direction of 6° 50′ north east, from whence the straight line, that should be carried to the right bank of the *Japora* opposite the mouth of the *Apapori*, should take its departure. By the treaty of 27th March 1867 the boundary of Brazil with the republic of Bolivia shall be fixed and is as follows:—

"The divisional line taking its departure from the river Paraguay in latitude 20° 10′ where the *Bahia Negra* discharges itself, shall proceed through the middle of this to its extremity, and from thence in a straight line to the lake *Caceres* traversing it through its centre, from whence it shall go to the lake Mandioré, and shall also traverse its centre, as well as the lakes *Gayba* and *Uberaba* in as many straight lines as may be necessary in order that the high lands of the *Pedras de Amolar*, and of *Insúa* remain on the Brazilian side.

"From the extreme northern point of lake Uberaba, it shall go in a straight line to the extreme south of the *Corixa Grande*, without touching the Brazilian and Bolivian villages which shall remain respectively on the Brazilian or the Bolivian side; from the extreme south of the Corixa

*Grande*, it shall go in a straight line to *Morro da Boa Vista* and to the *Quatro Irmãos*, from these also in a straight line to the sources of the *Rio Verde;* it shall descend this river as far as its confluence with the *Guaporé*, and along the middle of this and of the *Mamoré* as far as the *Beny* where commences the river *Madeira.*

"The frontier shall continue on from this river to the west, and be a parallel line drawn from its left bank in latitude 10° 20′ south, until it meets with the Javary.

"Should the sources of the Javary be to the north of that line east to west, the frontier shall go on from the same latitude in a straight line direct to the principal source of the said *Javary.*"

With the republic of Paraguay was declared as defined and acknowledged by the treaty of 9th January 1872 the boundary of the Empire as follows:—

"Along the channel of the river *Paraná* from the point whence commence the Brazilian possessions at the mouth of the *Iguassú* as far as the *Salto grande das Sete Quedas* of the said river *Paraná.*

"From *Salto grande das Sete Quedas* the divisional line is carried over the highest part of the Serra of *Maracajú* as far as it extends.

"From thence it proceeds in a straight line or as near as it can over the highest ground until it meets the Serra *Amambahy.*

"It goes on along the highest part of this Serra as far as the chief source of the river Apa, and goes down by the channel of this river as far as its mouth on the eastern bank of the river *Paraguay.*

"All the slopes which run to the north and to the east belong to Brazil, and those which run to the south and to the west belong to Paraguay.

"The island of *Fecho dos Morros* belongs to Brazil."

The survey of the Brazilico-Paraguayan frontier com-

menced at once in conformity with what was defined in this treaty.

The divisional line between the Empire of Brazil and the Argentine Confederation had been agreed upon by a boundary treaty negotiated on the 14th of December 1857 which received the approval of the Senate and that of the Chamber of Representatives of this Power, and which nevertheless became useless for want of the ratifications within the fixed term, the Brazilian government not having subsequently succeeded in renewing it in spite of their best wishes.

Finally Brazil has her frontiers with the Oriental Republic of Uruguay by the carrying out of the boundary treaty of 13th October 1851 modified by that of 15th May 1852, the line running as follows:—

It commences at the bar of the small river *Chuy* on the Ocean in 33° 45′ of north lat. and in 53° 25′ 05″ of west longitude by the meridian of Greenwich. It continues by the said small river as far as its *general ford*, and from this cuts in a straight line to the general ford of the small river of *S. Miguel*, afterwards taking along this, coming out at the *Lagôa Mirim*. Afterwards it takes a divisional line to the northern bank of the said lake, and of the river *Jaguarão*.

Along the right bank of the Jaguarão ascending the divisional line goes on as far as the *Jaguarão Chico*, and along the same bank of this until it takes up the small river of the *Mina*. The line goes on along the small river of the *Mina* as far as its highest slopes, and thence in a straight line by *Acagua* to the bar of the small river *San Luis* in the river *Negro*.

Going along this river until close to the Cochilha of *S. Anna*, it takes a rectilineal direction between its two principal branches and goes to the Cochilha over the mountain called the *Cemiterio*.

Continuing along the highest part of the Cochilha of *St. Anna*, the divisional line passes close to our (Brazilian) town of *Santa Anna do Livramento*, continues along the same *Cochilha* as far as the village of *Haedo*, along the highest part of which it continues until it meets the Cochilha of *Belem*. Close to this meeting the slopes of the small river of the *Manecos*, a branch of the *Invernada*, are to be found, and along the waters of this issues out at the *Quaraim*. Finally, along and down the waters of the *Quaraim*, it continues on as far as the *Uruguay*.

# CHAPTER III.

## Climate.

Extending to the north beyond the Equator, and to the south still more beyond the tropic of Capricorn, Brazil cannot offer a climate unique, equal, alike in all its extended territory: and although heat is the constitutive essential element of its climate, it is not only the influence of the sun modified according to the different latitudes in which it makes itself felt, which determines differences, which are observed, but which that same influence also subject to different local circumstances, and to the condition of position and principally to the elevation of the land, from which result notable variations of temperature.

With her lakes spread over all her territories, intersected by numberless rivers, some of them amongst the largest in the world, and by great mountain ranges, and most magnificent mountains, having the Atlantic to bathe its eastern boundary for nearly one thousand three hundred leagues of coast, and in its interiors the most beautifully arranged natural plan of irrigation,—Brazil enjoys a climate in which heat essentially predominates, the action of the sun, however, being intense under the equator in Pará, much less severe in the provinces of the centre, mitigated on the coasts by the regular breezes, and progressively reduced to a mild temperature in the most southern provinces, above all in the plains of Rio Grande.

Dr. Sigaud, to whose work ("Du climat et des maladies du Brésil") belongs in a great measure the foregoing information, further taught us that the climate of Brazil is justly reputed the best amongst those of the principal regions of the globe, and which, as regards the continent of the two Americas, bears the same relation to Italy, as the latter does to Europe.

It was to be expected that the seasons which otherwise in the greater number of the Brazilian provinces are reduced to *two*,—the *dry* and the *rainy*,—should vary, and they do so according to the latitude.

In Pará, and throughout the valley of the Amazonas it rains excessively; not so much but sufficiently from Pernambuco to the south as far as Bahia, the rainy season commencing in that former province in December or January and continuing until July; and in that of Bahia the rains continu from March to August; between the rivers São Francisco and Parnahyba, the two seasons are very irregular, the rains sometimes continuing or failing altogether, so much so as to be called a dry season, more or less calamitous: in Espirito Santo, Rio de Janeiro and São Paulo, and if there should be as yet any rule without exception, the rains begin in October, and continue until April, in Santa Catarina the four seasons of the year declare themselves very distinctly, although less strongly characterised than they are in Europe: in Rio Grande do Sul the seasons are still more marked than in that of the neighbouring province, to which should be added that the heavy rains there are accompanied by strong winds which are nevertheless very salutary. In Minas Geraes, Matto Grosso and Goyaz, where abundant rains fall, observations differ according to the points of distance in such vast provinces. It must yet be observed that the destruction of the forests, and the development of agriculture which have been effected by stripping Brazil of her opulent and natural gigantic

vegetation, immense tracts of land have already not in a small degree modified and go on modifying the hygrometric conditions of some of the provinces of Brazil, were the irregularity as to the rule which formerly governed those two seasons, the dry and the rainy, progressively, and in a manner easy to be understood, to prevail, and which at stated periods succeeding each other divided the year between them. The opinion expressed by Lind is sanctioned by experience in Brazil: he said that the air is generally pure in the torrid zone, and the salubrity incontestably is amongst a thousand precious gifts the most precious which this American region owes to the Creator of the Universe.

With the exception of some marshy banks of some rivers and of the low lands and swamps where intermittent fevers are developed, all the country is healthy. On the seacoast, and in some points of the centre of maritime provinces the epidemics of yellow fever and cholera morbus (sinister foreign visitors) have been felt since 1850; nor even in their invasion did they produce an equal destruction to that caused in other countries of America and Europe; — it should be noted that the malignity of the former has become greatly mitigated in subsequent returns of the disease, and that the terrible Asiatic scourge has not returned to renew its impetuous onslaught.

Statistics shew that the mortality is in the most populous cities and in the capital of Brazil comparatively much less than in the best police regulated capitals of Europe, and the instances of longevity in Brazil are much more numerous than in any other part of the old or new world. The varieties which Brazil presents in her climate according to the latitudes and the natural circumstances of the localities are titles of recommendation and incentives to immigration from Europe, which comes and will continue to meet with favourable and easy conditions for a

## Table of horary meteorological observations made at Belem at the mean level of the tides.

| Date | | Absolute indication of the instruments. | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | Mean indication 750mm + | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1861 to 67 | | Atmospheric pressure 750mm + | | | | | | Temperature | | | Hygrometry | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | Barometer | | | | | | Therm. centigr. | | | Psychrometric difference | | | Saussure | | | Barometer At zero of temperature | | | | | |
| | | Fortin | | | Gay-Lussac | | | | | | | | | | | | Mercury | | | Aneroide | | |
| Mouth | Hour | N.° | Therm. | Height | N.° | Therm. | Height | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. |
| | | | ° | mm | | ° | mm | ° | ° | ° | ° ′ | ° | ° | ° | ° | ° | mm | mm | mm | mm | mm | mm |
| In the twelve of the year | 1 | 841 | 28.88 | 10.481 | 710 | 28.67 | 10.884 | 28.62 | 35.0 | 23.5 | 3.37 | 9.5 | 0.2 | 82.12 | 99.0 | 65.0 | 6.958 | 10.043 | 3.698 | 7.306 | 10.460 | 3.900 |
| | 2 | 703 | 28.84 | 9.732 | 537 | 28.61 | 10.340 | 28.71 | 35.0 | 23.3 | 3.48 | 9.6 | 0.5 | 81.18 | 95.5 | 64.0 | 6.219 | 9.992 | 3.006 | 6.599 | 10.200 | 3.300 |
| | 3 | 730 | 28.75 | 9.114 | 598 | 28.54 | 9.986 | 28.61 | 34.6 | 23.8 | 3.44 | 9.2 | 0.6 | 81.72 | 97.0 | 63.0 | 5.625 | 8.989 | 2.278 | 5.856 | 11.230 | 2.800 |
| | 4 | 637 | 28.57 | 8.745 | 516 | 28.56 | 9.295 | 28.37 | 34.1 | 23.8 | 3.18 | 8.7 | 0.4 | 81.02 | 97.0 | 63.0 | 5.269 | 8.685 | 1.988 | 5.468 | 9.450 | 2.200 |
| | 5 | 774 | 28.20 | 8.735 | 641 | 28.19 | 8.944 | 27.97 | 34.0 | 23.4 | 3.01 | 7.6 | 0.2 | 83.20 | 99.0 | 65.0 | 5.310 | 8.895 | 2.199 | 5.353 | 8.940 | 2.300 |
| | 6 | 558 | 27.51 | 8.912 | 444 | 27.51 | 8.637 | 27.21 | 34.0 | 23.2 | 2.41 | 7.6 | 0.5 | 84.91 | 98.0 | 69.0 | 5.552 | 8.758 | 2.250 | 5.453 | 8.430 | 2.500 |
| | 7 | 314 | 27.04 | 9.346 | 279 | 26.84 | 8.837 | 26.59 | 32.0 | 23.3 | 1.96 | 5.2 | 0.5 | 86.86 | 97.0 | 66.0 | 6.037 | 9.341 | 2.550 | 6.078 | 9.950 | 3.350 |
| | 8 | 348 | 26.61 | 9.601 | 309 | 26.62 | 9.030 | 26.10 | 31.7 | 22.8 | 1.75 | 4.4 | 0.3 | 87.56 | 97.0 | 68.0 | 6.331 | 10.016 | 2.742 | 6.453 | 10.200 | 2.630 |
| | 9 | 381 | 26.40 | 9.968 | 339 | 26.02 | 9.316 | 26.06 | 30.0 | 22.4 | 1.53 | 4.0 | 0.3 | 88.36 | 98.0 | 75.0 | 6.729 | 10.116 | 3.229 | 7.033 | 10.000 | 3.090 |
| | 10 | 467 | 26.07 | 10.367 | 396 | 26.15 | 9.796 | 25.62 | 29.4 | 22.4 | 1.43 | 4.4 | 0.4 | 88.45 | 99.0 | 76.0 | 7.150 | 10.368 | 3.663 | 7.345 | 10.720 | 4.370 |
| | 11 | 336 | 26.14 | 10.398 | 317 | 26.10 | 9.749 | 25.48 | 30.6 | 22.2 | 1.46 | 4.0 | 0.3 | 88.64 | 98.0 | 78.0 | 7.181 | 10.227 | 3.785 | 7.378 | 11.000 | 4.370 |
| | 12 | 219 | 26.09 | 10.195 | 214 | 25.87 | 9.657 | 25.28 | 30.0 | 22.8 | 1.39 | 3.8 | 0.2 | 88.54 | 96.0 | 78.0 | 7.009 | 9.758 | 3.896 | 7.176 | 10.210 | 4.110 |
| | 13 | 127 | 26.09 | 10.104 | 124 | 25.97 | 9.578 | 25.36 | 28.2 | 23.3 | 1.52 | 4.7 | 0.4 | 86.78 | 95.0 | 78.0 | 6.918 | 9.137 | 3.846 | 6.928 | 9.100 | 4.110 |
| | 14 | 90 | 26.05 | 9.881 | 88 | 25.76 | 9.496 | 25.31 | 28.3 | 23.7 | 1.48 | 4.7 | 0.8 | 86.55 | 95.0 | 77.0 | 6.705 | 8.821 | 3.656 | 6.659 | 9.190 | 3.850 |
| | 15 | 89 | 26.16 | 9.623 | 84 | 25.87 | 9.368 | 25.27 | 29.9 | 22.0 | 1.54 | 3.6 | 0.6 | 85.79 | 95.0 | 77.0 | 6.447 | 8.808 | 2.948 | 6.595 | 11.230 | 3.860 |
| | 16 | 113 | 25.70 | 9.610 | 105 | 25.67 | 9.219 | 24.95 | 28.7 | 21.7 | 1.46 | 4.3 | 0.8 | 86.80 | 95.0 | 78.0 | 6.455 | 9.011 | 3.477 | 6.546 | 9.450 | 4.110 |
| | 17 | 148 | 25.46 | 9.860 | 141 | 25.58 | 9.545 | 24.94 | 28.1 | 21.2 | 1.31 | 3.8 | 0.4 | 86.79 | 95.0 | 80.0 | 6.766 | 9.811 | 3.957 | 6.884 | 10.000 | 4.620 |
| | 18 | 555 | 25.58 | 10.199 | 443 | 25.91 | 9.580 | 24.68 | 28.5 | 20.0 | 1.24 | 4.3 | 0.2 | 89.03 | 99.0 | 78.0 | 7.075 | 10.390 | 2.850 | 7.008 | 10.210 | 2.500 |
| | 19 | 820 | 25.56 | 10.626 | 719 | 25.68 | 9.848 | 25.05 | 29.9 | 21.8 | 1.45 | 4.7 | 0.2 | 90.27 | 99.0 | 80.0 | 7.502 | 10.669 | 4.309 | 7.526 | 11.000 | 3.860 |
| | 20 | 772 | 26.19 | 11.238 | 624 | 26.18 | 10.615 | 25.81 | 29.3 | 23.0 | 1.59 | 4.6 | 0.3 | 88.96 | 99.0 | 77.0 | 8.052 | 12.010 | 3.314 | 7.877 | 12.000 | 4.300 |
| | 21 | 755 | 26.90 | 11.563 | 635 | 26.88 | 11.173 | 26.52 | 31.3 | 23.2 | 1.98 | 6.0 | 0.3 | 87.99 | 99.0 | 73.0 | 8.254 | 11.871 | 5.140 | 8.491 | 11.990 | 4.800 |
| | 22 | 706 | 27.49 | 11.190 | 577 | 27.24 | 11.577 | 27.48 | 32.5 | 22.8 | 2.48 | 7.6 | 0.4 | 86.06 | 98.0 | 70.0 | 8.450 | 12.213 | 5.229 | 8.562 | 11.990 | 5.200 |
| | 23 | 692 | 28.08 | 11.622 | 556 | 28.05 | 11.596 | 27.87 | 33.0 | 22.6 | 2.76 | 8.2 | 0.6 | 84.20 | 99.0 | 71.0 | 8.099 | 11.342 | 4.620 | 8.586 | 11.730 | 5.100 |
| | 24 | 733 | 28.47 | 11.225 | 626 | 28.35 | 11.387 | 28.28 | 34.0 | 23.3 | 3.10 | 8.6 | 0.7 | 83.70 | 98.0 | 66.0 | 7.733 | 11.423 | 4.529 | 8.129 | 11.220 | 4.500 |
| Mean | | 11.799 | 26.96 | 760.013<br>3.309<br>756.704 | 10.622 | 26.86 | 759.895<br>3.304<br>756.591 | 26.49<br>Amplitude | 35.0<br>35.0 | 20.0<br>15.0 | 2.51<br>Amplitude | 9.6<br>9.6 | 0.2<br>9.4 | 86.06<br>Amplitude | 99.0<br>99.0 | 63.0<br>36.0 | 756.826<br>Amplitude | 12.213<br>12.213 | 1.988<br>10.225 | 756.887<br>Amplitude | 12.000<br>12.000 | 2.000<br>10.000 |



José da Costa Azevedo.

## Table of horary meteorological observations made at Belem at the mean level of the tides.

| Date | | Absolute indication of the instruments. | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | Mean indication 750mm + | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1861 to 67 | | Atmospheric pressure 750mm + | | | | | | Temperature | | | Hygrometry | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Month | Hour | Barometer | | | | | | Therm. centigr. | | | Psychrometric difference | | | Saussure | | | Barometer At zero of temperature | | | | | |
| | | Fortin | | | Gay-Lussac | | | | | | | | | | | | Mercury | | | Aneroide | | |
| | | N.° | Therm. | Height | N.° | Therm. | Height | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. | Mean | Max. | Min. |
| | | | ° | mm | | ° | mm | ° | ° | ° | ° | ° | ° | ° | ° | ° | mm | | | | | |
| In the twelve of the year | 1 | 200 | 29.41 | 13.655 | 349 | 29.08 | 13.817 | 29.47 | 34.5 | 24.5 | 3.69 | 7.1 | 0.2 | 83.05 | 98.5 | 66.0 | 10.136 | | | | | |
| | 2 | 183 | 29.28 | 13.151 | 261 | 29.13 | 13.200 | 29.35 | 32.5 | 24.38 | 3.66 | 6.7 | 1.0 | 87.08 | 98.5 | 71.0 | 9.595 | | | | | |
| | 3 | 191 | 28.90 | 12.617 | 279 | 28.81 | 12.760 | 28.95 | 32.0 | 25.0 | 3.47 | 6.8 | 1.0 | 88.82 | 99.0 | 73.0 | 9.134 | | | | | |
| | 4 | 235 | 28.56 | 12.619 | 253 | 28.59 | 12.617 | 28.67 | 32.0 | 24.88 | 3.205 | 6.9 | 1.2 | 90.13 | 98.5 | 76.0 | 9.095 | | | | | |
| | 5 | 255 | 27.96 | 12.476 | 385 | 27.93 | 12.481 | 28.13 | 31.4 | 24.0 | 2.579 | 6.2 | 0.1 | 91.15 | 99.0 | 74.0 | 9.047 | | | | | |
| | 6 | 196 | 27.44 | 12.608 | 231 | 27.14 | 12.559 | 27.48 | 31.25 | 25.0 | 2.39 | 5.6 | 0.9 | 92.33 | 99.0 | 84.0 | 9.213 | | | | | |
| | 7 | 132 | 27.22 | 12.695 | 174 | 27.06 | 12.981 | 27.22 | 30.0 | 24.75 | 2.25 | 4.6 | 0.8 | 92.45 | 98.5 | 80.0 | 9.498 | | | | | |
| | 8 | 163 | 27.02 | 13.059 | 201 | 26.91 | 13.112 | 27.04 | 29.75 | 24.38 | 2.23 | 4.2 | 0.9 | 92.12 | 99.0 | 82.0 | 9.761 | | | | | |
| | 9 | 139 | 26.65 | 13.241 | 185 | 26.66 | 13.367 | 26.79 | 30.0 | 23.75 | 2.18 | 4.6 | 0.8 | 92.60 | 99.0 | 82.0 | 10.032 | | | | | |
| | 10 | 183 | 26.60 | 13.653 | 195 | 26.61 | 13.676 | 26.77 | 29.25 | 24.5 | 2.17 | 4.1 | 1.0 | 92.26 | 98.5 | 82.0 | 10.386 | | | | | |
| | 11 | 83 | 26.51 | 13.602 | 133 | 26.63 | 13.686 | 26.61 | 28.75 | 24.5 | 2.13 | 3.8 | 0.9 | 92.72 | 99.0 | 85.0 | 10.394 | | | | | |
| | 12 | 31 | 26.40 | 13.447 | 84 | 26.35 | 13.660 | 26.48 | 29.13 | 24.0 | 2.26 | 3.8 | 1.3 | 92.03 | 96.0 | 85.0 | 10.306 | | | | | |
| | 13 | 14 | 26.21 | 13.355 | 39 | 26.43 | 13.629 | 26.61 | 28.5 | 25.25 | 2.23 | 3.4 | 1.3 | 92.98 | 97.2 | 89.0 | 10.290 | | | | | |
| | 14 | 18 | 26.13 | 12.741 | 32 | 26.30 | 12.933 | 26.51 | 28.25 | 25.63 | 2.16 | 3.2 | 1.2 | 94.37 | 98.0 | 92.0 | 9.651 | | | | | |
| | 15 | 12 | 25.64 | 12.556 | 20 | 26.27 | 12.862 | 26.48 | 27.75 | 25.63 | 2.05 | 3.4 | 1.0 | 94.15 | 99.0 | 90.0 | 9.508 | | | | | |
| | 16 | 43 | 25.68 | 12.403 | 38 | 26.25 | 12.598 | 26.38 | 27.75 | 25.0 | 2.10 | 3.3 | 0.5 | 94.01 | 98.5 | 88.5 | 9.314 | | | | | |
| | 17 | 99 | 25.67 | 12.745 | 78 | 25.84 | 12.701 | 26.07 | 27.88 | 24.38 | 2.02 | 3.2 | 1.0 | 93.35 | 98.5 | 86.0 | 9.537 | | | | | |
| | 18 | 250 | 25.56 | 13.229 | 215 | 25.80 | 13.148 | 25.85 | 28.13 | 22.80 | 1.93 | 3.9 | 0.6 | 94.41 | 98.5 | 84.0 | 10.033 | | | | | |
| | 19 | 306 | 25.40 | 13.385 | 328 | 25.84 | 13.440 | 25.74 | 28.25 | 22.50 | 1.72 | 3.5 | 0.1 | 94.49 | 99.0 | 82.0 | 10.257 | | | | | |
| | 20 | 202 | 26.02 | 13.800 | 261 | 26.36 | 13.931 | 26.59 | 28.75 | 22.0 | 2.107 | 4.3 | 0.9 | 93.47 | 99.0 | 84.0 | 10.648 | | | | | |
| | 21 | 221 | 26.87 | 14.030 | 247 | 27.08 | 14.129 | 27.45 | 30.60 | 24.5 | 2.43 | 5.8 | 1.0 | 91.85 | 99.0 | 81.0 | 10.770 | | | | | |
| | 22 | 235 | 27.68 | 14.398 | 258 | 27.61 | 14.344 | 27.95 | 30.80 | 22.5 | 2.99 | 5.6 | 1.1 | 89.16 | 99.0 | 76.0 | 10.940 | | | | | |
| | 23 | 203 | 28.36 | 14.291 | 229 | 28.49 | 14.433 | 28.80 | 31.60 | 25.63 | 3.43 | 6.2 | 1.3 | 87.08 | 98.0 | 73.0 | 10.870 | | | | | |
| | 24 | 178 | 29.09 | 14.012 | 251 | 28.84 | 14.177 | 29.17 | 32.80 | 24.50 | 3.82 | 6.8 | 1.0 | 85.89 | 99.5 | 68.0 | 10.509 | | | | | |
| Mean | | 3.772 | 27.09 | 13.240<br>3.340<br>9.900 | 4.726 | 27.16 | 13.343<br>3.340<br>10.003 | 27.35<br>Amplitude | 34.5 | 22.0<br>34.5<br>12.5 | 2.55<br>Amplitude | 7.1 | 0.1<br>7.1<br>7.0 | 91.33<br>Amplitude | 99.5 | 66.0<br>99.5<br>33.5 | 10.376 | | | | | |

P. 41, B.

José da Costa Azevedo.

comfortable settlement on a prodigiously rich, fertile, most fruitful and healthy land.

Without the ice of Northern Regions, Brazil holds out to the central and wintry countries of Europe a vast extent of climate to the south, temperate and free from the burning heats of Hindostan, and in all her other immense provinces, magnificent life-giving fields, sources of abundance as it were without, and of opulence with labour, sojourn of health on account of the purity of the air, and of expansion and warmth of vitality from the heat which ripens and augments the natural gifts opened and offering themselves, giving a friendly invitation to the Europeans of the south and to all the others who may wish to adopt, in a region the treasures of which present the idea of infinity, a better, greater, and more promising country; because they are already known for their munificence, extraordinary variety and great value, and are not as yet known as to the limits of their marvellous abundance, and in their innumerable products which in the bosom of the solitude of forests, and of wide spreading plains, prodigal Nature reserves awaiting civilized man who shall gather them and reap their fruits.

It is much to be regretted that it is not possible to add to this chapter meteorological tables regarding the principal localities and regions of the provinces, so complete and interesting as the two which follow and which are due to the patient and conscientious study of the distinguished Post Captain José da Costa Azevedo.

# CHAPTER IV.

## Chief Islands.

Brazil possesses a great number of Islands, both in the Ocean, and in her colossal rivers, and of these some are notable from their extent and fertility, and others from their geographical and political importance. In the Atlantic, with the exception of *Fernando da Noranha* and *Trindade*, all the others are close to the shores of the Continent.

That of *Fernando do Noronha* lies to the north-east at one hundred and ninety-five miles from Cape São Roque, the dangerous shoal of the Rocas lying in a westerly direction seventy five miles from that island. With four other small ones which are situated to the north-west, the island of Fernando Noronha occupies an extent of nine miles and a half in length, by two and a quarter in width.

That of *Trindade* lies at six hundred miles distance to the east of the coast of the province of Espirito Santo, being six hundred and twenty miles to the east, quarter north-east of Cape S. Thomé, it is estimated at six miles in circumference.

Of the other islands of Brazil, the principal are the following:—*Maracá* at the mouth of the Amazonas to the north-west of the north cape and twenty three miles in length from north to south and eighteen from east to west: it belongs to Brazilian Guayana; in its interior it has a lake full of fish, and on its eastern coast is to be seen the phenomenon of the pororocas (tidal wave).

*Caviana* to the north of that of Marajó at the mouth of the Amazonas of about fifty miles in length from east to west, and twenty eight from north to south: there are on the island important rural establishments which belong to the Misericordia hospital of the city of Belem. The channel which runs between this island and Marianna is accounted dangerous.

In a south-westerly line from the North Cape, and before arriving at *Caviana* there is an innumerable quantity of other islands, of which the most notable are *Bailique* (of Penitencia) *Jaburú*, *Cotia*, *Panema Limão*, *Curuá*, which has close to it Assaituba, all these forming with the islands *Janonea*, *Caviana*, and *Jurupari*, the northern channel of the northern bar of the Amazonas, the eastern being formed by the islands *Caviana*, *Mexianna*, *Flexas and Marajó*.

Mexianna is thirty miles in extent from east to west, and twelve from north to south, its northern extremity being under the equinoxial line.

*Marajó* (also formerly called Nheengaibas) and subsequently the Great island of Joannes, between the city of *Macapá* and the *Tigioca* point at the mouth of the *Amazonas*, which is divided by the island in two unequal parts; it is according to Baena four hundred and thirty four miles round. The Tocantins disembogues opposite to the eastern bank of this island. Granted to Antonio de Souza de Maceda, Baron of *Joannes*, Macajó long preserved the name which corresponded with the title of its donee, who found it inhabited by a numerous body of Indians, whom the Jesuits, among whom was the celebrated Father Antonio Vieira, subsequently instructed in religion: this island reverted to the Crown after the expulsion of the Dutch: and watered by the rivers *Mondin* and *Arajaz*, which run from fifteen to eighteen leagues, navigable when favoured by the tide, and by sundry interesting rivulets, its posi-

tion, its dimensions exceeding those of more than one State of Europe, and its fertility cannot be exaggerated, nor do they require explanatory recommendation. In the beginning of its prosperity, already possessing its town of Manforte since 1811, district in 1816, losing that rank by being incorporated with the district of the capital of the province in 1835, sacked and razed during the first fury of civil war, Marajó declined sadly: but could not lose its capabilities of a flattering future prosperity. The fertility of its land is extraordinary, and the rearing of cattle is the most productive and followed with considerable advantage.

Of *Maranhão* between the bays of S. José to the east and of São Marcos to the west, separated from the continent by a creek to which has been given the name of *Mosquito* river; it is seven leagues long from north-east to south-west, and five broad in its greatest breadth: at first sight it appears to the mariner to be joined to the continent, its height being greater than that of the latter: many springs of water burst forth which become fertilizing streams, the rivers Maranhão and S. Francisco being the chief. It is thickly populated, and rich, and is proud in having in it the capital of the same name as its province *Santa Anna*, situated 44 miles to the east-north-east of the city of *Maranhão*, and important, owing to there being fixed thereon a light-house which is a great help to vessels seeking the bay of S. Marcos.

Papagaio, the most northern island of the delta of the embouchure of the river Parnahyba; its shelters to the west the bay of Tutoya. The group of islands of which the delta is composed wants importance, owing to it flooded nature.

*Itamaraca* (or of the *Cosmos*, an ancient name according to Ayres Cazal) a little more than six miles to the north of the capital of Pernambuco, separate from the continent by a narrow and deep channel which was looked upon as

a river called Santa Cruz: it is three leagues long from north to south and two at its greatest breadth. At its extreme north point lies the port of *Catuama*, which affords convenient anchorage: in the southern part there is a fort of some consideration. It is fertile and well populated: its *mangoes* bear away the palm from the same fruit of other provinces. This island was occupied by the Dutch during the dominion of these invaders in some of the captaincies of the north of Brazil, and it was the theatre of bloody struggles.

*Itaparica* is obliquely situated at the entrance of the bay of Todos os Santos opposite to the city of S. Salvador, being sixteen miles long, and four and a half miles broad at its extreme width, according to Mouchez: it is populous, flourishing, and highly valued not only on account of the fertility of its soil, but also for the purity of its atmosphere, and the picturesque and beautiful localities which it possesses. Celebrated in the Dutch war, and even still more so in that of the independence for which the Emperor D. Pedro I. conferred on her town the title of *intrepid*.

That of *Dos Frades*, one league to the north of Itaparica; Maré at the bottom of the bay of Todos os Santos, and opposite the mouth of the river *Pitanga*, and of the rivulet *Mataim Cajahiba* on the western coast of the same bay with some others also, which are there situated and which it would be proper to mention in the corography of other countries, but in that of Brazil there is no remedy but to leave in the oblivion in which lie a great number of equal and greater importance than those mentioned.

*Tinharé* to the south of *Itaparica* is formed by the rivers Tinharé and Jequiá and the ocean: the delta of the Jequiá still further forms the islands of Tupiassú and Baypeba. Tinharé is remarkable in the history of Brazil as being the place where Francisco Romeiro, acting for the

donee Jorge de Figueredo Correa landed, and there laid the foundation of the respective captaincy (that of Ilheos), but otherwise transferred soon afterwards to the continent. The most northern part of the island is called Morro de S. Paulo.

*Abrolhos* or islands of *Santa Barbara* opposite the bar of the river Caravellas: they consist of three small islands, and two islets; the largest of all is the one to which the name of *Santa Barbara* is in reality given, and where a light-house is placed at a distance of thirty miles from the nearest coast, one thousand five houndred metres in height, and three hundred metres in breadth: the island which lies one quarter of a mile to the west is Redona, and *Scriba* situated to the south at the same distance.—Of the two islets, one stands half a mile to the south of *Santa Barbara*, and the other close to the eastern point: Pilots can no longer call them dangerous, for besides being aided by the light-house, which points them out in the night, the very evident signs of the extensive and tremendous shoal which the Portuguese call *Parcel das Paredes* make them easy to be recognized. Abrolhos, the resting place of innumerable sea-fowl, now rarely the resort of turtles, were annually visited, and still are by small vessels destined for fishing the Garoupa, which are there found in prodigious abundance, and which still continue to frequent the neighbourhood of these shoals.

Espirito Santo (the first name of the island was *S. Antonio*, soon after replaced by that of *Duarte de Lemos*, both forgotten) in the spacious bay of same name, and very close to the continent, with which its eastern side stands in a right line: it is about five leagues in circumference: is lofty and profitably cultivated: the city of Victoria, capital of the province is erected upon it whose name it also bears. It is an island the forerunner and foreteller as yet unattended to of the natural ressources,

the riches of the favoured soil of a province still very backward, but whose future is rich in promise.

*Ilha Grande* on the coast of the province of Rio de Janeiro, to the south of the bar of same named bay, forming with the point of *Jacotinga* (to which the first discoverers gave the name of Bom Abrigo) on the continent the western entrance (called Cayrussú) of the bay of *Angra dos Reis*, extends five leagues in length from east to west, its greatest width from north to south being three leagues: it was dicovered in 1502 by the first explorers sent to Brazil by Don Manoel in 1501: it is the sovereign of a spacious and considerable bay: it affords good and safe anchorage in the bay of Palmas to the north-east, and in those of Abrahão and Estella somewhat more to the north of it. The lands there are very fertile and fish is abundant close to its shores.

The island of Marambaia eight leagues in length and little more than half a league in width, also in the bay of Angra dos Reis other islands and islets which rise from the ocean and lose all their importance having as they have for neighbour the mosaic, romantic, enchanting archipelago enclosed in the vast and marvellous bay of Rio de Janeiro.

*Jorge Grego* near the north-eastern point of Ilha Grande affords an easy, quiet anchorage, and furnishes fresh provisions and fuel to vessels that seek them.

And inside that same bay, so extensive, not only is the number extended to ten or a hundred, but to three hundred islands of all sizes, which it contains, a splendid sight which is left forgotten by another still more splendid of a mosaic archipelago of small but enchanting and as it were romantic islands springing up from the vast, tranquil and marvellous bosom of the peculiar bay of Rio de Janeiro.

Here is the largest island which the Aborigines called *Maracaia* (do Gato) to which the Portuguese afterwards gave the name of *Sete Engenhos*, and which finally took

and keeps the name of the *Governador*, Salvador Correa de Sá, who purchased it from its first owner: this island has an extent of two leagues in length and half a league in width, a monastery of Benedictine friars, population, farming establishments, and pleasant country seats one league to the east of the capital of the Empire: almost in the middle of the splendid bay smiles lovingly the romantic Paquetá, scarcely half a league in length and six hundred fathoms at its greatest width, but embellished with country houses and gardens, pleasant and beautiful, having daily communication with the city of Rio de Janeiro by steamers; it is remarkable for the celebration of its S. Roque, a festive holiday, pilgrimage for the families of the capital. Paquetá preserves the memory of having for some years received as her guest in quiet calm retirement the wise and very meritorious patriot and minister of independence José Bonifacio de Andrade e Silva. Besides these two the immense bay is peopled with numerous although small islands, some in groups, some at a distance from each other.

*S. Sebastião* situated about forty eight miles to the east of the city of Santos, on the coast of the province of S. Paulo; it extends four and a half leagues from north to south, and the same at its greatest width from east to west. Its shape is triangular, with high mountains, and has excellent water: the soil is very fertile and well cultivated, and already contains a large and laborious population. This island is separated from the continent by the Strait called Toque-toque, one mile at its greatest width.

*Santo Amaro*, which the aborigines called *Guahibe*, is situated to the east of Santos, and helps to form the bay of this name; its length is four leagues more or less and its width three leagues: it was included in the lands to the south of Brazil granted to Pedro Lopes de Souza, and his name was given to the respective captaincy, which was that of the name of the chapel which Jorge Ferreira, son-

in-law of João Ramalho, the representative of the donee and his heirs raised there. This island as well as the preceding one is one of the most considerable of those which are situated near the coast of the province of S. Paulo, inasmuch as that of Santos or S. Vicente, her important neighbour, lost that geographical position, being for some time previous joined to the continent by embankments and a bridge, and at present still closer by her railroad.

Those persons who are acquainted with the coast insist in not regarding S. Amaro, as an island belonging to the sea-board, but merely situated inside the river Bertioga, and opposite to that of Santos, which formerly had been, but is no longer an island.

*Cananea* in the bay of same name three leagues above its bar, it is a league in extent: is populous and is worthy of note for its historical annals of the 16th century. It was in this island that in August of the year 1531 Martim Affonso de Souza unexpectedly encountered a Portuguese named Francisco Chaves, who met his death in company with eighty companions, whom the former furnished him for them to be taken to the rich gold mines, with which he asserted he was acquainted: it was also in this island that the Jesuit Pedro Correa, disciple of Anchieta, baptised a great number of Indians, and made them allies of the Carijós, to whom they were hostile perhaps on account of the *Carijós* having already submitted obediently to the Portuguese.

*São Francisco* in the coast of the province of Santa Catharina, and very close to that of Paraná; it is separated from the continent by a channel erroneously called the river of *São Francisco*, it is of five leagues of extension from north to south, and about two leagues at its greatest width: it is sourrounded by other small islands, almost all of which are inhabited, rather flat and rendered fertile by numerous streams; in the centre is the capital to which it gives its name, and which is the principal town of the

district, and having relatively a numerous population, it prospers by its agriculture exporting to Rio de Janeiro and to Santos coffee, tobacco, mandioca and grain, some of its inhabitants are also famous for being excellent manufacturers of imbé cordage, and as builders of launches.

*Santa Catharina,* the Indian name of which is *Juriê-Mirim,* the island *dos Patos,* a primitive name given to it by the Portuguese, opposite to the continent of Southern Brazil, to the south of that, of S. Francisco, and close to the *terra firma,* is from nine to ten leagues from north to south in length and two or a little more than two leagues from east to west.

From the continent it is about, at its nearest point, two hundred fathoms distant, and this part is called a *strait;* its geographical position is most important, and further heightened by the favourable conditions of the bay which it commands, by its very mild climate, by the admirable fertility of its soil, where reigns a perpetual spring, and where the purest air is inhaled: it contains many lakes, each one vying with the other in the abundance of its fish, and even to-day swarming with ducks and other wild fowl; of the rivers which water it, the *Tavares,* and the *Ratones* are navigable by canoes,—and of still greater magnitude than these is the *Vermelho.* Much coveted by foreign would-be-spoilers, more than once assaulted and humiliated by the aggression of the Spaniards, ephemeral possessors, this island, most precious jewel of the Empire, already populous, and wealthy, deservedly ennobled by being the seat of the capital of the province to which it extends its name, it presides over in the neighbouring continent of wide territory in great part desert belonging to the Crown, whose temperate and mild climate, navigable rivers, most fertile lands, plains, forests, and mountains, which the three kingdoms of nature enrich, evidently mark her out as a

place to receive and render prosperous hundreds of thousands of laborious immigrants.

*Santa Anna*, or *do Bananal*, between the provinces of Goyaz and Matto Grosso, formed by two arms of the river *Araguaya*, of which the western one preserves the name of the river, and the eastern takes the denomination of *Furo*, it has not less than sixty leagues of length, with a much less though still very considerable width. This island began to be populated in 1773 by villages of tame Indians, who being left in abandonment became extinct: it took the name of *Bananal* in consequence of the Banana trees which had been there planted having multiplied prodigiously. It is covered with extensive woods, and in it is to be found a lake which on a calculation made gives twenty four leagues from north to south, and six from east to west, with a channel which connects it with the arm of *Araguaya:* on this lake, it is said, that the storms are terrific.

Majestic Odalisque enclosed in the desert interior of Brazil, the island of Santa Anna, the lands of which are to be recommended on account of their wonderstriking fertility, and whose natural productions have not hitherto been sufficiently made known, looks to the future, not very far off, for a search after, a due appreciation, and a demand for her natural gifts, which of necessity must be great in proportion to the grandeur which she displays in her dimensions, and which her local condition indicates.

In the Paraná, and in the other great rivers, islands are to be met with which by their extent and other titles are deserving of most particular mention, this would, however, extend this work which was intended to be kept within fixed and limited bounds, to a disproportionate length, for it was meant only to include *general notions*, it being yet more meet that this modest and humble work, even with a deficiency of information respecting remarkable things, and the natural elements of the opulence of the

country, may remain free from the suspicion of a vain though patriotic ostentation.

We will here then close this chapter by the mention of two islands of little natural but of the highest transcendent political importance; inasmuch as they mark out the boundary lines of the Empire with the republics of Peru and Paraguay.

*São José* on the river Negro and close to the rock of *Cucuhi*.

*Fecho dos Morros* in the river Paraguay, a rocky island, of a good length, (so Ayres Cazal expresses himself) which divides into two channels the river very much narrowed at this spot, and with the chain of small hills of the name which the island took from them.

## CHAPTER V.

### Principal Straits and Capes.

Of the channels that separate its islands from the coast of Brazil, there is only one, which is that which runs between the island of S. Sebastião, and the main land of the province of S. Paulo; it is commonly called strait, and bears the name of *Toque-toque*, being 3 miles wide from the point Armação to that of Arpoar on the continent, one mile south of the town of S. Sebastião, and widening afterwards, and being 12 miles long, this channel offers on each of its margins excellent anchorage in 20 to 50 metres of water.

The arm of these a between the island of Sta. Catharina and the continent, although considered as a bay, well deserves, in part at least to take the name of strait, and in fact, they give that name to the part at which the two points that face each other to the south of the port of the city of Desterro form a channel of 252 metres in width, having a depth of from 8 to 32 metres of water.

The peninsulas, which might be pointed out on the Brazilian coast, are small and want importance in a geographical point of view.

The chief capes of Brazil are the following: That of *Orange* to the south-west of the mouth of the *Oyapock*, or river of *Vicente Pinçon*, lies in debatable territory, which is unjustly disputed by France.

That of the *North* in Brazilian Guayana to the north of the mouth of the Amazonas, 117 miles to the north-east 4° N. of the city of Macapá, distance in a straight line: the so-called *Terra dos Coelhos*, separated from the continent by the rivers Araui and Aruaré ends to the east.

That of *Magoary* at the north-eastern point of the island of Marajó.

That of *S. Roque*, on the eastern coast of Rio Grande do Norte. Admiral Roussin, in his Brazilian Pilot, says, that *that cape is not a salient point of the coast of America, as is delineated in the greater part of the charts*, pretending that from that point the Brazilian shores turn from the north to the west, which otherwise occurs in the vicinity of the *Ponta do Calcanhar*, which is situated 25 miles further to the north. From cape S. Roque to the province of Ceará, sand banks and reefs of rocks and coral banks extend, the first called of S. Roque, the second of the *Lavandeira*, and the third of the *Urcas*, which is most westerly.

That of *Branco* in the province of Parahyba on the east side of the capital not very perceptible except on the north side: the only available anchorage to be found there is 3 miles to the south in a small bay under the chapel of our Lady of the Rocha, and this only in calm weather.

That of cape *S. Agostinho* in the province of Pernambuco nearly 18 miles to the south, 4° S.-E. of the city of Recife. The bay on the north side affords anchorage for large vessels. It was very probably this cape that Vicente Yanes Pinçon saw on the 25th January 1500, and to which he gave the name of *Santa Maria da Consolacion*.

That of *S. Antonio* at the entry of All Saints Bay, with a port to which it extended its name, and near which is a light-house: from this cape to the *Ponta de Itapuanzinho*, the coast is studded with rocks on which the waves break running from west to east: there is a telegraph station.

The sand-bank situated to the S. ½ W. of the light-house extends for 4½ miles, and forms between the same and the ponta a channel 14 to 16 metres of water.

That of *S. Thomé*, in the province of Rio de Janeiro to the south of Parahyba do Sul: from the river Macahé to this cape the coast runs from a westernly to an easternly direction about 51 miles, changing its course, however, on nearing the cape, it continues in nearly a northernly direction as far as the town of Benevente in the province of Espirito Santo. In 90 miles of land which border and with an unlimited extent therefrom into the interior, is comprised the captaincy granted by D. João III. to Pero de Goes, unfortunate donee, whose hopeful nucleus of a colony which was called *Villa da Rainha*, the Guaytacazes (Indians) destroyed.

A dangerous bank which runs from east to west of this cape extends for 9 miles; the *Caboteiros* however which pass at 1½ miles or less from the land having a depth of 4 metres.

That of *Buzios* in the province of Rio de Janeiro at nearly 18 miles to the north-east of Cape Frio stretches out into the sea, and forms the central point of the deep bay, which cape S. Thomé has on its north side.

That of *Cape Frio* in the province of Rio de Janeiro, near the city of that name on the continent, it is an island of the same, separated at the extremity, to the south-west, by a narrow channel of 140 to 180 metres in width: two black hills are to be seen in fine weather at a distance of 40 miles; on one of the higher points of the cape a light-house was erected in 1835, which in 1861 was removed to the most southern point of the same, where it continues to be useful to mariners: that point is called *Focinho do Cabo*. It was on the south-western point of this island on the night of the 5th December 1830 that the English frigat

"Thetis" was wrecked on the day after her leaving Rio de Janeiro; the whole of her crew, however, was saved.

The island runs from north-east to south-west 2¼ miles in length by 1½ in breadth, its highest point being 394 metres high at its north-east end. Between the island and the continent there is a small sheltered port of some 12 to 14 metres in depth of water for anchorage.

That of *Santa Martha* in the province of Sta. Catharina a little more than 6 miles on the south-western side of the extensive bar of Laguna, and as it were, marking the commencement of the change of direction of the coast that falls away to the west.

Many other capes and points should be mentioned in a work of less limited space than ours.

## CHAPTER VI.

### Bays and Ports.

The Bays are numerous, and not less so are the Ports which open in islands and in the coast of Brazil, and even on the banks of its great rivers.

Starting from the north, the bay of Guajará is conspicuous, formed by the powerful waters of the middle branch of the Amazonas, the Tocantins, the Guamá, and Majú which discharge themselves into it; the bay receives and securely shelters large vessels: on that same bay the city of Our Lady of Belem, capital of Pará proudly shows herself—where anticipating round the archipelago of Marajó and of the jutting out *Caviana* the double mouth of the Amazonas if not the rival of the Ocean, the sweetner for many miles of her salt waves. The mouth of the Amazonas which some call south and others west, according to the indication which they wish to give to it, or on account of the important separation of the majestic river into two great branches, or on account of the opposite points of its double entry into the sea, that mouth, the better of that of the Amazonas river, leads to excellent bays and anchorage, and being that through which the shortest road is opened to the inhabited spots of the interior up the river, will be that most frequented by vessels, as shall become further known and much more and better explored shall be the natural treasures and the incalculable advantages which the valley of the Amazonas offers and its great confluents which

enrich it with a prodigy of waters and of gifts of nature in the land which they bathe.

The pilotage is not yet easy to all navigators in that southern or western branch, which beyond Marajó meets with a labyrinth of *openings* and *islands* to interrupt and separate spacious bays; but the light-houses, buoys and land marks will soon render it as safe as it is in the other mouth at present marked by two large buoys on the highest parts of the banks of *Bragança* and *Tigioca*, and with a floating beacon between those two same banks.

Following the coast in the direction of east by south, at 135 miles from the light-house of the salt pans, the bay of *Tury assú* which offers a sheltered anchorage with from 10 to 12 metres of water and which is situated at the point of the island of S. João, is only noted for its extent and sheltered situation.

Other small bays and harbours which present themselves after the foregoing we omit to mention as there is not space in this limited work.

In the province of Piauhy is the bar of *Tutoya* the sixth and last mouth of the river Parnahyba, and in it is found a regular port and one of easy access for vessels of 6 to 7 metres draught of water, it being in all the extent of 600 miles of coast between Cape S. Roque and Maranhão, the only sheltered anchorage to be met with.

At the western extremity of the island of Maranhão the great bay of S. Marcos opens, with its 36 miles of depth, reckoning from the latitude of the Itacolomi range to the mouth of the river Itapicurú, and 6 miles in its greatest width: its mouth is formed on the eastern side by the hidden bank of the *Coroa Grande*, and on the western by the coast of the Itacolomi mountain: the inside is dotted over with islands, sand banks, and ridges of rocks: the anchorage ground for large vessels lies opposite the fort of S. Antonio.

To the east of the said island of Maranhão and to the south of the point of Itaqui is the bay of *S. José* (or Itaqui) being about 18 miles in depth, and a little less than 6 wide. This and the foregoing bay both belong to the same harbour which the island divides into two mouths, giving entry to them, and the light-houses of Sant' Anna, and Itacolumi, and the smaller lights of S. Marcos, Alcantara and Barra serving as guides to the navigation of those places.

In the province of Ceará the bay of Fortaleza lies to the north-west of the point of Mocaripe, where there is a light-house, and takes its name from the city (capital) which there rises up, and commands it; it is exposed to all the winds from the north-west to the east; at the season however of southerly winds, large vessels there find good anchorage in a sandy bottom covered with ooze, of from 6 to 10 fathoms of water at a distance of 3 miles from land; the coasting vessels enter the port of the city by two inlets in the rock, which commands the same, these being distant from each other about 200 fathoms; and find at high tide $1\frac{1}{2}$ to 2 fathoms water.

In the province of Rio Grande do Norte the bay *Formosa* or *Aretipicaba* stretches out some 6 miles more or less in breadth, the bay being 3 miles in depth; vessels find in the same shelter from southerly gales and 8 metres of water at low tide.

In the province of Parahyba the bay of *Acejutibiró* or *Traição* lies at 3 miles to the north of the mouth of the river Mamangoapé: it forms a kind of half moon of 6 miles from north to south, and almost as much in depth from east to west; two small islands separate it from the sea, and form three mouths, of which that to the north is most frequented by coasters, there being 10 metres of depth in a space of 3000 metres of extent in length and breadth, and offers good anchorage and shelter from the southerly

winds. The name of Traição bay had its origin immediately after the year 1556 in which the first Bishop of Brazil, Don Pero Fernandes Sardinha and his companions in their voyage from Lisbon, were shipwrecked on the neighbouring coast, and when saved, and on their way to Pernambuco, were pursued, overtaken and devoured by the Cahetés. In the same province and to the north of the point of *Lucena*, is shewn the bay of the same name, into which the river Meririppe discharges itself; it offers good anchorage for vessels with shelter from the southerly and south-easterly winds; but exposes them to those from north to east.

Pernambuco possesses and offers the bay of Tamandaré, one of her best ports, which at all times has at least from 8 to 12 metres depth of water: lies at 30 miles distance to the south-south-west of Cape St. Agostinho: a breach in the reef by which the coast is protected constitutes the mouth or entry of this bay, in the bottom of which the river of the same name empties itself, and which stream permits canoe navigation: it was at Tamandaré that Vidal de Negreiros and Martim Soares Moreno landed in 1645 with two regiments of regular troops in aid of the *independents* who had risen against the Dutch. Catuamá, a convenient and sheltered port at the entry of the channel that separates the island of Itamaracá from the mainland, and on which is the hamlet of the same name on that island. Recife, a port called after the capital city of the province, and whose best anchorage is to the north of the fort of Picão, and called the Poço, which at all times has a depth of 16 to 30 feet of water; the vessels which only require from 10 to 18 feet of water may with the rising tide come into the port of Mosqueirão between the city and the wall of rock, at the extremity of which is the fort Picão, and a light-house, of which the light is seen on the sea at 15 miles distance.

In the province of Alagôas at $1^1/_2$ miles to the east of

the city of Maceió (whose port is illuminated by a light-house) lying in the southern margin of the promontory *Ponta-Verde*, is the frequented port of *Jaraguá*, where ride, having entered on the south-west side, the vessels which at a mile's distance from the coast, find every where a depth of water of 22 metres. On the other side of that promontory of *Ponta-Verde*, another smaller port is met with, to wit that of Pajussará: in it the vessels which seek shelter against the wintry south and west winds are accustomed to find excellent shelter.

The bay of Todos os Santos which transferred its geographical name to the province over which its capital which was also the capital of Colonial Brazil till 1762 prides itself, is grand, superb, forming rather a gulf of 36 miles from S. Antonio point, at its entry, to its northern extremity and is in breadth some 18 miles from east to west. Between it and the sea lies the island of Itaparica, which opens to vessels two entries; of these that of the west is narrowed by sand banks which surround the points of *Garcia* and *Caixa-Prega* at the extreme south of the island, besides being shallow, and winding for about 9 miles; the second entry apparently 6 miles wide from S. Antonio point to that of *Pinho*, which forms part of Itaparica, even from its sand-banks, providential fortresses, opens a channel of 3 miles in width. All the lands encircling the bay are in general of small height, and planted with cocoa trees. On the highest part is situated S. Salvador between S. Antonio and Monserrate points, which form as it were a semi-circular bay, in the entry of the spacious, expansive and most beautiful bay, access to which is perfectly directed by night by the light-house situated at the *point of St. Antonio*, the light of which can be seen at 15 miles distance from the coast.

In the same province there is also the bay of *Morro de São Paulo*, situated to the south-west and at 30 miles

from the cape of St. Antonio, with an anchorage of from 10 to 12 metres depth of water, sheltered and capable of receiving large vessels, there is, at the top of the mountain, a fine light-house, the light of which can be seen at the distance of 24 miles; the bay of Camamú, between the *Ilheos*, and *Todos os Santos* bays, with two mouths formed by the peninsula, which ends at the point of the *Muta*, and by the island of Quirepe: that of the *Ilheos*, which lies between the mainland, on the southern border of which is placed the town of S. Jorge, and the four small islands to which it owes its name, and in the largest of which only are to be found trees and land fit for cultivation: and Porto Seguro, or *Enseada Cabralea*, or Cabralea bay, a little more than 3 miles to the south of the hamlet of Santa Cruz, is chiefly notable; because it was there, that on the 24th April 1500, the Squadron of Cabral, the discoverer of Brazil, entered and anchored; in that same bay, the river *Buranhen* or *Cachoeira* empties itself: there are only from 11 to 12 feet of water in this bay although at its mouth there is a depth of 18 feet.

The province of Espirito Santo offers a bay of its own name, the entrance to which is formed by the *Moreno* hill on the south side, and the Pirahé point, named *Tubarão* by Admiral Roussin, and is 3 miles wide; it is both spacious and fine, and commanded by the ancient capital on the continent and by the city which very early tooks its place and which city is situated on the eastern side of the island very near. Close to the Villa Velha, the mean depth of water is a little more than 13 feet.

Thirty nine miles south-west by south of Monte Moreno, on the coast of this province, the bay of *Benevente* begins, being 6 miles in extent to the first island on the south-west side, good anchorage of from 8 to 10 metres depth of water, and sufficiently sheltered, is there to be found.

In the province of Rio de Janeiro, ninety miles to the east-north-east in a direct line from Rio de Janeiro is the bay and port of Macahé; vessels of the largest size find safe and convenient anchorage on the bar between the continent and the islands of Sant' Anna, and those of smaller size may come near to the city which is likewise called Macahé.

A little more than 12 miles to the south-west of *Macahé* is the bay into which the river S. João empties itself, and which bay terminates at the Cape Buzios; to the west of this cape, excellent anchorage is found for all classes of vessels.

From the north to the north-west of Cape Frio lie the port and bay of the same name, and both are, especially the port sheltered from the winds from all quarters by sufficiently lofty islands and mountains: the bay which lies to the south-west of the city of Cape Frio is reserved for the coasters.

At less than 60 miles from the capital of the Empire to the south, the bay of *Angra dos Reis* spreads itself out, being from east to west as many more miles in length between the territories of Guaritiba and Parati: it is separated from the sea by the sands of *Marambaia* and by the *Ilha Grande*, to the east of which lies that part known as the bay of Santa Cruz; and to the west of the same, and of the city of *Angra dos Reis*, the so-called bay of *Parati:* three mouths give entrance to the bay in question; one between *Marambaia* and the land of *Guaratiba*, barely permits the passage of canoes; another between the sands of *Marambaia* and the *Ilha Grande* is more than 6 miles wide, without any obstacle whatever; the third finally which is to the west of this last island and Jacotinga point on the continent, offers not less than 9 miles of width. The bays of *Abrahão*, and of *Estella* give safe shelter to the largest vessels of war, and the brigs may come into the neigh-

bourhood of the port of *Sepitiba*, in the bay called *Santa Cruz*. The point *Maria Albardão* in the west of *Ilha Grande* and that which fronts the continent where the city of *Angra dos Reis* is situated narrowing the space from what is called the bay of *Ilha Grande* or also of Angra dos Reis. A depth of from 13 to 66 metres of water permits the entry of many vessels of the line at the same time into the centre of each port of this great bay, which besides this ensures shelter from all winds that may blow.

But before the bay of *Angra dos Reis* was left, not forgotten, but only not to obfuscate by its precedence the conditions although very considerable of that, the immense and magnificent bay of *Nicterohy*, of *Guanabara*, or *Rio de Janeiro*, which Magalhães and Ruy Falleiro also called *Santa Luzia* by reason of their having entered it on the 13th December 1519. It is the proud rival of Constantinople in beauty, and far exceeding it in majestic grandeur. Its entrance has an appropriate name — *sublime!* — which exclusively belongs to it: enormous and blackened rocks whose tracks touch the sea and whose summits are often enveloped in clouds, rise up on each side as it were to guard the port: the continuous line of those rocks which advance from the north-east take the shape of an enormous human figure lying down, of which at the bar, the Pão d'Assucar (sugar-loaf) figures as the feet with its immense point and to which they gave the name of the *giant of stone:* islands are met with before the mouth of this wonderful bay, one of them, the Rasa, exhibits an excellent light-house, besides the fortresses *outside*, it is there defended by the batteries of *Santa Cruz*, and by those of the *Pico*, to the east of *S. João*, to the west, in the middle by those of Lage, further by those of Villegagnon, besides other large and small forts which succeed each other to the east and west.

The bay is encircled by many superb mountain ranges

forming a stupendous curtain, which have no other inlets, save those which lie between the first mentioned fortresses; from that of S. João near the *Pão d'Assucar* (Sugar loaf) to that of Sta. Cruz on the slope of the peak of that name at the entrance of the bay there is not less distance than 1500 metres, and there are more than 1000 between the latter and that of Lage, which rises out of the sea with its belt of foam: ships find here from 30 to more than 70 metres depth of water. From the bar to the village of Piedade which lies opposite, and at the bottom of the bay, the distance is 17 miles, its greatest width being 12 miles. All the fleets of the world could be perfectly well accommodated, and safe in the anchorage of Rio de Janeiro, which tempests respect. Most beautiful bays, as that of Bota-Fogo presents to the west, and that of S. Francisco or inlet of Jururuba to the east, and that of S. Lourenço form an immediate contrast in their poetical and smiling magic appearance with the sumptuously grave, imposing and as it were sombre aspect, which the bar presents, and after and beyond that bar in the sea, and in the midst of the vast amphitheatre of verdure, formed by lines of elevated mountains which go on decreasing into mounts and hills, until many of them stoop down and lose themselves in their descent to the Ocean, having before that lost themselves in the mountain ranges, their tops mixed up with the clouds; placidly and caressingly there arise from out of the waves, not ten or twenty, but a full archipelago of innumerable isles and islets of rocky nestling places of birds, making a garden of the interior of the bay, which had proudly shewn to the east and to the west, bathing their feet in her waters, the modest city, capital of the province and the rich city and brilliant capital of the Empire.

From its fortunate geographical situation, and from the many and unsurpassingly favorable conditions which the

bay of *Rio de Janeiro* unites, it has an advantage over all the others of America and the world, and still in its bosom, the centre of opulence, are about to be opened, proceeding from the chain of mountains which surround it, numerous, although small rivers, and streams, veins of wealth, some of which at least lend themselves to navigation by boats and small canoes, for miles in distance, and which nourish a most extensive commerce.

In the same province there is also the beautiful bay of Ubatuba near Rio de Janeiro about one hundred and twenty miles to the west of the capital of the Empire, three miles long, and one and a half in its greatest breadth; its entry is easy, and large vessels taking a middle course always find from twenty to thirty metres of water, and convenient shelter from the south and south westerly winds, which are the most violent in the southern seas of Brazil.

In the province of S. Paulo there is the small creek and port of S. Sebastião in the strait of Toque-toque, affording good anchorage for vessels, having a muddy bottom with a depth of from twelve to forty metres of water, and permitting them to go out at any time, as well by the southern as by the northern entry; on the other side of the strait, and adjoining the island of that same name, the sheltered anchorages, as also those with muddy bottoms are from sixteen to forty metres deep: the bay or port of Santos, which presents three entries owing to the islands of S. Vicente and S. Amaro: the southern called *Rio*, or bar of S. Vicente, is most commonly dry at low tide; the northern which is called *Bertioga*, and lies between the continent and *Santo Amaro* or Guaiba, is only shallow and permits the passage of canoes and small craft; that of the middle which is called *Barra Grande*, and lies between the two islands, may be and is frequented by large vessels, which are sheltered in the port by the *Taipú* and *Manduba*, points to the east of which is, at 1500 metres distance, the

small island of Moella with a light-house bearing a fixed light: Cananea, formerly called Tarapande, which—between a mountainous peninsula, that is on its south side, and the islands bearing its name, and Iguape on the north side, and still having two channels to the south, which connect it with that called *Mar Pequeno*—enters the land in an irregular form some twelve miles, not exceeding in width 1500 metres: its entry is obstructed by sand banks through the midst of which a course is opened for small craft.

The province of Paraná has the bay of *Paranaguá*, which extends in an irregular form for more than eighteen miles in length and nine in breadth, without paying attention to the nooks and indentations which go further into the land; it is dotted with islands, having at its entry that of *Mel*, and the islets of *Palmas*, and further in the *Cotingas*, which are the largest: to the south of that first island lies the bar of Ibupetuba or *Barra Falsa*, through which only canoes can enter on account of the hidden rocks; the northern bar or *Superaguy*, although very wide appears also to become narrow from the same causes and impediments; that of the centre to which Ayres Cazal gives more than one thousand metres of breadth, serves for larger vessels; to the east and parallel with the sea a communication is made with this by an arm which it throws out which is called the bay of Pinheiros, the notable bay of *Paranagua*, which receives the tribute of numerous streams and some important rivers.

In the province of Sta. Catharina are at once seen the bay of *Babitonga*, and the port of S. Francisco of the city, and in the island and river of the same name, on the bar of which no less than six metres depth of waters is found.

Further to the south spreads out the beautiful and superb bay of *Sta. Catharina*, formed by the island, which gives it its name, and fronting the mainland; the island and mainland thrusting forth two tongues of land, divide

it in two parts, leaving an opening of more than 350 metres; the larger vessels usually enter by the deep and wide mouth which opens between the island of *Arvoredo*, where a light-house is intended to be erected, and the point of the Rapa to the north of Sta. Catharina, and go beyond the fort of S. José, lying to the left hand, and of the fortified islet of *Anhato-Mirim* to the right, anchor in a muddy bottom in from 8 to 10 metres depth of water, which diminishes a little as it approaches the city of Desterro: to the south of this anchorage lie the two points which separate the northern part of the bay from the southern, in which is found a depth of from four to sixteen feet of water, with a bottom of soft mud, there being from thence to the south bar, where a light-house with a fixed light stands, a distance of fifteen miles of easy navigation. The anchorages are sheltered and convenient; and the conditions and geographical situation of this bay, the climate and fertility of the great island which overlooks it, excite the envy of maritime powers, who have coveted it in vain.

Eighteen miles to the north to north-west of the point of *Rapa*, the lovely bay of the *Garoupas*, at the bottom of which is the town of Porto Bello, bathes the mainland of the province of *Sta. Catharina:* it is formed by the point of the *Garoupas*, which lies to its east, and by that of Itapeba to the north: numbers of vessels could at the same time find anchorage of from four to fourteen metres depth of water, and shelter from south-westerly and westerly winds, which are those most to be feared on the coast of Brazil.

The bay of *Tejucas* at the bottom of which is situated the town of *S. Sebastião* is formed by the points of the Ganchos and of the Zimbos, to the west of which are to be found good anchorages with a depth of water of six or more metres.

In the province of Rio Grande of S. Pedro do Sul,

and on a sandy beach lies the port of *San José do Norte* about six miles to the east of the city of Rio Grande, and where the channel of the same name ends: it would admit large vessels of war, if they could pass over the bar of the channel: the vessels that require more than ten feet of water anchor in this port, fearing that of Rio Grande, notwithstanding its being unsheltered.

Between the bay of *Mangueira*, and the southern extremity of the lake dos Patos, more than six miles above the bar is the port of *Rio Grande*, where vessels find fifteen feet of water, and a good although narrow anchorage, and it communicates with the sea by a channel of that extent in length and of three miles in width, erroneously called *Rio Grande*: the dangers and difficulties of the entry to the channel militates against the commercial importance of the port: sailing vessels wait for clear weather and north-east winds to make good the short distance from the beach of the Estreito until they sight the tower at the north point, on which is an excellent light-house, the light of which can be seen at a distance of twenty four miles, and where the pilots of the bar come to take them in through sand-banks, which shift through the violence of the winds and the force of the currents. The channel throughout has a sandy bottom, with generally from twelve to fourteen metres water; at the bar however, there are not more than from twelve to fourteen metres of water without rocks at low water, and in the channel of *Barca* the same depth is found more or less. From the port of the city of Rio Grande to that of the city of Porto Alegre the distance to be sailed is one hundred and eighty miles through the lakes dos Patos and Viamão, on the borders of which in a bay at the source and near the former is where the geographers place the mouth of the river *Jacuhi*, it shews itself, receiving the confluence of the Cahi, dos Sinos, and Gravatahy with the Jacuhy, opposite a convenient and sheltered bar.

The two last ports of Rio Grande and Porto Alegre being principally dependent on an everchanging and dangerous bar, even in spite of this are considerable and of great commercial importance owing to the rich productions of the province, which in addition to her opulence, obtained through the industry and labour of her active and energetic inhabitants, takes a high transcendent political position, being at the most southern extremity of the Empire, and the haughty, warlike sentinel, watchful and scrupulous of the integrity and honour of Brazil in the part in which the boundary line of the neighbouring states come in contact with her.

On arriving at the most southern province of the Empire we put on one side the review of the bays as well as of the principal ports, from which otherwise it will only be withdrawn once in honour of the king or the greatest of rivers, considering as an exception, as deserving of homage, the bay of Guajará.—Go back from the south to the north, not forgetting remarkable ports in rivers more or less winding, and situated near or at a distance from the sea; before however quitting the province of San Pedro, let us notice that of Pelotas in the river S. Gonçalo or rather on the left bank of the channel through which the lake Mirim relieves itself into that of Patos, and which is frequented by smacks which carry large quantities of products to be exported from those of Rio Grande and S. José do Norte, and that of *Uruguayana* on the Uruguay, and on the frontier, possessing a Custom House in the flourishing city to which it gives its name.

In the province which comes next in retrogration there is the port of Laguna on the eastern border of the lake also of same name, a lake the extent of which is about twenty four miles in length, and six to nine in width, and which communicates with the sea through the mouth of the river Tubarão, to which it joins itself forming one single mouth, which is generally called *Bar of Laguna*: it

can only be navigable by small craft: that of the Forquilha about twelve miles from the mouth of the *Mampituba*, Ayres Cazal gives a width of two hundred metres, and the coasters of light draught of water ascend with the tide assisted by its strong current.

In the province of Paraná the port of *Guaratuba* on the southern bank of the river of same name, is more than three miles distant from the sea, her bar permitting coasters, small craft and smacks to enter and offers every facility.

In the province of S. Paulo, the port of *Iguape* one hundred and forty four miles to the south-east of the city of S. Paulo; it is situated at the bottom of an extensive lake, to which the name of *Mar pequeno* (little sea) has been given; it only permits the entry of small vessels, but its commerce is active.

In the province of Rio de Janeiro, the river of Parahyba possesses at her entrance the port of *S. João da Barra*, and another much more considerable in spite of the serious obstacles of the bars, that of *Campos*, twenty four miles distant from the sea, and one hundred and twenty miles to the north-east of the capital of the Empire in a direct line, that is north-east $^1/_4$ east: the river Macacú, the largest of those which empty themselves in the bay of Nicterohy, presents at twelve miles from her mouth the ports of *Villa Nova*, remarkable only on account of the *Canta-Gallo* railroad having its terminus there, and that of *Caixas*, as having the most lucrative commerce, otherwise in a small river, which is tributary to the Macacú.

That of the Espirito Santo contains the port of *Guarapary*, at the mouth of the river of same name, the resort of coasters, sheltered from the winds and keeping alive a comparatively animated trade: at twelve miles from the sea, and at more than eighty from the mouth of the river Doce, the port of *S. Matheus* in the river of the same name, and whose exports are notable.

In the province of Bahia, among many others, the following ports may be noted: *Rio de Contas*, on the southern bank of the river so called, and a little within its mouth, of easy access to smacks, which frequent it: of *Camamú*, at nine miles from the sea, above the mouth and on the left bank of the *Acarahi*, which goes and empties itself in the bay of *Camamú*; as far as that smacks go up the river easily; of *Marahú* on the banks of the river of that name, more than twenty miles above the mouth of the same in that same bay; it has the same advantage of the preceding: of *Abbadia* on the bank of the Ariguitiba, last tributary of the river Real, fifteen miles distant from the sea: of *Santo Amaro*, thirty six miles to the north-west of the city of S. Salvador in the river *Sirigi* below the place at which the stream *Subahé* joins it; the tide reaches so far: of *Cachoeira* on the banks of the Paraguassú, at nearly sixty miles from the city of Bahia; beyond it the tide ascends almost two miles; it is a city of great commerce: of *Nazareth*, on the left bank of the river *Jaquaripé* and at eighteen miles from the mouth of this in the *Barra falsa*; large vessels aided by the tide come down the river.

In the province of *Sergipe* is the port of *S. Christovão* in the river *Paramopama*, near the river Sergy or Sergipe, and at fifteen miles direct distance from the sea, to which vessels go by the river *Irapirang*, or *Vaza barris*, of which the bar is divided, and under favourable circumstances only offers ten feet of water: of *Moruim* on the banks of the *Ganhomoraba* a tributary of the Sergipe; it is and ought to become still more important: of *Estancia* at the distance of fifteen miles from the sea, and on the left bank of the small river Piauhy which falls into the *Real*; the smacks go up as far as the same, and support the commerce which is there active: of *Larangeiras* on the left bank of the Continguiba six miles above its confluence with the Sergipe; large smacks frequent it: of *Aracajú* on the right bank of

the same *Cotinguiba*, and at a little more or less than three miles of the ocean; over this port is now to be seen the capital of the respective province.

That of Alagôas has the port of *Penedo* on the left bank of the great river *S. Francisco*, which is here more than sixteen hundred metres broad: it is at twenty miles distance from the mouth of the river in the ocean, whose tide flows into it availably: besides some others there is that of *Conceiçao* in the river Cururipe, and at three miles from the sea, giving commodious entry to small vessels.

Pernambuco affords the ports of *Goyana* formed by the small rivers *Tracunhaem* and *Capibaribe-Mirim*, which unite beyond that, taking the name of the river *Goyana;* it is nine miles distant from the sea, and at a little more than thirty six to the nord to north-west of *Olinda*, and has sufficient depth to receive coasting vessels of large tonnage; of *Iguarussú*, fifteen to eighteen miles to the north of *Olinda*, and six from the sea, on the right bank of the river which gave it its name; it is frequented by smacks:—of *Serinhen* or *Rio Formoso* on the banks of that river at six miles above its mouth in the ocean; it is nearly sixty miles to the south of Recife, and goes on encreasing in importance.

In *Parahyba*, they are opening the port of that name on the right bank of the river which gives it its name, and at twelve miles from the sea, having a width of one thousand five hundred metres, there is good anchorage for vessels, and at its entry at least from four to six metres of water: of *Mamanguape* on the left bank of the river so called, eighteen miles distant from the capital of the province; it admits vessels of small burthen.

Rio Grande do Norte counts the port of *Natal* at the mouth of the river *Potingy* or *Grande* at three miles distance from the sea; it lies in a hind of bay between the city of *Natal*, and the fort of the *Reis Magos* which is at

the southern point of that mouth; it offers excellent anchorage, and besides this one there are others of less importance.

In Ceará lies the port of *Aracaty*, which is both considerable and rich, on the right bank of the river *Jaguaribe*, nine miles above the mouth of this; it is ninety miles distant from the city of Fortaleza: of *Granja* on the left bank of the river *Camucim* or *Croayhú*, which is the name they gave to it in the interior, eighteen miles distant from the sea, or from the mouth of that river, which is twenty one miles distant from the bay of Jericoacoára, which passes for the best port in the province.

In Piauhy, the port of *Parnahyba* is advantageously situated at fifteen miles from the ocean on the right bank of the river of that name, above the place, where on the opposite bank, that river throws out an arm called *Tutoya*, the only one whose bar gives access to vessels drawing from twenty to twenty three feet of water; of *Theresina* also on the bank of the Parnahyba a little above the mouth of the Poty, scarcely twenty years frequented, and promising an auspicious future.

In the province of Maranhão, there is, besides other ports, that of *Rozario*, or *Itipicurú-Grande* on the left bank of the river of this name at twenty four miles distance from its mouth in the bay of S. José; at that port the coasters coming from the rich city of Caixias load and discharge cargo: of *Mearim* or *Nazareth* on the left bank of the river of that name, which discharges itself in the bay of S. Marcos opposite the island of Maranhão; it is at the distance of sixty miles from the city of S. Luis and thirty to the west of the town of Itapicurú; this port has the draw-backs of little depths of water at its mouth, which otherwise is sufficiently supplied, and its current is so strong, that it prevents the tide, and the *prororócas* (tidal waves) from ascending it; the danger of these latter

is known, and happily they are avoided by the vessels putting in to the islets and sheltered places which are not wanting at its bar.

The province of Pará, the favourite of the tributaries of the king of waters, the Amazonas and the Tocantins, which count among their tributaries winding rivers, which would be the pride, and confer titles of grandeur to the proudest nations and to the most opulent countries of the world, abounds in ports, whose utmost importance is foreshadowed by the natural riches and extraordinary fertility of a region marvellously endowed by the Creator, and where are heaped up innumerable and multiplied treasures, is still wanting, and that very much, men to gather in what prodigal Nature grants so freely, or to explore those which exuberant in fertility assures a profit to easy toil.

Besides others the following ports are notable: of *Macapá* on the left bank of the *Amazonas;* about one hundred and ten miles to the south-west of *Cabo do Norte* and nearly one hundred and eighty miles to the north-west by west of the city of *Belem* in a direct line: of *Cametá* on the left bank of the Tocantins, the future and great *entrepôt* of the riches of Guayaz: of *Santarem* or of *Tapajoz* on the right bank of the river of this name, and in its confluence with the *Amazonas*; another most important *entrepôt* of the commerce will not be long in forming in the province of Guayay: of *Obidos* on the left bank of the Amazonas near the confluence of the river Orixima, and where, notwithstanding its distance of more than six hundred miles from the sea, the tide reaches; the river there is near one thousand eight hundred metres wide: of *Melgaço* on the western bank of the lake *Anapú,* which communicates with the river of the same name long before its embouchure in the *Tagypurú*: of *Moz* on the eastern bank of Xingú, twelve miles above its junction with the *Amazonas:* of *Bragança* formerly *Cayté* on the bank of the

river of this name nearly eighteen miles distant from the ocean: of *Vigia* at te mouth of the *Amazonas*, or rather also in the bay of *Guajana*.

In the province of Amazonas, there is the port of *Manaos*, formerly the *Barra do Rio Negro*, on the left bank of this river, nine miles above its junction with the *Amazonas*, and lies in a kind of bay which the points of Cachoeira Grande, and that of Remedios form; and its depth of water is from twelve to twenty four metres of water: that of *Teffé*, or of *Ega* on the right bank of the river Teffé six miles above the confluence of this river with the *Solimões*: finally those of *San José de Marabitanas*, and of *Tabatinga* still very important as being points of the frontier of the Empire; the first on the southern bank of the *Rio Negro*, nearly one hundred and fifty miles above the fort of *S. Gabriel*, and above twenty seven below the channel of *Cassiquiari* which communicates with the Orinoco; the second on a canoe stream branching from the main one, and on the left bank of the Maranhão, Solimões, or Amazonas, and six miles above the confluence of the *Hyauhary (Jabary, Javary)*.

The distances which separate these ports from the city of Belem, and which separate them, one from the other, as also other important points, cities and villages of the banks of the great river are marked with zealous and verified exactitude in the table of distances which will be seen appended in Chapter VI., Province of Pará.

Let us then, on leaving the seaboard, touch at some of the ports of the province of *Amazonas*, which is one of the four in the centre of *Brazil*, at least at the port of *Corumba*, in *Matto Grosso*, on the banks of the *Paraguay*, to which are opened new and auspicious horizons from the free navigation of this river, one of the three great ones which form the estuary of the Plata.

Although incomplete and meagre as is the present

slight index to the bays and seaports and to the rivers of Brazil, which freely communicate with the sea, much more insufficient and poorer will it become, as in the course of years, that in the moral life of nations no longer measure themselves by time, but by the daring flight of progress and civilization,—the banks of these colossi of water become populated, still more gigantic will they shew themselves, when that population becomes denser by the confluence of railroads which are beginning to be developed and by the affluence of immigration, the real prospect, but slightly indicative of the incalculable riches of the country, becomes opened to us.

They are still called, and are—but will shortly cease to be—*Central Provinces* with the signification which that qualifying title has in other States and nations. *Minas Geraes, Goyaz*, *Matto Grosso*, and *Amazonas*, the four known as *central provinces* of the Empire, have more fresh water than the *Mediterranean* has of salt; to connect them with the ocean, they have the *S. Francisco*, the *Tocantins*, the *Araguaya*, and the *Amazonas*, and besides those the *Paraná*, the *Paraguay*, the *Uruguay*, which to the north, in the centre, and in the south of the seacoast, will render them maritime: for that it is sufficient that men should help themselves; for God has already helped them much more than he has any other country or region of the world; and even if they should not know how to help themselves, the illimited richness of the soil, and the natural impulse of a greatness which came forth imponent, and as it were predestined by the immense favor of divine Providence—the Creator—will, although less rapidly, raise Brazil to the highest point of elevation which belongs to it by *divine right*.

In ten years time, the ocean, in invading the land, will not have scooped out or opened new works, much less fresh bays in the coast of Brazil; in these two lustres,

however, peace without, and tranquillity and order in the interior, the development of liberal institutions, already planted, and not in dispute with the precarious future, and immigration encouraged by the guarantee of the lights of the heart, and of conscience, by the rights of family, of country, and of religion, will cause to be multiplied also by tens and hundreds in our great rivers both near and far from the sea, commercial ports in Brazil.

# CHAPTER VII.

## Brazilian Orographic System.

There still exists a great lack of orographic knowledge as regards Brazil.

St. Hilaire, Flourens, and some other men of knowledge and science, originators of systems, the foundation of which was the study of the normal state of the American Nature in general, or specially, that of Brazil, barely light up the beacon which points the way that should be followed in pursuit of this objects; Martius, St. Hilaire, as well as the most impartial and reputable discoverers, naturalists and engineers, who, either from the bosom of the Mother Country, or from abroad, have been enabled partly to study and survey some places and regions of the Empire, have left behind them estimates and observations which are considered exact or nearly so, concerning partial divisions of the Cordilheiras, of isolated mountain ridges, and of some high peaks, undoubtedly a great aid for future orographers, but insufficient to facilitate a slight but clear positive sketch of the orography of Brazil. It must be confessed that there exists in the vast interior of this country mountains not as yet known, Sierras which become confounded in the order of the system of great chains and secondary ranges, and still more, the want of geological information respecting them.

In order to avoid the greatest number of errors, or at least wrong conclusions, it appears to us adviseable to

confess our want of knowledge on the matter, and merely to add to the generality of a known system, and as being the simpler way, to adopt some of the few partial notices obtained relative to each province.

The system is that of Balbi, since adopted and made use of by the enlightened Senhor Pompeo de Souza Brazil, and others.

In his classification, Balbi, in establishing the orological Brazilian system, presents three principal mountain ranges, besides the secondary ones; the former extend from south to north, with various inclines, and under different names, as follows:—

1st. The Central Mountain range or *do Espinhaço* the principal inasmuch as it is the most elevated, and it appears to be the most continuous, although it is not the most extensive; it extends from the 10th to the 28th parallel (according to Balbi), crossing the provinces of Bahia, Minas Geraes, and S. Paulo, and the northern extremity of S. Pedro, barely touching that of Rio de Janeiro; the northern part of this mountain range is also known by the name of *Serra das Almas;* in the south of the province of Minas Geraes, it is called *Serra da Mantiqueira.*

Its highest peak is that of the mountain *Itacolumi*, near *Villa Rica* (*Ouro Preto* a city and the capital of the province of Minas Geraes), its height being 950 toises, and is the highest point of the whole range. When Balbi wrote, it was no error of his to forget to mention the province of Paraná which was formerly a district of S. Paulo in the direction of the mountain range of *Espinhaço* or *Central*, but besides this it must be recollected that on the other hand the enlightened geographer, after having marked the direction from south to north of the great mountain ranges of his orological Brazilian classification, accompanies that of the *Espinhaço* or *Central* from north to south; and

finally marks as its highest point and of all the range Itacolumi, as being 950 toises in height, it being now known that the highest general culminating point is although in the same mountain rangethe Itatiaya Agorulha Negra, with an elevation of 2994 metres.

2nd. To the east of the central range or *Espinhaço*, there extends from 16° to 30° (we still quote from Balbi), and almost parallel with the coast, another line of mountains which the Brazilians denominate *Serra do Mar*, and which in relation to the other two might be called *the Eastern range*. Some small elevations make it *appear* to extent to the cape San Roque.

Along this extent, but with wide gaps, it passes on to the provinces of *Rio Grande do Norte*, *Parahyba*, *Pernambuco*, *Alagôas*, *Sergipe Bahia*, *Espirito Santo*, *Rio de Janeiro*, *S. Paulo*, and *S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul*. The second order of mountain ranges of *Esmeraldas*, or *Negra*, and *Serra Senora* unite this mountain range to that of the *Espinhaço*.

Here again is the same continuation of the end of one to the commencement of the other, in the direction of the mountain ridge, and when at its commencement in Minas Geraes, Balbi finds the junction of the two great chains formed by the communication, or sister chain of the *Serra Negra* or *das Esmeraldas*: St. Hilaire asserts that the distance which the *Cordilhera do Mar* and that of *Espinhaço* run parallel, but separately, is 60 leagues; he makes the latter advance a little more or less from the north-east of the province of S. Paulo.

3rd. The range of the *Vertentes*, the longest and most elevated of this system (still Balbi's) which separate the affluents of the rivers *Amazonas*, *Tocantins*, and *Parnahyba* from those of *S. Francisco*, *Paraná and Paraguay*. This Cordilheira which the distinct geographer calls *western*, stretches from the southern frontier of *Ceará* as far as the

western extremity of *Matto-Grosso*, describing a vast semi-circle through the provinces of *Piauhy*, *Pernambuco*, *Minas Geraes*, *Goyaz*, and *Matto Grosso*, under the names of *Serra Alegre*, *Ibiapaba*, *Piauhy*, *Taugatinga*, *Tabatinga*, *Araras*, *Pirineos* or *Vertentes* properly called, *Santa Martha*, *Bororós*, *Campos Paresis* (or *dos Parecis*) and *Serra Urucumanacú*; its highest culminating point stands in the central part called *Pirineos*. To the west of Uruguay, it no longer offers a continuous series of mountains, but rather of spurs and small mountains, which cause the division of the waters and which are as it were asperities of the plains of insignificant elevation, and which occupy the centre of South America.

St. Hilaire gives to this Cordilheira the name of *Serra de São Francisco* and *da Parnahyba*, shewing that he wishes to limit the same to the vast region, where it divides the waters which flow from one to another.

The baron d'Eschwege speaks of the *Serra das Vertentes*, separating in a large curve the waters of the north from those of the south, and taking in the Serra of *Canastra*, the *Pirineos*, and the mountains of *Xingú* and *Cuyaba*, but he does not say where the *Serra das Vertentes* begins or where it ends; Martius gives us to understand that Eschwege gives the same limits to this Serra, as St. Hilaire has determined, as by him proposed. Ayres Cazal does not distinguish the two parts of the chain, that is the most southern whose waters flow to the *Parnahyba*, and the northern which flow to the *Tocantins*, but he acknowledges that this Cordilheira often changes its name and is in reality one only, and that it goes from south to north, separating Goyaz from Minas and Pernambuco, and that it is only interrupted by openings.

4th. As ranges of the second class, Balbi points out the Serra *Borborema*, an arm which spurts out from that of the *Vertentes* in that part called *Serra da Ibiababa*

(in Ceará) and which *appears* to cross the *Parahyba*, taking the direction towards cape *San Roque*. To the west of the *Serra dos Vertentes* beginning from its nucleus which bears the name of *Taugatinga*, a line of mountain detaches itself, taking a direction to the west, which shortly after goes towards the north, and throwing out several branches to the east separates the waters, which supply the Maranhão, from the eastern affluents of the *Tocantins*.

From the Serra *Espinhaço*, a branch goes out to the south of *Villa Rica (Ouro Preto)* which under the name of *Serra Negra*, *Canastra*, *Serra Marcella*, and *Serra dos Cristaes* unites this mountain range to the western one. The most elevated parts (pointed out by the illustrious geographer) are those of the *Borborema Serra*, but in other respects their accuracy is not vouched for.

The classification of Balbi is in perfect accordance with the surveys of the engineer Henry Gerber, who in 1868 published his excellent work "*Geographical* and *Administrative Notes of the province of Minas Geraes*", in which establishing the orographic system of the *Espinhaço range*, and considering it as being proved by several groups of mountains to which he gives a correct denomination, in treating of the slopes to the rivers *San Francisco* and *Rio Grande*, he includes in the group of the Serra Canastra the highest one of same name, and the Serra *Marcella*, and in the group of the Serra *Mata da Corda*, the *Negra*, and *dos Cristaes*.—

Here then we quote from a work, of few pages indeed, but replete with matter, from the pen of the above mentioned engineer; it is well to bear in mind, that his orographic system of the province of Minas Geraes is a good and luminous guide, for in it he included and classified methodically and scientifically the groups of mountains which belong to the Cordilheras of *Espinhaço* and *Vertentes* or

the *Central* and *Western* of Balbi, nor does he omit giving them their local denominations.

This same geographer adds to these three principal Cordilheiras and to the secondary ones classified by Balbi, the *System of Parima*, or of *Guayana*, and thus indicates them.

„It is correctly speaking an irregular collection of mountain ranges separated one from another by plains, forests and immensely extensive tracts of wood lands. We include in this system all the high lands, which rise up in the vast extent known by the name of Guayana, divided between Columbia, Brazil and English, Dutch, and French America. The *Orinoco*, the *Cassiquiario*, the *Rio Negro* and the *Amazonas* fix its boundaries.

„It would appear according to the latest researches, that the nucleus of this group is the *Serra Parima* which extends to the east, leaning somewhat to the south, taking the names ef *Serra da Pacaraina* on the confines of Columbian and Brazilian Guayana, and that of Serra de *Tumucumaque* on the frontiers of the province of Pará, where it appears to lose itself in the low plains situated between the capes *Orange* and *North*.

„We consider as a dependency of this system the *Serra Velha* and the *Serra do Pará*, situate between *Almeirim* and the *Outeiro* in the province of Pará. The highest known point of this system is the peak of *Duida* situated to the north of *Esmeralda* on the *Oronoco*, 1300 toises high.“

Here concludes the national lesson of Brazilian orography, for which we are indebted to Balbi: many other learned writers agree with this geographist, as to the system of the principal Cordilheiras with exception of the denominations and the purpose of modifying and augmenting the number of the latter, according to the series of chains dividing the waters running to the great rivers, which form independent and more important basins, and with exception of the general system as understood and laid

down by Humboldt, and which treats with more attention of the physical orography of America than of Brazil in particular; but leaving on one side the most natural or rational or methodical merit of the system adopted by each one of these illustrious masters, it is certain that the combination of any single one of them, renders at once easy to be understood the general orography of Brazil; but leaves void, and even with probabilities often called in question the dependencies, relations, and co-relations of orologic points more or less important of some of the provinces of the Empire.

It often happens that in the different provinces the local names of the mountain ranges, or of the mountains themselves may occasion confusion and doubt concerning even the principal Cordilheiras; for example in that of Rio Grande do Sul, in that of S. Catharina and Paraná, the Cordilheira on the sea-coast is called *Serra Geral*, or *Serra do Mar*, or *Serrania Oriental*, which again in the first of these provinces goes by the name of *Serra Grande;* in the province of Rio de Janeiro, il bears the name of *Serra dos Orgãos* (Organ Mountains) with many others of local designation; in the other provinces the same multiplicity of denominations is observable, according to the sections of the ranges, mountains and spurs belonging thereto.

What is most positive in this immense and as yet obscure orographic system is that in the province of Minas Geraes is to be found the principal nucleus of the three great Cordilheiras; for there that of the *Espinhaço* begins which is connected with that of the *Mar*, by spurs, and no less than the former, that of the *Vertentes* points it out by the waters of the basin of the São Francisco, and by the original sources of the Paraná, one of the three largest contributers to the basin of the Plata.

We must now as a matter of course follow Balbi in

his indication of the *Brazilian Plateaux*, or rather that of Brazil, and of the two others, exactly as the said geographer determines them.

They are the following: —

The *Brazilian*, in which is included the elevated part of the lands whence flow the springs of the S. Francisco and of the Paraná in the provinces of Minas Geraes and S. Paulo, as well as the high lands of the provinces of Rio de Janeiro, Espirito Santo, Bahia, Pernambuco and Piauhy, with an elevation of 160 to 260 toises.

The *Central plateau* of *South America*, in which are comprehended the province of Matto Grosso, and parts of that of Goyaz and of S. Paulo, Paraguay, the Chaco, the country of the Chiquitos, and the Moxos, in Bolivia, with an average height of 100 to 200 toises.

The plateau of *Guayana* which includes the large island formed by the Oronoco, Rio Negro, Amazonas and the Atlantic Ocean; its superficie is spread over Columbia, Brazil and English, Dutch and French Guayana, at a height of from 200 to 400 toises.

This marking out of the plateaux being textually copied from the geographer whom we have referred to, we are in conscience bound to say, that he offers it as a speculative opinion, and as a provisionary calculation although the fruit of laborious research.

As it may have been remarked, Balbi unites by forming into one single general plateau two of the principal Cordilheiras of Brazil, and even further makes out that the third and principal one of his orographic system supports it; but marking the high lands of the Provinces included, however he forgets and therefore appears to omit others belonging to the great orographic classification, which by this very fact remain with their secondary and independent plateaux, as the Rio Grande do Sul and S. Catharina, as well as other provinces to the north of the Empire.

That the extreme lands at the south may be of less height, and for that reason were excluded in the calculation is an admissible explication, but the same must not be said of Sta. Catharina, of Ceará, nor of some of the northern provinces.

It is agreeable and advantageous to add to the orographic system of Brazil as explained by Balbi, and to the observations therein contained what our distinguished countryman wrote, when treating of the same subject, in his *Literary Notice of the Atlas of Brazil by Dr. Candido de Mendes Almeida*. As we shall presently see, Dr. Homem de Mello merely gives a general and rapid glance, embracing therein the close and natural connexion of the hydrographic and orographic systems, reducing, perhaps disproportionately, the great divisions of the French geographer, appearing to be much more in harmony with what St. Hilaire exposes in his work: *Voyages aux sources du Rio Francisco et dans la province de Goyaz;* manifesting however his own way of looking at and studying it; the development of which will be found to be a most useful and great service extended to the Country.

„Turning our attention to the very vast extent of Brazil, the observer sees to the north an immense gulf opening, a river almost without banks, the largest in the world, its waters embracing a region, which of itself alone might form a continent.

„This is the basin of the *Amazonas*, whose branches cut through South America in all directions.

„Of these branches taking the most southern, the *Guaporé*, we arrive at an elevated point, beyond which the Amazonas does not receive a rill of water.

„At a distance of a little more than 3000 fathoms we find a current which flows on in a contrary direction. We follow the course of its waters:—we find they fall into the Plata.

„We are more than a thousand leagues from the mouth

of the Amazonas. Separating these two basins, sometimes rising in fantastic reliefs, at other times sinking into the ground, appears the high region which the Baron d'Eschwege calls *Serra das Vertentes.*

„It is the immense Cordilheira, which branching out into ramifications from the most western part of South America, almost reaching to the waves of the Pacific, penetrates into the interior of Brazil, like a gigantic skeleton: and would allow the geographer map in hand to cross over from the Andes to cape San Roque without encountering even a rill of water!

„It is the *divortium aquarum* of the north and south. On the eastern side of the two regions, binding them as it were together, the winding river of S. Francisco has dug its bed, the springs of which river kiss to the south the basin of the Plata, touch and follow that of the Amazonas, and continue on until they lose themselves in the ocean to te north, seeking the region to the east.

„A long tract of land stretches on each side of the mighty artery, whose currents take an opposite direction, and whose capricious turnings arrange themselves perfectly at the extremities of the three great basins.

„These are the so-called secondary basins in which are comprehended amongst others, the Gurupy, Itapicurú, Parnahyba, Jaguaribe, Piranhas, Parahyba do Norte, Paraguassú, Jequitinhonha, and the Rio Doce.

„Of the regions washed by the S. Francisco, the northern part advances boldly from the ocean inwards, seeking the heats of the equator. There the great currents of water diminish. It is felt, perceptibly felt, that the irregularity of the seasons, and the scarcity of rains must here be of periodical occurrence.

„Here then we meet with the interesting phenomna which characterize the physical geography of the vast region included between the *Serra of Ibiapaba* at the north,

and the cape *S. Agostinho* at the south: Ceará, Rio Grande do Norte, Parahyba, and Pernambuco.

„Further to the south, as if in search of the temperate zone, we perceive in the midst of this immense superficie a gigantic mass of granite rise up, which hugging the coast accompanies continually the waters of the ocean, until it loses itself in the Plata on the eastern bank of the Uruguay.

„This is the *Serra do Mar* from whose western ridge flow the currents, which precipitate themselves into the gulf of the Plata, leaving the ocean at two steps from its source, and giving back to it its waters at a distance o more than 1000 leagues! Such as amongst others the Tieté and the Rio Grande.

„The course of these immense arteries marks out the manner, by which man thrown upon there regions took advantage of the elements, which they offer for the development of his activity.

„The first flow of immigration, similar to the first visits into the interior took the cours of these rivers, they followed the waters; and in this manner they threw forward through the space of time the different nuclei of population, which to-day constitute the vast Empire of Brazil.

Future ages may on this same soil assist at the development and expansion of thousands of generations, presenting to the Universe the spectacle of advanced civilisation, and of an activity which will never succeed in exhausting there sources of the land allotted to them!“

Let the extract of these brief and eloquent sentences be followed by one single but nevertheless indispensable piece of information.

The *divortium aquarum* of the north and south is not quite so complete or so absolute as the elegant writer believed and pointed out. In the plains of Parecis, in the immense mountain fents close to the rivers Madeira and

Araguaya there exist lakes whence flow at the same time waters to the two basins, to that of the Amazonas, and to that of the Prata, as was made evident in the month of September last in a most important *Memoir* read in the Brazilian Historical-Geographical Institute by Dr. Couto Magalhães, who in person observed and verified the facts of which he gave an account by authority of the illustrious and conscientious explorer.

# CHAPTER VIII.

## The Brazilian Hydrographic System.

Endowed with the most fortunate opulent and developed natural irrigation, Brazil offers rather some than one hydrographic system, or if it may seem better to say so, a general hydrographic system, comprising four sections represented by the following basins:—

1st The northern, or of the Amazonas.

2nd The southern, or of the Plata.

3rd The Central or of S. Francisco.

4th The section formed by secondary lines.

The greatest wealth of waters is found in the great basins of the north and that of the south: the eastern part of the country between the S. Francisco and Parnahyba is still copiously supplied, but is much less rich in rivers.

The basin of the Amazonas is without a rival in the world, in its majesty of vastness and depth, or in beauty from its varied splendours: its extent is calculated at more than 400 leagues up belonging to Brazil.

The *Amazonas*, or *das Amazonas*, the largest and deepest of known rivers, was called by the Indians Paraná-guassú *(Paraná-Assú)*, or according to Ayres Cazal, by some of the Indians *Guienna*. Its mouth was discovered in 1500 by Vicente Yanes Pinçon, who left Palos in 1499: it is said that upon arriving at it, Ayres Pinçon's brother, the companion of his enterprise—had asked him:—"*Ainda é Mar?*" (is it still the sea?) and to which Ayres answered: "Ah

non" (Ah! no), and from that the sailors formed the name of *Mar-a-non*, or *Maranhão* of the Portuguese. In 1539 Francisco Orellana, entering by the *Napo* into *Paraná-Guassú* and going down this river to the Ocean, saw the banks of the embouchures of *Atumá* and *Jumundaz* lined by slim and tall Indians, quite beardless, who opposed to him a tenacious and energetic resistance, and taking that people for female warriors gave for that reason the name of *Amazonas* to that river which had already been called *Maranhão*. Some will have it that the error or romantic account of Orellana, who confounded women with men, who were warriors although beardless (as the Indians are in general) is a fact and true as is explained by the existence of villages of Indians composed exclusively of Tupinambás of the female sex looked on with contempt by the Tapuyas, wo had in a horrible massacre killed all the men of that same tribe, who came as immigrant from lands in the centre of the country; such an explanation, however, wants foundation; for the two great transmigrations of Tomoyos and Tupynambás of which History makes mention, and any other possible and determined transmigrations caused by the persecution of the Portuguese, do not correspond to the years 1539 and 1540, which is the time of Orellana's voyage; for the earliest, that of the Tamoyos was subsequent to 1573, and that of the Tupynambás took place in the following century. At all events the unmerited although romantic name predominated and perpetuated itself; the name of *Maranhãa*, or *Marañon* otherwise disputed with Pinçon by his fellow countryman Captain Marañon, who serving under the command of Pizarro, pretended to have given his name to the river, whence some people give him the credit of being the first explorer.

It is necessary notwithstanding still to remember that the *Amazonas* does not give her poetical name to the whole

extent of this river in Brazilian territory, as it is called *Solimões*, from *Tabatinga* to the mouth of *Rio Negro*—not *Solimões*—as some averred, in allusion to the poisons with which the Indians, ancient inhabitants of its banks, tipped their arrows, as was the general Indian practice, but on account of that horde of savages being called *Soriman*, corrupted to *Salimão* and *Salimães*, as Master A. Cazal teaches us. Many are, then, the names of the sovereign of the waters of the north Brazil; they are not however sufficient to weary one in a river of such superior and exceptional rank. The fantastic or ill conceived enterprise of the El-Dourado having sadly failed in the sixteenth century, it was only in the following, and after having arrived at the City of Belem in 1636 that the Franciscan lay-brothers *Domingos de Brieba* and *André de Toledo*, coming from Quito, as secondary membres of an organised mission which soon became broken up through fear of the danger, and led much less by human science than by the grace of Providence, by order of Jacomé Noronha, Governor *ad interim* of the *State of Maranhão*, *Pedro Teixeira* at the head of the bold expedition, accomplished, from October 1637 to February 1639, sailing on his way to *Quixos* and from *Quixos* journeying by land to *Baeza*, and on his retourn from thence to *Belem*, the first expedition of the *Amazonas*, of wchich the glorious and undying remembrance remains to us. From those dates forward, the obligations of marking out the boundaries agreed on by the treaty of Madrid, the visits and explorations of scientific men, such as Martius and his companion, director even of those of the scientific Brazilian Commission, and that of Agassiz, the renewed efforts and works required by the elucidation of the limits of the Empire to te north and north-west, and even to the west, the line of steamers from Belem to Manáos, the explorations and patriotic labors of Dr. Couto de Magalhães, who undertook

the navigation of the Araguaya, the observations and studies of European geographers and naturalists, who came or were sent for that purpose, the navigation and the more frequent intercourse beyond the river *Negro* has rendered the Amazonas still insufficiently but more known, and the *Solimões* more unveiled, both rivers awaiting population and industry, in exchange for the wealth which gives a guarantee for assuming a magnificent degree of material progress and of civilization. A grand advancement and only measured by the marvellous size of the immense river was effected on the 7th September 1867: the Imperial Government opened the *Amazonas* to the commerce of the world, it shared with the world what the world had not, and Brazil alone possessed. It is a new horizon, splendid and most rich, which was made manifest, and offered to all possible and imaginary calculations of the labor, of industry and opulence. The source of the Amazonas still in dispute to this day, was so for a long time in contradictory reports by Chile, by Peru, and by Columbia; but the opinion most prevalent among geographers, is that it is to be found in lake *Lauricocla* or *Lauricocha* (others call it *Hyauricocha* or *Laurcocha)* in the district of Huanaco, a department of Tarmá, 32 leagues north-north-east of Lima, starting with the name of Tangaragoá from the eastern extremity of the said lake, and taking a north-north-west direction, between the mountains of the Andes, not being navigable until the junction of the Quanama and Pulcão, and barely and with much difficulty by canoes made on purpose as far as Jaen de Bracamoros; from thence it bends to the north-north-east receiving the *Chinchipé*, *Chachapuias* and *S. Thiago*, permitting a freer navigation, and having a width of 150 toises, which become reduced to 25 at *Pongo*, a channel two leagues long between rocks of great height, and where the waters are extraordinarily rapid: twenty leagues below

Pongo it is enlarged by the *Morona* and by the *Partaça*, at a like distance further doiwn, by the *Gualhaga*, and following these, by the *Chambica*, *Tigre*, *Ucaialé*, taking further down the name of *Marañon*, it bends to the north-east for a distance of thirty leagues, and becomes more gigantic by the junction of the *Nonai* and of the *Napo*, acquiring a width of nine hundred toises, it changes its course to the east, and having received the tributary *Cassiquim*, enters Brazilian territory at Tabatinga, and flows proudly on under the denomination of the *Solimões*.

The *Solimões* extends from *Tabatinga* as far as *Rio Negro*, there being between these two points at a distance of about two hundred and thirty seven leagues. It receives on its right bank

The *Javari* (*Jabari*, *Hiabari*, *Hyabary*) at two leagues or a little more below Tabatinga.

The *Jutahi* (*Hyutahy*) four hundred and thirty fathoms wide.

The Juruá (*Hyuruha*) larger than the preceding and being two hundred and twenty three fathoms wide at its mouth.

The *Teffé* at one hundred and twenty three leagues from its confluence with the river *Negro*.

The *Coari* (*Cuari*).

The Purus (Purú) which is the most considerable of all those that enter the Solimões by this bank.

And the disemboguing of the lake *Autazes*.

On the left bank

The Içа at two hundred and twenty two leagues from the embouchure of the river *Negro:* it communicates with the *Japurá* by two channels which are called *Peridá* and *Pureus;* its banks abound with the drug of that name. It rises in the mountain range of Pasto, in the republic of *Equador*, where it is called *Putumayo*.

The *Japurá* (*Hyapurá*) which runs for about one hundred leagues more or less parallel with the *Solimões:* it was

thought for a long time that the former discharged its winding body of waters in the latter through nine channels which are called, and succeed each other in the following order: *Auatiparaná*, *Eviratiba* (*Euiratiba*), *Manhãna* (*Mahiana*), *Uaranapú or Hyapurá*, the principal, *Uananá* (*Unaná*), *Copeiha* (*Copeyá*, *Copeja*), *Jucará* (Hyucará, Jucaras) and *Cadajá*; there being between the first and the last the distance marked above: this is the opinion of Ayres Cazal, of Condamine, of Ferdinand Diniz and of others, but the explorations and precious investigations which have been made in the basin of the Amazonas, during the last few years by the very able and indefatigable Post Captain José da Costa e Azevedo, have done away with all doubt in this question: the very sensible current seen, and the colour and temperature of the waters of the channels indicated, which are to the west of the mouth of the Jupurá, clearly show, that contrary to what was supposed, it is the Solimões which sends these waters into the Japurá, it being verified that the mean temperature is 28 ½ degrees Cels., and that of the Solimões, or rather of the Amazonas, of 27 degrees. Of those channels to the west of the point determined the *Auatiparaná* fully proves the observations made; but the *Manhana* (*Mahiana*) however, runs not directly to the Japurá, but to the Auatiparaná.

The Uaranapú, or *Hyapurá*, the principal one goes out precisely at the mouth of the great confluent stream: all the others called channels which follow to the east of this mouth are nothing more than currents of water of the two rivers which run between the left bank of the Solimões and the numerous archipelagoes and succession of islands, perhaps more than three hundred, many of which are, however, submerged at the time of the great floods.

This point being thus cleared up, it becomes us, before we go further, not to forget, that it is also ascertained that the *Japurá* navigable for one hundred and fifty miles beyond

its mouth, offers on its banks, as also on those of the Iça, and more or less other rivers of this vast region, an abundance of Sarsaparilla, cloves, cocoa, and more natural productions to be easily and profitably gathered.

Again on the left bank are the disemboguements of the lakes *Ananá*, *Codojaz*, and *Manacapurú*.

Finally the grand river *Negro* which the Indians call *Quiari*, and again *Guriguacurú*, and above the falls Ueneiá, and whose mouth is almost as wide as the *Solimões* which in front of the same respectfully abandons its name, and takes that of the *Amazonas* or das Amazonas. It rises in Papaian, in *New Granada* to the north-east of Caquetá, its course is sometimes quiet, and sometimes becomes a torrent, and one hundred and sixty leagues above its mouth, it begins to be obstructed by falls to a further distance of seventy five leagues: along its banks it receives more than 36 rivers which have known names; twelve leagues before it joins the Solimões it throws out a branch to the south; and the body of its waters advances to the north-east, disemboguing with a width of 3 *leagues:* against this opinion Captain Aranjo Amazonas informs us that the river Negro, at *some distance* from its mouth, spreads itself out so considerably that it reaches from 4 to 6 leagues in width; but that it becomes narrowed near their confluence, so as not to exceed a quarter of a league. This river bathes the capital, parishes and populated places of the provinces of *Amazonas*, on the rich wooded banks and on that of its confluents dwell from 30 to 40 tribes of Indians, and its natural riches are marvellous, principally in the vegetable kingdom.

A child of the Andes and merely a Suzerain, but king of the Suzerains of the sea, the Amazonas has a court formed of the princes of waters, and receives as vassals— on his right bank: The impetuous *Madeira* (*Cajary* as called at its mouth by the Indians), 27 leagues below the con-

fluence of the river *Negro;* its source, or whence coming being disputed, it flows for nearly 500 leagues, goes through the provinces of Matto Grosso and Pará from south to north of the latter, having taken the name of the latter from the confluence of the Guaporé much more than three hundred and twenty leagues before reaching its mouth, twelve leagues above which it throws out a branch to the east with the name of *Urariá*, or *Furo de Tupinambarana*, which after going through sundry lakes, and receiving sundry more or less considerable rivers on the northern side of *Mundurucania* precipitates its winding body into the *Amazonas*, fifty leagues below its principal mouth near those of the *Jamundá*, having long before this disembogued by two unequal jaws, the chief of which is not less than one thousand five hundred fathoms wide. Even below its falls, this river is troublesome and difficult on account of the gigantic snags (*madeiros*), and whence comes its name, secular trees and floating islands which its magnificent current brings down. The tributaries of the *Madeira* are numerous; on its sandy banks, the low tide shows the enormous turtles which swarm to them to lay their eggs, and from which eggs are made many thousand pots of butter: dense and majestic forests cover the high lands of their vicinity, and there prodigal nature abundantly endows man with the cocoe, the chestnut, sarsaparilla, the clove, copaiba (capivi), precious gums, many things more, and with timber for all kinds of construction, and for the cabinet-maker such as the world cannot rival. It is both immense and varied, quickly gathered, and liberally supplied: the fertility of the soil is scarcely comprehensible, and that astonishing amount of treasure is, owing to the want of civilized and industrious population, in a great manner abandoned to hordes of savages, who know not how to calculate and avail themselves of the treasure which they possess! In the mean time the *Madeira* has a great and

promising future awaiting it, and it is, without contradiction, one of the most important rivers of Brazil, for it fell to its lot through providential destiny, to become the fraternal bond of communication and commerce not only between the provinces of the Empire, but between these and the neighbouring Republics of Bolivia, Paraguay, and the Platine States; for it is capable of becoming a prodigious internal channel of communications between the two basins of the *Amazonas* and the *Plata:* it is a future which requires population, time, capital; but for the augmentation of population multiplied by streams of immigration, there are natural incentives which dazzle one, time knows no measure in the 19th century, and capital flows to where there is the greatest remuneration for work: what is wanting is only to prove by evidence the general knowledge of these riches of nature, almost improbable,—riches for the collecting of which it is sufficient only to stretch forth the arms and gather with the hands; it is that in this Brazilian country the *El-Dourado* is met with, and through this condition of things, the perspective of the infallible future of the country is so portentous, that, thank God, there can no carelessness, errors, want of resources, opposition of opinion, jealousies, weaknesses, want of courage, or disproportionate impulse of man, oppose and recall that inflexible *ça-ira!* with which divine Providence market out the destiny of the inexceedable opulence of the Brazilian soil.

The *Tapajós*, not the equal, but a worthy companion of the *Madeira.* At one hundred and fifty five leagues from Belem it takes its name at the confluence of the *Juruena* in the *Arinos*, through which it has its origin in the mountain range of the *Parecis* in Matto Grosso. Twenty leagues below *Juruena*, it takes in on its right bank the river *Azevedo* (the name of the first backwoodsman, who came down by various rivers to the *Arinos*, and this one by the *Tapajós* to the Amazonas in 1746) and at thirty

five leagues below it narrows between two mountains, after passing which it widens again and further on precipitates itself in foam during its passage over falls, receives further on a considerable river, and again narrowed runs one hundred fathoms wide, and again progressively widening, bathes on both sides sundry villages and towns, and the city of *Santarem*, which lies a little inside its embouchure in the Amazonas. Loaded vessels took twenty five days to go up the Tapajos in all its length.

The Curuá thirteen and half leagues below *Tapajos*, is also navigable.

The Xingú, perhaps larger than the Tapajós is seventy seven leagues below the embouchure of the latter, has its rise in the mountain ranges which separate the provinces of Goyaz and Matto Grosso, it is little or badly known; it is, however, certain that it receives numerous tributaries in its course, which is reckoned at more than two hundred leagues.

On its left bank,

The *Arauto*, which Señor A. Amazonas otherwise considers the discharging of the waters of the lakes of Saracá, and serving also as the mouth of the river Burururú (Urubú), is fifty four leagues above the embouchure of the Jamundá.

The Atumá (Uatumá), twenty three leagues below the preceding river, is enlarged by the *Jatupú*, and *Piratipinga*, and by the *Capucupú*, an affluent of the former: there are on the banks of this river the villages of *Uatumá de Piriquis*, five leagues above the mouth, and Jatapú de Parintins immediately passing the mouth. Its banks abound in rosin, cloves, and copaiba, but in the interior the country is abandoned to numerous hordes of savages (aborigines).

The *Nhamundá*, one hundred seventy five leagues above the mouth of the Amazonas, takes its rise in the mountain ranges of Brazilian Guayana, bathes the skirts of *Itacamiaba* and divides that Guayana into eastern and western,

into upper and lower Amazonas, and precipitates itself into this river through two mouths distant from each other fourteen leagues: it communicates with the river *Trombetas* a little above its mouth, it is historically romantic by the imaginary existence of the *Amazons* inhabiting its banks in front of *Paraná-Guaçú*. *Ycamiabas* was the name of the horde of Indians supposed to be female warriors, and who were really wild Indians, beardless like the others, and of the most pleasing and handsome appearance, whom Orellana there saw or imagined that he had seen.

The *Orixamina* (*Oriximina*) or *das Trombetas*, the most winding after the Rio Negro, of those that enter the sea from that bank, runs from the north in a parallel line with the *Nhamundá* (Yamundá) and to the east of the same, and near the city of Obydos which it bathes, precipitates itself into the Amazonas through two unequal mouths, and at a short distance from each other. Its banks at some leagues above Obydos are still much frequented by the Indians who inhabit the forest close by.

Besides the *Xingú* and the *Trombetas*, and before those in all the course of the *Solimões*, and of the *Amazonas*, not less than one hundred other forgotten rivers are tributaries. Of those which are called to mind, barely a few would accept as their equals the largest rivers of Europe: of those which might be compared to the second and third order of the rivers of that part of the old world, they are all forgotten, it being certain that many of those have not even a recognized and known name: of the affluents of the great tributaries of the *Amazonas* merely a few of the most considerable are called by the name which distinguishes them.

But of that numerous forgotten number, it is imperative that another prince of waters should become prominent and command by its superior size,—the Tocantins, which some do not consider a confluent although they acknowledge that it belongs, in fact, to the basin of the Amazons.

The honours of the source of the Tocantins are distributed by the following rivers: *Uruhú* which rises in the southern skirt of the Dourada mountains in Goyaz; that of the *Almas* which rises in the Pirineos, in the same province; *Maranhão* also a child of Goyaz, and whose principal head waters are in the lake Formosa, to which they give a length of four leagues, and a breadth of half a league.

The *Uruhú* after flowing for twenty leagues to the north-east, loses its name confounding it with that of the *Almas*, its equal in size and in the number of leagues, it has flowed towards the north-west; but this river also which from the junction of the first already mentioned permits canoe navigation for more than twenty leagues, also loses its name, in uniting itself to the *Maranhão*, a little below the village of *Aguaquente*, and it is only forty leagues beyond the confluence that receiving that of the great Paranatinga on its right bank, the Maranhão gets to be called *Tocantins*.

Starting then from the junction of the *Paranatinga* the *Tocantins* flows on, and twenty five leagues below, receives on the left the *Canna-Brava*, and further on, on the right, the *Luiz Alves*, and afterwards on the opposite side that of *Tabocas*, and in the direction of south-west to the north, it receives into it the rivulet *Manoel Alves Salobre*, and the river of *Somno*, forty leagues distant from the *Luis Alves*, and forty five from the river Somno, and on the same side, the twisting *Manoel Alves Septentrional*; it then describes two semicircles to the east and to the west, it follows a northernly direction for a distance of thirty leagues, it doubles its bulk by the confluence of the *Araguaya* its rival or brother, twenty eight leagues before it battles with the rocks in the three falls of the *Tabocas*, and overcoming them widens magnificently, renders territories happy by sundry winding turns, receives the tribute of the *Arari*, which some call the river of *Saúde*, from the medicinal

property of its waters, communicates with the *Amazonas* by the *Tagipurú*, receives on the right the rivers *Majú* and Guamá, and from its nobility alone, a vassal of the ocean, into it which is discharged twenty five leagues below the city of *Belem*, between the eastern bank of the island of Marajó and *Tigióca* point on the continent.

In the confluence of the *Paranatinga*, and from thence for many leagues, the *Tocantins* still has its banks occupied or frequented by Indians more or less fierce, but who are either timid or are easily made to understand the people who are not hostile to them, or who being civil and friendly know how to coax and attract them. In Goyaz the Tocantins waters the towns of *Porto Imperial*, and of *S. João das Duras Barras*, and other nuclei of rising population, and in Pará the village of *Pederneira*, and progressively the villages of *Bayão*, of *Abaité*, of *Beja*, *Conde*, *Cametá* (city), *Vigia* (city) near its mouth, besides other villages.

The tide ascends a distance of eighty leagues, as far as the old port of *Alcobaça;* opposite *Cametá*, the river is two leagues wide.

Great and important continuator of the navigation of the *Tocantins*, the *Araguaya* also ought not to be forgotten: its first origin is the rivulet Caiapó, in the mountain range of the same name, and which encreased in size by the rivers Bonito and Barreiros, which immediately cause it to be navigable, commences flowing, being thenceforth called the *Araguaya* (*Araguay* by some, or *Araguaia*): advancing towards the north for a long space it flows beyond the road to Guayaz, to Cuyaba, receiving to the right the river *Claro*, forty leagues below the *Vermelho*, some few leagues further the *Tezouras*, and eighteen further north the Crixá; ten leagues after this point, it divides into two almost equal branches, the western preserving the name of the river, and receiving the tribute of the waters of *das Mortes*, of *S. José*, *Vermelho*, *Ponta*, and *Tapirapés*; the

eastern branch is called *Furo*, and is enlarged by the waters of the *Chavantes;* they are both dotted over with islands and rocks, which, nevertheless, do not embarass thenavigation, and encircled by those two branches of the *Araguaya*, as has already been said, the island of *Bananal* or of *S. Anna* extends, the dimensions of which exceed those of some of the States of Europe, those of the Swiss Confederation, of Holland, Denmark, Greece, and Belgium, for example, and approximate those of Portugal. Uniting its two branches the great river rolls on with a deep bed and through high banks, and enters the Tocantins by the left bank, at two hundred and twenty leagues from the city of *Guayaz*, having divided this province from that of *Matto Grosso.*

The Amazonas, after receiving the Xingú, takes a north easterly course, being two leagues wide, as far as the beautiful islands of *Gurupá*, and from thence below on its northern branch, it widens still more, becoming six leagues broad at Macapá, at which place on its left bank, the ocean is seen. One would say that Nature foreseeing and calculating the violent and angry meeting of the Amazonas with the sea, purposely planted a great number of islands which form the archipelago at the mouth of the great river, and which attenuate the impetus and force of such an enormous power of waters; but even so she has not quite cut off the terrible conflict: the struggle takes place in a solemn moment, the majestic current opposing itself to the flow of the sea, until the latter becoming irritable, as it were, makes itself irresistible, lords over, and invades, impelling the waters, which ought already to have flowed on, as though they flowed backwards; this is the battle of the tide with the river: the victory of the sea is assured; the tide being for a long distance disturbed, rises to its greatest height in one or two minutes; the conflict, however, was gigantic, and produced so loud a noise that it was heard at two leagues distance, and even further; this is the

phenomenon that the natives of the country called, and still call *pororoca*, and which occurs chiefly at the time of full and new moon, for that reason the reflux is greater: observed in some other rivers of the north of Brazil, the *pororoca* it not so grand a sight in any of the other rivers, as it is in the *Amazonas*, which is easily and naturally explained.

The northern branch on arriving at the enormous mouth of the river, to which it adds by its own width of forty five leagues, counting from the north cape in Guayana, to the point of Maquari in the island of Marajó, it further receives from Guayana the rivers Anauarupucú, *Carapanatuba*, Arauari (Araguary) besides the Jari which enters above Macapá.

As already stated, the Amazonas, leaving the islands of Gurupá, widened to the north, advances by its chief and most magnificent branch which has just been pointed out; but the volume of waters which runs in a contrary direction is still very vast, and its southern arm, which goes to meet the Tocantins, and with that river precipitates itself into the ocean, twenty five leagues below the city of Belem, having assisted to form the island of *Marajó*, and received the tribute of the rivers *Anapu*, *Pacaja*, *Jacundá*, and *Ariticú*, finally enters the sea with a mouth twelve leagues wide between the point of Maguary, in the island of *Marajó*, and that of Tigioca on the continent. Ancient writers also considered, as belonging to the mouth of the Amazonas the disemboguing of those two gigantic rivers, united in one single enormous channel; more modern geographers, however, have decided on its being the mouth of the Tocantins. The recent research of our able and illustrious fellow countryman, Post Captain José da Costa e Azevedo, and the important observations of the learned Agassiz on the still greater and astonishing ancient dominion of the Amazonas, submerging from the extreme space oc-

cupied by the lands of the north of Brazil, demonstrate most clearly that the ancients were right.

Putting on one side the profound revelations of the physical revolution which we owe to the illustrious Swiss North-American citizen, they show that the so-called mouth of the *Tocantins* is the southern mouth of the Amazonas.

The southern branch cast forth by this immense river after receiving the magnificent tribute of the Xingú, and also running between numberless islands, forms beyond the town of Gurupá the *Furo de Tagypurú*, which finishes at the *Poço*, which is the point at which unite the Tagypurú at its termination with the *Furo dos Macacos*, which commences there, and goes round the western side of the island of *Marajó* and the *Furo dos Breves*, which also takes its departure from thence, and going on to the east issues in the bay *das Bocas*, five miles wide, by forty long, a bay which is otherwise situated above that of another, to wit, that of *Gayabal*, which is not of less importance.

Advancing in this wise, receiving sundry rivers, forming or washing archipelagoes, widening bays, the southern branch of the Amazonas meets at length with the Tocantins, which runs impetuously from south to north, and the former causes it to turn entirely to the east either from forced obedience, or if you will, entire homage to the king of rivers, and at all events it submits itself to the direction of the domineering current. Thus then the Tocantins with all its admirable magnificence, is only an admirable confluent, and suzerain of the first and most august suzerain of the sea.

And the Amazonas, the exceptional river, has still in the face of the ocean, and to be engulphed therein, a privilege that distinguishes and heightens its rank of highest nobility, and of highest power: its waters sweeten and render white the cerulean and salt ocean for more than

thirty leagues, not so much as certain descriptions more poetical than true have made it to be believed, in all the vastness of the width of its mouth opened in its immensity to the sea, for in a great measure they become salt almost immediately, but in the line of the extraordinary current of east-north-east from its northern mouth, from which it directs the impetus of its larger body of extraordinary and marvellous current.

The basin of the Plate is formed by the junction of two great rivers, which from their sources and course, more or less long, through Brazilian provinces, belong to this Empire, although the basin may widen between borders which are exclusively under the dominion of the Argentine Confederation to the right, and of the Oriental Republic of Uruguay to the left. What is generally called *Rio da Prata* (River Plate) is only a vast estuary. The aborigines called it the river Paraguay.

In 1508 João Dias de Solis and Vicente Yanes Pinçon arrived there, and judging it capable of affording a passage through to the Indian seas, the former of those navigators returned in 1515, and went up its waters, and having been killed by the savages merely left his name as a legacy to the river which was called *de Solis* until after 1526 it was called *da Prata* from the fact of Sebastian Cabot and Diego Garcia, who went up it, having seen pieces of that metal in the hands of the Indians of those places.

Leaving on one side the examination and description of the *Estuary* of the *Plata*, and the mention of its affluents not Brazilian of the two great rivers *Paraná* and *Uruguay*, it is reasonable, having to treat especially of them to commence with the *Paraguay*, which although it is accounted a confluent of Paraná, is of exceptional and very considerable importance.

The *Paraguay* river has its first source in the *Sete Lagôas* in a great plain in the mountain range of the Pari

(otherwise of the *Lage* Cazal the or *Melgueira* according to others), there being effectively seven lakes which are connected by natural discharging outlets, seventy leagues south-east of the city of Matto Grosso, and about fifty to the north of Cuyabá: its first tributary is the *Diamantino*; immediately after receives the *Preto*, the Sipotuba, and streams, the Jaurú following, and which enters into it by the right bank, with an equal volume of water, along the eastern or left bank in almost all this great extent of territory, the mountain range of the *Parecis*, which is yet prolonged for seven leagues till terminated at the *Escalvada* point, whose both banks become flat and swampy. Twenty leagues below *Escalvada*, the right bank begins to be bordered by another mountain range of twenty or more leagues in length, narrow however and separated or cut in various parts, in order to give egress to the waters of three lakes whose drainage appears to be winding rivers at the time of the risings and floodings of the Paraguay.

The northern part of this mountain range is designated by the name of *Insuá*—the southern by the name of *Chaynéz*, and the central by that of the *Serra dos Dourados*—and the three lakes are called *Oberaba*, *Gahiba*, and *Mandioré:* facing *Chaynéz*, the river S. Lourenço presents itself as a tributary on the eastern side, and facing the mountain range of Albuquerque, following after the Chaynez, the principal branch of the *Tacoary* disembogues: five leagues to the south, are the mouths of the *Mondego*, or *Embotateú* on the same side—the latter originally called *Aranhahy* or *Aranianhy*, winding and navigable in almost all its extent; the Paraguay runs in these places, divided into two arms by a narrow and marshy island of about twenty leagues in length, called Paraguay-Mirim, the eastern arm: eleven leagues to the south of Mondego two high mountains rise, facing each other on the banks of this important river: on the southern skirt of the western side is to be seen the fort

*Coimbra:* as many more leagues below and on the same bank the discharging mouth of the *Negra* bay opens: seventeen leagues further the river *Queima* enters it on the left side, and at eleven leagues to the south of that junction it crosses with the Paraguay, a chain of small mountains, between which the immense bulk of its waters becomes compressed, which separate again into two arms: it is at this point that the name of *Fecho dos Morros* is given, a very important spot as it is one of the boundaries of the Empire with the republic of *Paraguay:* the marshy banks which commence at almost one hundred leagues to the north at the point of *Escalvada* cease here; in that enormous space of territory, during the floods which take place about April and last till September, the river shews a width of from twenty to forty leagues, thus forming by the inundation a periodical sea where the high lands figure as islands inhabited by birds and wild animals, and which the ancient discoverers called *Lago Xaraes.* From the *Fecho dos Morros* forwards the Paraguay river advances in an imposing manner and with a deep bed, receiving on its left the Tipoti, as also the *Branco*, and again on the same bank, the Apa, a notable boundary mark of the confines of the Empire in all its course, from its source to its mouth. The Quidana and the two Ipannés are its vassals, on the same bank, as is also the Chichuhi, and other smaller ones. Besides the city of *Asuncion* which it bathes on its eastern side, it becomes larger by receiving the *Tibicoari*, the *Pilcomaio*, *Bermejo*, and *Verde*, and finally forty leagues to the south of that city, capital of the republic of its name, the Paraguay unites itself to the Paraná, which comes from the east, and advances under the name, become common, of the river Paraná or Baixo (lower) Paraná. With a course of seven hundred and fifty leagues, navigable to a great extent even after the *Fecho dos Morros* through the province of Matto Grosso, and ennobled by the freedom of navigation, required,

and confirmed by the right, the will and endeavours of Brazil, it is one of the safe and fortunate elements of the proximate future progress and civilization of that magnificent and wonderful star of the Empire, in whose bosom lodge treasures whose limits no one as yet knows or calculates. The Paraguay river is finally engraven in the cotemporaneous history of the Brazilian nation by the indelible and glorious victories of the passage of *Curupaity*, of *Humaitá*, of *Angustura*, of *Lombas Valentina*, and of as many more battles, which it saw in its waters, or on its banks, and greeted from afar on the 3rd and 24th May 1866, and in *Peribibuhy*, *Campo Grande*, and *Aquidaban*, as the Paraná witnessed astonished the sublime struggle in the darkness of night on the island of Victoria, the *Passo da Patria* passed over by the *Crusaders* of Brazilian honour, having at their head the legendary *Osorio (Marquis d'Herval)*, the first to leap, lance in hand, on the enemy's territory, and *Cuevas* which was a terrible warlike epic song, and the *11th June* or the battle of *Riachuelo*, which was the complete epic poem of all the heroism imaginable epitomised in the hours of the last and supreme sublimity of the death and glorification of the lives of the Alcides, who fought, died and conquered, brilliant and sensational from the magnificent deeds and stupendous prowess with which the army and navy immortalised themselves in the eyes of the world.

The Parana commences at the confluence of the river *Paranahyba* (*Paranaiva* of Milliet) which comes from the centre of Goyaz, with the *Rio Grande* which rises in the *Mantiqueira* mountain range near the registry of Picão in Minas Geraes: the first of these two rivers runs from north to south, sometimes to the west, and sometimes to the east of the Cordilheira which separates the two provinces above indicated; it receives numerous streams of which the largest is the *Corrente*; and after many flowings on for many leagues, and having received on its right the small river *Virissimo*,

and *Corumbá*, and on its left the river *das Velhas* (a different river from the *Velhas* or *Guaicuhy*) it unites itself to the *Rio Grande* fifteen leagues further on: the latter encreased by sundry tributary streams advances towards the north forty leagues, and turning to the north-east receives on the right bank the river *das Mortes*, and is already, for some leagues, navigable by canoes; it pushes on west, and increased by the *Sapucahy*, the rivulet *S. Pedro*, and the river *Pardo*, it serves at this last point as a boundary to the provinces of Minas Geraes and S. Paulo, the province of Guayaz remaining to the right, and there unites with the Parnahyba, both losing the names that they bore, and taking that of the *Paraná*.—

The great river *Paraná*, that serves alternately as a boundary to the Brazilian provinces of *Guayaz*, *S. Paulo*, *Paraná*, and *Matto Grosso*, and to the States of *Paraguay*, *Corrientes*, and *Entre-Rios*, breaks from the confluence which forms it, and goes on receiving into its bed sundry rivers from on both sides of its banks, and at a further distance on precipitates itself giving rise to the waterfall of Urubú-Pungá, the noise of which is heard at two leagues distance: from this waterfall forward it receives on the right the *Cururuhy*, and three leagues further down the *Tieté* on the left, two leagues further on, the river *Sucurihy* on the other side, and below the mouth of which, the dangerous current of *Jupiá* is encountered; from thence in a course of about one hundred leagues the majestic Paraná receives on its right bank the *Verde*, the *Pardo*, the *Ivinheima* with its three mouths, the Ivahi, the *Amambahi*, and the *Igatemi*, and on the left the *Aguapehi*, the *S. Anastacio*, the *Paranapanema*, and the *Piquiri*, which are the last of these tributaries above mentioned which enter the *Paraná* before the notable fall occurs; they disembogue opposite to an island, twenty leagues long, which from that reason is called Grande (great): beyond that island the river narrows

in between the rocks of the *Maracapé*, mountain range, until it divides itself into *seven* unequal branches, being altogether about fifty fathoms wide, which precipitates itself with an astonishing noise into an immense abyss, boiling in large curls, it goes on foaming, and as it were in fury from rock to rock, opening out to get to the east, freer and more worthy of its enormous body of waters: this fall is called *Sete Quedas* (seven falls) and unites to its evil physical wonder, that intercepts the navigation, the geographical-political importance of marking the boundary between *Brazil* and *Parayuay*. The *Igurei* loses itself shortly after the strife of waters with the rocks of the *Sete Quedas* (seven falls) beyond the deep abyss. In a course of twenty leagues after the fall, the Paraná continues on its course, making vassals of the *Acarahi* on the right bank, and of the Jaguaré on the left,—the latter before, and the winding *Iguacu* after the Acarahi, and on both banks innumerable small rivers, extending over the space of eighty leagues, in the midst of which it turns to the south-west, until it passes the island of Aquipá from whence it goes on in a westerly direction, finally joining the Paraguay, beyond the *Passo da Patria*; and still making its name predominate, until with the aid of the great body of the Uruguay river, the three princes of the waters of the south, uniting together form the estuary of the Plata.

In its course of almost two hundred and forty leagues, from the confluence of the Paranahyba with the Rio Grande until its junction with the Paraguay, the Parana encircles and bathes an immense number of islands, sometimes succeding each other, and as is were adorning themselves in archipelagos: among the largest, without again mentioning Ilha Grande, two are prominent, and wich face the embouchure of the Tieté, a little unequal, but each three miles long; below Jupia the island *Comprida*, being six leagues long; facing the mouth of the *Paranapanema* an

island a little less than two leagues long, another lower down of three, and still a third of eight leagues, and before the *Sete Quedas* and the Ilha Grande, the only name that can be given is that of Archipelago just mentioned, as embracing the number and extent of successive and close packed islands, which in a long space give the river a width of not less than two leagues.

The *Uruguay* has its source in the western skirt of the Cordilheira or mountain range of the Mar (Sea) north of the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, it advances twenty five leagues to the north-west, and in the plains of *Vaccaria*, where it unites with the *Pellotas*, with the name of which river it gets confounded; it becomes enlarged by sundry tributaries, receives the *Pepiri-Guassu*, makes a great turn, takes in on the left the *Uruguay-Puitá*, and the rivulet *Albueni*, further on on the opposite bank, the *Repiri*, on the other, the rivulets *Sebolati*, *Albutuy*, *Yui*, *Piratini*, *Icabacam*, and the river *Ibicui*, and the Irapehi, and many running streams, enlarge its capital already considerable and proud, as a respectable territory of the Empire, it runs from the north-east to the south-west, becoming greater on the right with the accession of the rivers Aguapehi, *Mirinai*, and *Gualiguaichu*, besides numberless rivulets; and on the opposite bank, and in the Oriental State, the *Daiman*, twenty four leagues below the *Arapehi*, twists itself and becoming mighty by the receipt of other tributaries, and more so still with the most powerful, the Rio *Negro*, which comes to it from the country to whose republic it gives its name, and five leagues after come into it by many channels, the waters of the two large brother rivers, and already united, with which in its turn it fraternizes, aiding powerfully to form the estuary of the bay of the Plata.

The navigation is easy along the Uruguay for large vessels and steamers as far as a fall, which there is ten

leagues on this side of *Ibicuí;* beyond that, canoes and shallow vessels, go as far as the confluence of the Pellotas, and small canoes still much further above the two rivers. In the last war, in that of Paraguay, it fell to the lot of the great river to witness glorious feats, which preceded those that the Paraguay and Paraná recalled to mind: the Uruguay saw on its Brazilian bank, besides the struggle and victory of the Brazilic-Platine alliance in the Oriental State, those which preceding and completing that realized in 1865 in S. Borgia, where one sole battalion of *volunteers of the Country*, Brasilians, dared to face ten thousand Paraguayans, and maintained their ground in the town for one day, until the retirement of its inhabitants took place, and in *Uruguayana,* where the invading enemies, surrounded on land and hemmed in by the river had to deliver themselves up prisoners, and lay down their arms, before the Emperor of Brazil, who was present, and the generals of the Alliance.

The central basin, or that of *S. Francisco* unites to its magnificence, properly hydrographical, the greatest internal-political importance, for it providentially itself destined to bind closer, by the reciprocity of its commercial relations and interests, the bonds of the south and those of the north of Brazil. The river S. Francisco rises in the mountain range of the Canastra, in the province of Minas Geraes, its source being the waterfall, called the Casa d'Anta (house of the Tapir) to which is given a height of more than a thousand spans (each 9 inches); its course is almost due south to north; at ninety seven leagues distance from its source, and five above the bar of the river *das Velhas*, the fall of Pirapora is met with, and which is five hundred fathoms in extent; the height of the river above the sea is at this point two thousand four hundred and seventeen spans (of 9 inches); its width, two hundred and fifty fathoms, with from two to three in depth, at the time of the floods;

there being places, however, during the dry season, in which the depth does not reach one fathom, and even less than that at the confluence of the river *das Velhas*, the bottom there being barely four spans (of 9 inches) in that same dry season: from that fall to the bar of *Carunhanha*, from whence the San Francisco continues for eighty seven leagues, this bar having a width of three hundred and seventy fathoms, and being four in depth; separating the province of Bahia from that of Pernambuco, and that of Alagôas from Sergipe, the great river still runs on for two hundred and ninety five leagues to its mouth: in the first one hundred and fifty five leagues to the fall of *Sobradinho* the current is never more than four spans (one yard) per second; twenty nine leagues below that fall, and from thence seventy leagues to the port of Piranhas, the falls multiply, and of these the most notable is that of Paulo Affonso, which precipitates itself, perpendicularly from a height of three hundred and sixty five spans (two hundred and seventy three feet, nine inches). The S. Francisco precipitates itself into the ocean by two unequal mouths, and distant one from the other three leagues; that of the south is called the Aricari, flat and mean, and that of the north wide and beautiful, marking at the worst of times a depth of from two to three fathoms of water; there is, howewer, facing the same, a sandbank, which is marked by the breakers on it, and which opens for the entry and navigation of the river two creeks, which at neap tides have barely a depth of twelve spans.

The most important tributaries of the river S. Francisco are the following named in the order and succession of their confluence or affluence. On the left bank, the *Bambuhy*, with a course of eight leagues. On the right bank, the *Pará*, with a course of forty two leagues, and carrying with it the affluents Boa-Vista, Lambary and others.

On the right: the *Paraupeba*, sixty eight leagues of course, and with affluents, but of minor importance. On the left the *Indaiá*, with a course of thirty eight leagues (in Minas Geraes).

Left: the *Borrachudo*.

Left: the *Abaeté*, with a course of thirty six leagues, with the affluent streams *Abaité* and *Chumbo*.

Right: the river *das Velhas* (anciently Guaicuhy) with a course of one hundred and seventy two leagues, and having, besides numerous affluents, as principal confluents, the *Sipó*, *Macaúbas*, *Paraúna*, *Curimatahi* and the *Piedade:* at its embouchure, it has a width of seven hundred and forty three spans, and carries along about nine thousand cubic spans of water per second.

Right: the *Jaquetahi*, with is affluents, a course of forty two leagues, width at its bar two hundred and seventy seven spans; volume of water discharged per second four thousand eight hundred cubic spans.

Left: the *Paracatú*, the most winding of the tributaries from the Mines: with a course of ninety five leagues, eighty two fathoms wide a little above its bar, sixty thousand cubic spans of water per second given by this river to the S. Francisco: besides the affluents, among its confluents the greatest are the *Escuro*, *da Prata*, *das Egoas*, *Preto* (with a course of eighty leagues), *Catinga* and *do Somno*.

Left: the *Urucuia (Urucaia)* with a course of twenty six leagues, four hundred and thirty two spans wide at its bar, the volume of water cast into the S. Francisco per minute is fifteen thousand six hundred cubic spans; besides many affluents of minor importance, there is the *Rio Claro* with a course of thirty seven leagues.

Left: the *Pardo*, with seventy six leagues of course, nineteen fathoms wide, and five thousand cubic spans of water per second on its bar.

Right: the *Verde Grande* with the confluents *Gorutuba*, *Pacuhy*, *Verde Pequeno*, and others; it has one hundred and twenty leagues of course, and is twenty three fathoms wide at its bar.

Left: the *Carinhanha* (Carinhonha) which has its rise in the ramifications of the mountain range of the *Pirineos*, passes along the mountain range of *Paranan*, at the place called Vão, and forms from thence to its bar, an extent of about seventy leagues, the division between the provinces of Minas Geraes and Bahia: one league before its embouchure at the S. Francisco, it is thirty four fathoms wide, and contributes in volume seven thousand four hundred cubic spans of water per second.

All these confluents of the river S. Francisco (and they are those only whose mention was unavoidable) belong exclusively to the court subject to his sovereign in Minas Geraes.

In the province of Bahia, the S. Francisco waters the following more notable localities: *villa de Carinhanha*, *arraial do Senhor Bom Jesus da Lapa*, *villa do Urubú*, *arraial do Bom Jardin*, *villas da Barra do Rio Grande*, and *Chique-Chique*, *arraial do Riacho da Casa Nova*, *villas do Joazeiro*, and *Capim Grosso*, and receives besides other rivers and rivulets on the left bank, the Corrente and Grande, the mouths of which are about one hundred and twenty miles distant one from the other, and at a greater distance, and lower the Pajehú: in the provinces of the Alagôas which it crosses from north-west to south separating it from Pernambuco, Bahia and Sergipe; it receives on the left, and eighteen miles above the falls of Paulo Affonso the river Morató, which defines the extremity of that province with the centre of Pernambuco: it waters the inhabited places of *Piranhas*, of the *Armazem*, the boroughs of *Pão d'Assucar*, Porto de Folha, the city of Penedo, and the hamlet of *Piassabassú*, and in Sergipe, to which it

serves as a boundary, bathes the *Villa nova de S. Francisco:* the rivers and rivulets of minor importance, which it receives on both sides, are numerous; even so, however, as already has been said, its extended navigation has been interrupted for more than seventy leagues by the many falls, which go on succeding one another up to the principal and majestic fall of Paulo Affonso.

The islands which dot the S. Franciso are innumerable, some of larger dimensions more than once divide it into two arms, united at the end, others are small, and at certain points in the neighbourhood of each other without impeding the navigation, and render it picturesque and enchanting, and sometimes they are so many as to allow it to be said that the S. Francisco presents in sundry points of its course elegant and curious archipelagoes.

In Minas Geraes and in Bahia, not a few of the affluents of the great river disappear almost entirely during the rigour of the dry season; but in compensation they abound and overflow spaces for two, three and even six leagues: they are overflowings of little Niles, which give to their banks incalculable, and as it were miraculous strength of production. In those extended lands watered by the S. Francisco and by his hydraulic vassals, the natural richness causes wonder, and the inexhaustible fertility of the soil is such, that in spots, and in innumerable and extensive spaces, already availed of for culture, the experience of estate owners and farmers has shewn that, for example, the *Sugar cane* planted once gives an abundant cane crop, cut during a long sequence of years, or in the farming phrase of the country affords *suckers* of more or less cane to be planted during ten, fifteen, or more years. There are places in which they say that *they only plant once:* if this demonstration of fertility be exaggerated, at least it certainly explains the fact that the sugar cane planters in Bahia, Pernambuco and Alagôas may grind

cane much more productively than those of other provinces, employing in this, proportionately, less capital and fewer hands. In the province of Rio de Janeiro, the municipalities of Campos and S. Fidelis, favored by the rich irrigation of the Parahyba do Sul, and by concurring hydrographic circumstances, if they do not equal, at all events approximate to the exceptional fertility of the banks of the S. Francisco, and to those of its tributaries in the nearer zones.

The river S. Francisco little studied and hardly known, until recently, owed and owes the determination of its origin to the Baron de Eschwege, latterly however M. Liais who described and caused to be engraved, in a precious hydrographic map, the river *das Velhas* and the upper S. Francisco, facilitated notably the clearer appreciation of the central basin of Brazil.

The reference to, and the splendid help afforded by those works of the two eminent masters, are indispensable to those who wish or hold it as a duty to study this important part of Brazilian hydrography. And the S. Francisco has already happily been taken into consideration as a powerful element of future national greatness: from 1866 to 1867, Minas Geraes under the president Senhor Counsellor Saldanha Marinho saw smoking in the waters of that river the first steam boat, a precursory initiation of magnificent and commercial and political results, and now in 1872 there is an equal joy and rejoicing, the province of Bahia, saluting and solemnizing the steamer *Dantas* which plows the upper waters of the same great river, and which in the acknowledged and grateful name which she took, honors the worthy Bahian, who in the administration of his province conceived, encouraged, and gave impulse to the idea which finally hopeful and favoured became a reality.

The navigableness of the great river from Pirapora to

the arraial *da Boa Vista* (Pernambuco) is practically shewn. The steamer *Saldanha Marinho*, the property of Minas Geraes, went the whole distance, two hundred and sixty nine leagues without accident; it should be noticed that she made the voyage at the time of middling floods.

It is undeniable that the mouth of the S. Francisco is a little and even sensibly straightened by physical circumstances, and its course barely eighteen leagues above, refusing its free navigation on account of the immense waterfall of *Paulo Affonso*, does not correspond, or at least counteract the majesty of its current for hundreds of leagues easily navigable at the cost of some labour of art in the worst places, and for hundreds of miles naturally capable of receiving and carrying vessels of from 160 to 180 spans in length of keel; but that which shews itself at first a sad and unfortunate circumstance, immediately afterwards appears to signify the precious order and wise combination of Providence, which should have calculatingly created and caused to flow the magnificent river *S. Francisco*, as a principal and internal artery of the Empire, from its greatness and its hydraulic opulence, having more supreme influence in its internal bosom, than on the seaboard, as it were to complete the elements of richness of the basins of the Amazonas and of the Plata, which spread themselves out in the extraordinarily extended space of the Atlantic, with the splendid central basin of the river S. Francisco, which has an auxiliary in the assistance and subsidy afforded by the railway lines, and by the harmonious connection with them of other great rivers, will without any great dream of poetry, and by the demonstration of a problem which the future will solve practically, carry and spread abroad from Pará to Rio de Janeiro, far from the sea, and more easily and quickly than by sea, men and merchandize, civilisation and riches.

If this be a dream, a noble and inspired mind has

already dreamt it; if it be a problem to be solved, it has already been demonstrated by calculation of the immense, rich, and admirable resources, taken from the map of Brazil, by one of the most sympathetic d devoted Brazilians, the late illustrious, honoured and candid Theophilo Benedicto Ottoni, Senator of the Empire, in the year 1869.

The river *S. Francisco* ought to be more than the hydraulic king, it ought and will be the genius, the element, the bond of fraternity commercial, industrial, civilizing, and political union of the interior of the south and of the north of the Empire.

Man will necessarily make it so; for God made it in order that it should be so made.

The river *S. Francisco* was created and flowed, obedient in its course to the impulse of Providence, fulfilled its destiny by becoming the rich Mediterranean, and the giver of riches to the centre of Brazil.

Among the secondary basins are prominent:—That of the *Oyapock* in Brazilian *Guayana*. This river has its rise in the mountain range of the *Baracaina;* it flows among the mountains in a direction from west to east, and discharges itself into the ocean, serving as boundary (otherwise contested with France) to the English, Dutch, and French Guayana. It is this river *Oyapock* that was called *Vicente Pinçon*, and such name it bears in the treaty of Utrecht, *Japoc*, or Vicente Pinçon.

That of Gurupy which serves as the extreme boundary of *Pará* and *Maranhão*, and that of Mearim, and Itapicurú in this province, in which particular state they shall be considered.

That of *Parnahyba* which rises in the northern slope of the mountain range of Tabitinga, in Goyaz, after sixty leagues course through an unpopulated country, it enters Piauhy, it receives on its left the river *Balsas*, and on the right the *Uruçuhi;* its banks are seen occupied by cattle

farms, its waters afford navigation to sailing vessels; going back to the south-east it receives the Gurguea, much lower down the Piauhi and the *Camindi*, which impel it to the north; it waters the richest pasturage lands; it takes in the waters of the Poti, 120 miles further on those of Longa; at a few leagues further, it sends forth an arm which flows to the ocean, under the name of Higuaraçu, almost at an equal distance, on the left a branch separates itself which at the end of fourteen leagues and under the name of *Tutoya*, also enters the sea; in the mean time the Parnahyba always continues on to the north, and after a third arm is thrown off from the trunk, which also goes on and discharges itself into the ocean, under the name of *Barra do Meio*, it also, at a distance of three leagues already less fertilizing, disembogues by its mouth called *Barra Velha*; its whole course is estimated at three hundred and thirty leagues; its best and easiest navigation is to an extent of one hundred and fifty, to say nothing of many more leagues for canoe traffic; it bathes many hamlets, the city of Therezina, and the city called after its own name, and confines the provinces of Maranhão and Piuhy.

That of *Jaguaribe*, which has its source in the mountain range of *Boa-Vista*, in *Ceará*, flows to the north, as far as the town of *S. João do Principe*, turns to the south-west, after bathing the hamlets of *Arneirós*, and *Santa Cruz*, turns to the east, leaves the town of S. Matheus to the left, below the town of Icó, receives the *Salgado*, and inclining towards the north, passes by Santa Roza, S. João, Villa de S. Bernardo, the city of Aracaty, disembogues in the ocean, three leagues further down after having been increased by a great number of small tributary rivers; its course exceeds one hundred and twenty leagues: the tide reaches beyond the city of Aracaty.

That of Parahyba (do Norte) in the province of that name: this river has its source in the mountain range of

Jabitacá; it, at first, runs between rocks, augments its volume by the waters of many rivulets which however dry up when the dry season is prolonged, becomes navigable for canoes, crossing the district of Pilar, receives the rivulet *Guarahú*, a little above the city of the capital of the province, to which place smacks navigate with the most perfect safety, and it discharges itself into the ocean, at some miles distance from the fort Cabedello, through two unequal mouths, and beetween a garden of islands.

That of *Itapicurú*, which has its source in the province of Bahia, in the hills of the district of Jacobina, to the East of the river S. Francisco; it flows in the direction of west to east, waters the territories of *S. Antonio dos Queimados* of Itapicurú, and discharges its waters into the sea, between the rivers *Real* and *Tareiri*, having a course of one hundred and forty leagues, and barely seven feet of water at its mouth, full of shoals.

That of *Paraguassú* (it is also written Paraguaçu) which is the most winding of all the rivers which disembogue in the bay of *Todos os Santos;* this river has its source in the mountain range of the *Chapada*, and immediately afterwards enriched by numerous rivulets, descends from the rocky heights of the Cincorá mountain range in a great waterfall, at sixteen leagues further on by another of less height, precipitates itself from the mountain range of *Timborá*, and breaks through from between two rocks, and flows on, bathing the cities of *Cachoeira* and of *Maragogipe* before it discharges itself into the splendid bay on its western margin, and with a widened mouth.

That of *Jussiape* or river *Contas* still in the province of *Bahia*; it has its source in the mountain range of *Tromba*, eight leagues to the north-west of the town of Contas, it takes in, in its course on its right bank the river *Brumado* or *Contas Pequeno*, a little below comes down a beautiful fall, receives the rivulets *Gavião* and

Cincurá, enters the district of *Ilheos*, takes in the rivulets *Preto*, *Pires*, *Pedras*, *Managerú*, *Area*, *Agoa-branca* and *Oriçó-Guassu*, runs in increased volume over a bed of rocks, and after bathing the town of *Barra Grande do Rio de Contas*, enters the ocean, affording navigation to smacks as far as four leagues above its mouth.

That of Jequitinhonha or Belmonte, the famous diamond river, has its source in the mountain range of the Pedra Redonda, in Minas Geraes eight leagues more or less to the west-south-west of the city of the Serro; it begins to afford the means of canoe navigation, immediately after receiving into its course the rivulet *San Gonçalo*, and advancing to the north sometimes turns, receiving in its course numerous rivulets; at thirty leagues from its source, it runs for a long space to the north-east, increased in volume by the waters of the rivulet *Macauba*, and by those of the river *Itucambira*, which give it an easterly direction, it receives the river Vaccaria, and the smaller river *Salmas;* to the left it is enlarged by the confluence of the Araçuahi; it becomes narrow at the fall called *Salto Grande*, at the top of the eastern slope of the mountain range of the *Aimorés*, from whence it precipitates itself from a height of twenty fathoms, causing the noise of its fall to be heard at a distance of four leagues; from this point, downwards, it takes the name of *Belmonte*, when the primitive name is not preserved, which, notwithstanding is respected by many; it continues on beyond the rocks which borne down are becoming flattened, majestically widens its bed, bathes the city of Belmonte, and from that place towards the north discharges itself into the ocean, as if tired of its long journey, and majestically despising the treasures contained in its bed, and near to its quarries of rose coloured marble, which were discovered in 1840 between the Cordilheira and the sea.

That of the Rio Doce, which has its source twelve

leagues to the east of the city of Barbacena, in the place in which begins the river *Chapotó*, which runs twenty leagues in a northernly direction, receiving on its left bank the river Piranga, and on both banks sundry rivulets, going on beyond *Santa Anna do Deserto*, it affords navigation for canoes, being encreased by the rivulet *Turvo* on its right, and by the river *Guallacho* on the other bank, by which it inclines to the east and precipitates itself down the fall called *Inferno:* from thence it immediately advances on under the name of the river *Doce*, and goes on receiving on its right bank the river *Casca*, on the left the *Piracicaba*; six leagues further on it has its bed full of rocky reefs, blackened by the weather, called from that circumstance the Escura (dark) waterfall; three leagues below, it has the mouth of the river *St. Antonio* on its left, and eight leagues further on that of *Correntes*, after which it divides itself at the fall *Bagauriz*, and still subdivides itself further on, its waters uniting in a species of cauldron formed by a series of islets in ac space of two leagues, its current there becoming considerably rapid; it goes on, however, immediately after with a calm course, which beyond the embouchure of the Sacuhi-Pequeno again rushes on overcoming the three successive falls of *Ilha-Brava*, *Figueira*, much more dangerous, in the mountain range of Beteruna, and of the *Rebojo do Capim*; five leagues lower down it receives on its left the *Sacuhi Grande*, followed up by numerous and limpid streams, makes many turns before it comes to the small fall called *Cachoeirinha* which canoes come down without unloading; it receives further on the rivulet Larangeira, on its left bank, and on the other Cuiaté, which cause it to follow majestically for two leagues, beyond which it is disturbed by reefs which produce whirlpools and falls of water of little moment, called *Rebojo de João Pinto*, and *Rebojo da Onça;* half a league below, its bed describes some diagonal lines, to which is given the

name of *M*, because they imitate that capital letter; one league further on, its navigation is interrupted by rocky ridges called Cachoeirão; and at a distance of two leagues further, it becomes divided into two unequal arms which encircle the island of *Natividade*, and beyond this, precipitates itself over the great fall of *Escadinha*—so called from its steps of rocks extending a distance of a mile downwards; in the dry season the canoes unload at that island, and the goods are carried on the backs of the canoe men who go down by the side of the river as far as the port of *Souza;* when there is plenty of water, the canoes travel down easily, and go to the tool-house of *Lorrena* close to the confluence of the *Manhú-Assu*, which comes from the south, and serves as boundary to the provinces of *Minas Geraes* and of *Espirito Santo*.

Between the embouchure of *Manhú-Assu*, and the port of *Souza* the Rio Doce's current is easy to stem; below that port it goes on receiving the rivulets, *Alves*, *Pancas*, *Joanna*, on one side, and on the other the *Lima*, it flows proudly on between granitic mountains for the space of ten leagues, twelve along a plain, at the end of which, it bathes the town of *Linhares*, and ten leagues further on, having, in the last seven, taken a south-south-west direction enters the ocean by two arms into which a permanent sand-bank divides it, and which bank lies to the south of the city of *S. Matheus*.

The Rio Doce the navigation of which is so extensive, promises extraordinary advantages to the provinces of Espirito Santo and Minas Geraes. An Anglo-Brazilian Steam Navigation Company, in that river and its confluents, was authorised in 1835, commenced its work in 1839, but became discouraged by the bad success of their first operations, or rather because at that time, enterprises of that order were not so easily carried through: nevertheless the favours guaranteed to them were great.

That of Parahyba do Sul; this river has its source in a small lake of the mountain range *Bocaina*, five to six leagues to the north-east of the city of *Paraty* in the province of Rio de Janeiro; making sundry turns in a westerly direction, flows along the mountain range of *Quebra-Cangalhas*, and follows the sinuosities of the mountains in the province of S. Paulo, during which in its progress of increasing bulk, it receives many rivulets, the river Jacuhy, the auriferous *Jaquary*, and others; it bathes the cities, towns, and hamlets of *Parahitinga*, *Parahybuna*, *Larangeiras*, *Jacarehy* (below which it is crossed by the road from Rio de Janeiro to S. Paulo), S. José, *Pindamonhangaba*, Guaratinguata, and Lorena, by which the road from S. Paulo to Minas Geraes passes, entering immediately into a channel hollowed out between the high rocks, which extend for three hundred fathoms in length, and giving the river a width of five to six fathoms; and afterwards waters *Queluz*, crosses the territory of *Areas*, and having formed a great circle, and run in different directions, returns to the province of *Rio de Janeiro*, from whence it issued, separates the Municipality of Valença from that of *Rezende*, *Barra Mansa*, and from that of Vassouras, receives the streams more or less powerful of *Pedras*, of *Bananal*, of Barra Mansa, and the river Pirahy, where it bathes that most lovely village of *Barra do Pirahy*, after having bathed the cities of Rezende and Parahyba, and the village of Barra Mansa, and other points of population; it receives many leagues beyond Rezende, the *Parahybuna*, which having divided the provinces of *Minas Geraes* and *Rio de Janeiro* increases it twofold below the city of Parahyba, and facing the place of confluence of the *Piabanha*. In its junction with the *Parahybuna*, it begins to serve as a boundary to those two provinces, and goes on from west to east, receiving many tributary streams on both banks, finally the river Pomba, after which it has a southerly inclination and still more so

when having received on its right the rivers *Collegio* and *Prato*, and on the left and lower down, the *Muriahé*, and having watered the cities of *S. Fidelis*, *Campos*, and *S. João da Barra*, it runs into the ocean, six and a half leagues beyond that last confluent.

The course of the Parahyba do Sul is computed at one hundred and forty leagues: from this extend, and from the volume of its waters, it would not be remembered among the most notable tributary of the Amazonas; even so, it is, nevertheless, one of the most important rivers in Brazil, through the medium of its communication, and of its commerce, which assist some cities and towns which are situated on its banks, and on account of its being the great commercial artery between the cities of S. Fidelis, of Campos, and of S. João da Barra, the first of which is situated at twelve and a half leagues, the second at six from its embouchure in the ocean, and the third on the right branch of that mouth.

As far as half a league above S. Fidelis, the navigation is throughout all the months of the year, free to barks, smacks, and steamers; but from that point forward commence the falls or Itapobas between which only come down rafts loaded with timber. Like obstacles occur again and are met with throughout the whole course of the river, although much less considerable, at great distances, and these intermediate spaces afford navigation, they are, however, losing their evil influence; the Dom Pedro II. Railway is rendering them nugatory, by crossing in some places the river *Parahyba do Sul* from west to east, as other railroads now in construction or in project, tend to connect it to the east of the province of Rio de Janeiro by going to meet it in Campos, and to dispute with it their modest influence in the south, in the west in *S. Paulo* by a logical and unavoidable branch of that first and predominating railway which cannot permit to be forgotten the splendid

and astonishing fruitfulness of S. Paulo and of Paraná, although it advances in evident and easily explained preference towards the valley of the S. Francisco.

The name of *Parahyba* which is called do Sul, on account of a necessary distinction from that which runs in the province of the same name between those of the north of Brazil, and composed of two words of the "tupy" tongue *Pará*, which signifies water, and—"hyba"—clear water; it behoves us, however, to say, that the waters of this river are turbid, becoming clear in a short time, and the more appreciated the longer it is kept in the house: the water contains no vegetable matter in solution; but only contains mineral matter, clay, and sand,—all which deposit themselves at the bottom of the water jars.

The salt water does not go beyond one hundred and thirty six fathoms within the river's mouth, and the tide is limited in its flow to the Barra Secca which is five leagues above its mouth.

If Brazil cannot pride herself on the grandeur of her lakes, of their extraordinary extension, as some countries can, she has on the other hand and principally in the valley of the Amazonas, so many as to be innumerable.

Putting on one side the lake *Xaraes* of Matto Grosso, which is the *periodic sea* during some months of each year, from the proud rise and inundation of the Paraguay river, ordinarily from April to September, covering a space of forty and in some cases sixty leagues; and likewise not taking in account the more or less annually lasting vast lakes formed by the floods in other provinces, it is fit that we should mention the permanent lakes and lagoons and those of most importance.

To commence in the south, there are in the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul the lagoons called *Lagôa dos Patos*, Lagôa Mirim, and Mangueira.

The Lagôa dos Patos is forty six leagues in length,

and ten in width, connected on the north to the Lagôa do Viamão, and on its south-west side to the *Mirim* by a channel, which owing to its having a current is called the river of *S. Gonçalo*, and on the south-east side it discharges its waters into the ocean by another channel, which is named Rio Grande, and which is the maritime port of the province.

The lake *Viamão* (vi-a-mão) [I saw the hand] so called because four rivers like four fingers of the hand stretched out in the lagoon discharge themselves into it, the Jacuhy, the Sino, the Cahy, and the Gravatahy, all navigable beyond the channel or river *S. Gonçalo*, the fifth finger of this poetical hydraulic hand. Viamão bathes the feet of the city of *Porto Alegre*.

The *Lagôa Mirim* is twenty six leagues long, and seven wide, and receives the waters of the *Jaguarão*, and those of *Taquari do Sebolati*, which comes to it from the Estado Oriental (Uruguay) besides an abundance of streams.

The lake *Mangueira*, narrow but long, lies between Lake Mirim and the ocean.

In the island of Santa Catharina, there is a lake of two leagues long, and one thousand fathoms wide at its greatest width, but narrows to fifty fathoms at its neck which divides it into two unequal parts, so as to appear two lakes, both of which are more or less deep, and abundantly supplied with fish: from the great number of aquatic birds which in numerous flocks cover it, and even now frequent it, the conquerors gave the primitive name to that insular jewel of Brazil which was then called the Ilha dos Patos (Duck-Island).

In the province of Rio de Janeiro, besides the small and fish stocked lakes in the neighbourhood of the capital, sundry lakes of less importance extend in a sufficiently interrupted series, from Campos to Macahé and Cape Frio: afterwards in getting near to *Saquarema*, and from thence

forward, until the suburbs of Nicterohy are almost reached, extensive lakes succeed each other, which, sometimes, are connected, at others are for a short time interrupted, ensuring as a premium for slight labour a free and safe navigation for some number of leagues, near to and facing the curled and ungovernable sea of the coast, sometimes in sight, sometimes distant. The wise and meritorious Brazilian Candido Baptista de Oliveira saw in those lakes, in many places only separated from the Atlantic by narrow walls of sand, ancient bays now lost by the sea. While the art of man does not avail itself of the commercial communication through this world of waters, more or less deep, but certainly navigable in all its very long extent, merely requiring an almost natural canalization, and it is interrupted by limited and small belts of sand, those lakes revenge themselves for the forgetfulness which separates them, giving generously to the fishery, which is principally followed by the poorer population, this inexhaustible mine of resources for all persons in the neighbouring municipalities, and even in the capital of the Empire an abundance and distinct choice in all that can be required in fish as food.

In the province of *Alagôas*, among the chief is reckoned Jiquibá, to the north of the river *Cururipé* of about five leagues long, and one wide, and divided by a channel into *Lago do Norte*, *Lago do Sul*, which latter is the greater, both being navigable for large canoes, and having as an outlet for its waters, the river or channel called the river of *Alagôas*.

In Brazilian Guayana, the lake *Saracá* is pre-eminent, between the rivers *Urubú*, and *Aniba*, which communicate with each other through the lake; this lake is even now little known, as also are little appreciated the *Lago Grande das Campinas*, which designates the most extensive body of fresh water to be met with in the Amazonian region of Pará, according to what Señor D. S. Ferreira Penna informs

us in his much to be recommended and excellent work called—"*A Região Occidental da Provincia do Pará*"—and to whose research is owing the knowledge of that interesting lake, which has side by side an innumerable quantity of all sizes, from twenty metres to eight miles in extent, the lake in question having its mouth in the Amazonas not less than forty miles with a width of one half to two miles as far as the point of the Campo, where its right bank disappears on the horizon. Respecting the rule by which the lake *Xaraes* was left on one side, and all the others arising from the floods, although periodic, this one also remains without a competent description, which is otherwise now easy enough, in as much as the zealous explorer and writer above cited informs us, that the imposing view which the *Lago Grande das Campinas* presents during the winter, alters entirely in the summer when all the innumerable *partial lake dry up*, or disappear, and the *Grande* becoming reduced to a small *canoe channel* of three or four hundred metres wide giving to this transitory dwindling of that which had been a little before taken for a space not less extended in proportion to a vast river, as wide as the Amazonas itself, the most speaking image of the contingency and varied fortune of humanity.

Besides the Lago Grande das Campinas, still in the province of Pará numberless lakes are to be met with, as also in that of the Amazonas, subject more or less to the precarious conditions of those.

# CHAPTER IX.

## Natural Productions of Brazil.

Whoever could imagine Brazil with all her riches in the three kingdoms of nature, revealing them completely at the time of her being discovered, and conquered by the Portuguese, would doubtless be surprised, and would lament the sad contrast that its miserable condition presented to the sight; the blind misery of man, of the savage aborigines, treading and lost in wonder in the immensity of the riches and treasures of magnificent proportions, which he looked upon and did not see, touched and did not feel in the vast regions over which he had dominion.

Well then, three centuries and seventy two years have already passed by: it is half a century since the Portuguese Colony has become an independent Empire: since long before that, the Indian savage gave up the lands of his hordes, and of his "tabas" to the associations, and the hamlets, the towns and cities of civilized man: daring adventurers explored the deserts, learned European and Brazilian travellers, and explorers have made a multiplicity of prolonged excursions, and considerable investigations; Government commissions, from the earliest to the latest time, industrial companies, impelled by the calculation of adventages, which besides being lawful, are patriotic, have with equal ardor and solicitous endeavour, navigated and explored rivers, ascended, and crossed over mountains and mountain ridges, have descended into the valleys of the

interior, invaded the rich depths of forests, have looked all over plains and fields of such extent as to be lost to the eye; and notwithstanding this, man, although civilised, and become great through civilisation, is even now but little, and humble in presence of the magnitude of Brazilian Nature; and even now is far from having revealed to him all the opulence of Brazilian Nature.

A few days ago, on the 27th September last, Señor Dr. Couto de Magalhães, the enlightened, conscientious and most devoted former and director of the Tocantins and Araguaya Navigation Company, reading in the Brazilian Historical and Geographical Institute a most precious memoir, in which he gave an account of five several routes, by which, more than calculably, the communication of the two great basins of the Amazonas and the Plata is shewn to be easy through the interior, and boundary limits of Brazil, he only marked in those lands, in that region which extends from Matto Grosso to Pará 120,000 square miles, not one single civilized man is found to inhabit, and in which only hordes of Indians shelter themselves a great way in the interior.

How far will the revelation of those 120,000 *square* miles go, which are equals of other similar spaces, and still unknown in the vast interior of Brazil?

The noticing of such ignorance of the abundance of natural treasures kept or hidden in those as it were endless solitudes, entirely vanishes, when one comes to think of the population of the Empire, which does not reach 13 millions of inhabitants, in a country which some day will be peopled by a hundred millions of laborious men, and there will still be lands to spare and to offer.

But the calculation of that which, at present, is not known, is easy to be made, inasmuch as it is already known and explored in the neighbouring territories, of like natural conditions.

Brazil far exceeds any other country of the world in mineral riches, for in its bosom it both reveals and guards the most varied mineral productions, which Nature divided among other fortunate lands.

Still insufficiently known, still in a great part an *unknown land*, relatively to the extension and variety of her treasures in the Mineral Kingdom, she has already astonished the world for some time, by the riches already manifested.

In a general table which is limited to naming the natural products of that kingdom, and the provinces where they are known and most abound, the mention of them will not go beyond what is made evident, when in rare cases of vigorous indication, this exception is declared.

*Precious Stones.* The following are met with: *Diamonds* in the north of the province of Minas Geraes, and in Bahia, in Goyaz and Matto Grosso, to which the diamond formation radiates by two sides, taking its departure from the first province; in Paraná also in itacolomite rocks, and dispersed through the beds and the banks of the *Tibagy*.

*Emeralds*, *rubies*, *sapphires*, *tapazes*, *beryls*, *euclasias* and *zirconitas*, principally in Minas Geraes.

*Granadas* (garnets) in all Brazil, very common in the granites of Rio de Janeiro: *amethysts* of the very best quality are also very common.

*Quartz* and its varieties are abundantly found throughout all Brazil; fine and the purest rock crystáls, agates, calcedony, cornelian, in great quantities in Minas Geraes, Goyaz, S. Paulo, and Rio Grande do Sul.

*Metal minerals* are met with:

*Gold*, the king of metals, more or less in all the provinces, but abounding principally in Minas Geraes, Matto Grosso, Goyaz, Maranhão (in the district of *Tury Assú*): still in S. Paulo, Paranás, Rio Grande do Sul (in

the district of Lavras), Ceará on the sides of the mountain range *Ibiapaba*, in *Mangabeira* near *Granja*, and in the neighbouring mountain range of Baturité); in Rio Grande do Norte, and in Parahyba in the quartz formations: with *platina*, and *iridium*, after the inundations in Minas Geraes, and moreover there with many other metals, as *tellurium*, in the lodes of some of the workings, and taken out with *palladium*, in sundry places, and accompanying the *galenas* every where.

*Bismuth* (in S. Vicente) and arsenical pyrites (in the environs of Marianna) in Minas Geraes.

*Silver* constantly in the galenas: it shows itself to be native in Ceará in Bahia (on the banks of the S. Francisco) in S. Paulo (in the districts of Sorocaba and of Xiririca) and in Minas Geraes (in Abaeté).

*Copper*—abundant in Matto Grosso, and in Rio Grande do Sul, and also in Minas Geraes, Bahia, Ceará, and Maranhão, in its native state, in oxide, and in green carbonate.

*Tin*, in Minas Geraes (in the sands of Paraopeba), in *Rio de Janeiro* in some of the granite formations, and in districts still badly investigated in Ceará and in Sta. Catharina.

*Lead*, frequent in a *galena* state, abounding in S. Paulo (in the districts of *Iporanga* and of Sorocaba), Minas Geraes, Bahia, Parahyba do Norte, Rio de Janeiro and Sta. Catharina: in more recent formations in Bahia, Ceará (in the mountain range of Araripe), moreover in this province in deposits, in the mountain range of Ibiapaba.

*Blenda* (sulphurete of zinc) in Ceará, and here also partial indications of *calamine*.

*Antimony*, in Minas Geraes, and in Paraná.

*Arsenic*, in Minas Geraes accompanying pyrites in gold mines, and forming the *Scorodita* combined with iron.

*Iron* throughout the whole of Brazil under its multiform states. *Magnetic* in Minas Geraes, forming a colossal

mountain (in Itabira), and others equal in an oligistic state and of *Micacious iron*; in deposits in the provinces of S. Paulo (in Ipanema), of Paraná, Matto Grosso and having rich mines still in S. Paulo, Ceará, Rio Grande do Norte, and Parahyba, freely shewing itself in other provinces, and having the advantage of a complete absence from *Pyrites*, which is wanting to the famed mines themselves of Sweden.

*Rocks* are met with:

*Granites* in abundance every where, that of a yellow color being conspicuous-dark like that of Ceará, and the white as in Sta. Catharina, excellent for building.

*Gneiss* of many varieties, of an itacolumite character in some, and excellent for paving streets, and for the building of walls.

*Quartzites*, porphyry of rose color, and black with white crystals of *feldspat*, and diorites of light green and dark abound in so many places that we cannot note them.

*Calcareous* are met with:

*Calcareoos sacharoides* frequent and in a great part breaking out of the *Gneiss*. The marbles recommend themselves by their most beautiful variety of black in S. Paulo, white in Bahia, rose colored in Minas, and other not less estimable in Rio de Janeiro, Espirito Santo, and in Rio Grande do Sul. In Matto Grosso also are found magnificent marbles.

*Sambaquis lime*, or *shell lime* is made for building on the shores, of enormous heaps of shells heaped up, and banks of shell fish which form in the inlets, and of coraline formation which accompany the coast of the Abrolhos to the north.

*Marnes cretaceos* in Maranhão and in Parahyba: Chalk abundant in a fibrous state, in Minas Geraes, Rio Grande do Norte, Ceará, Maranhão and Amazonas.

*Argila*: is met with:

*Argila, colored clay* and *white clay*, every where; and

it is equally servicable in the potteries, as it is employed in the manufacture of earthen ware, pipes, etc.

*Kaoline* or *porcelain earth*, abundant without being common, nor is it always of that pure nature that good porcelain requires.

*Refractory Argila* of many varieties in Ceára and in other provinces of excellent quality already known in Europe.

*Coal:* is met with

Already made manifest in Rio Grande do Norte (in the Arroyo dos Ratos and in Jaguarão): in Sta. Catharina (near the river Tubarão at Boa Vista), in S. Paulo, in Ceará, and from just conclusions, it is pronounced in Piauhy, in Maranhão, and in the valley of the Amazonas, where near Manaos it already is vaguely spoken of as having been recognized. It is an immense treasure which ought not to be wanting to Brazil, and which begins to shew itself as very sufficient therein, and promises an oversupply.

*Lignites* are met with:

*Lignites* in S. Paulo; turf more or less pure, and the *bituminous Schistus*, some of a turfe like nature, in almost all parts of Brazil.

Near the mouth of the *Camamú* in Bahia, yellow schistus gives by being distilled a solid substance, which has the appearance of *naphtaline*, and a carburet of hydrogene very volatile, which is capable of being used for illumination; a like schistus proclaims its existence in the province of Maranhão.

*Graphite* is met with

In Ceará where it abounds in knobs in the Gneiss and in spangles in the eruptive calcareous saccharoides, and also in Rio Grande do Sul.

*Sulphur*, a native of Rio Grande do Norte.

*Salts* are met with:

*Saltpetre*, the most availed of from the beds of calcareous caverns in Minas Geraes, Matto Grosso, Ceará, Bahia, and other provinces, in great abundance in Piauhy.

*Alum* in Minas Geraes, Paraná, Ceará, and in other provinces, as well as sulphate of magnesia and soda.

*Sal gemma* in Matto Grosso, in Pará, and in Minas Geraes: in Guayaz, and in Piauhy it abounds; being however in the latter province much charged with sulphate of magnesia.

*Salt* for domestic use is frequently met with impregnating the clay.

Of the *podostomeas* which vegetate on rocks under water in the Rio Negro, the salt is extracted.

The saline efflorescence of the chloruret of soda of the gneiss of the mountain range of Uruburetama as far as Meruoca in Ceará deserves special mention.

## MINERAL WATERS.

Brazil possesses numerous sites of mineral waters of sundry kinds; but the greater part of them still require scientific analysis; only the most known and already tried springs shall be here mentioned.

Acidulated gaseous waters in the province of the Mines, the "virtuous" of Campinas, and those of *Caxambó* or of *Baependy* in this municipality; and in that of Pernambuco some springs at *Pajehu das Flores*. The first contain a great quantity of carbonic acid, and a small portion of some salts, which are the bi-carbonate of soda, chloruret of magnesium, of sodium and of calcium, and sulphate of soda; the other contain a smaller quantity of acid; they are very similar to Seltzer water.

*Thermal Alcaline waters* in the district of Santa Cruz in the provinze of Goyaz in the place called *Caldas Novas*, *Caldas Velhas*, and *Caldas* of *Parapitinga;* of the first there are 13 springs, used for baths, besides many other springs;

of the second, copious springs which form a rivulet; the third unite in a lake of 122 palmos (each 9 inches) long and 15 to 20 wide; chlorurets, carbonates and silicate of potassa, soda, lime, magnesia and alumina predominate, in small quantities; its temparature in general varies between 34° and 36°; that of the waters of the lake above indicated, are higher, and reach in some places 48°: they are of great efficacy in tetters and other diseases of the skin, in chronic rheumatism, ulcers, etc.

Ferreous waters almost all over Brazil; in the municipality of the capital there are more than 10 places, two of them being within the city; in the provinze Rio de Janeiro 11 are known; in Minas Geraes 7; and others in Maranhão, Piauhy, Espirito Santo, S. Paulo, etc.

*Saline Waters*, the most notable are those in the province of Bahia, at Itapicurú; they run down the mountains which are in the neighbourhood of the river Itapicuru, and extend about 11 leagues along the banks of this river; among others the springs *Mãe d'Agua do Cipó*, near the town of Souro, of Mosquete, of the town of *Itapicurú* and *Rio Quente* are the chief; these waters have been examined; their temperature is higher than that of the ambient air, and that of the various points around varies between 31 and 41°; it contains carbonic acid, sulphate of soda, chloruret of sodium, of calcium, and magnesium, silicious acid, and peroxyde of iron, in small quantities; they are laxative and are efficacious in tetters and other cutaneous diseases.

Thermal Waters, in the province of S. Catharina, known as the *Caldas de Bittencourt* (temperature 35½°); *Caldas do Sul do Cubatão* (of 45), *Caldas* do norte do *Cubatão* (35) and *Caldas do Tubarão*. These waters are by no means sulphureous, and are efficacious in cases of paralysis, chronic rheumatisms, etc. In the inland place Serido in the province of Rio Grande do Norte, and in *Lagoa Santa* in Minas Geraes, and in other provinces there

are purely thermal fonts, of recognized virtue; but not as yet studied as science requires. At some leagues to the south of the city of Cuyabá, and near the bay of *Frade* there is a font of thermal water, that M. Deville the companion of Castelnau visited, and found its temperature to be 35° cent. That learned and most modest man, the Councillor Beaurepaire Rohan, being president of the province of Matto Grosso, gathered information respecting that fountain.

*Sulphureous, thermal and cold waters.* Thermae in the province of Minas there are 4 fonts, 3 being at a distance of 6 leagues from the town of Caldas, and on the right bank of *Rio Verde* at 3 miles distance from that town, all having a temperature of 42°. These are both the principal in Brazil, as well as the most frequented. In the province of Rio Grande do Norte, in the town of *Apodi* there is also a fount of sulphureous thermal water of a less high temperature. The knowledge of the cases in which these waters are available is general. Cold sulphureous waters are very abundant, and have long since been known on the confines of the provinces of Minas Geraes and Goyaz; there are fonts of the waters on the banks of the *Rio Verde*, still in Minas Geraes, and in the colony of Thereza in Paraná, according to the information given by Dr. Faivre.

Almost all these mineral waters, their fonts, their analyses and their application, are already indicated in the formulary of M. C. Dr. Chernoviz; the number, however, of those which are not analysed, and on account of their being little known have been put on one side, is much greater, it being certain that in mineral waters of sundry natures Brazil has within her bosom more than sufficient to dispense with the respective supply that the other countries of the world offer.

In the vegetable Kingdom she shows an equal grandeur; if the Brazilian Flora have a rival, she knows no superior

on the world. Science has therein a vast field for new conquests, and the species already determined amount to many thousands. Forests, centuries old, majestic and vast, command the admiration and transport the soul, and as it were figure to the mind deep and mysterious shelter for the treasures of Nature; in most ample, varied and most luxuriant, as well as modest vegetation, the soil abounds every where in produce which are sufficient and more than enough for the medical science, for the different arts, for industrie and for commerce.

Both civil and naval construction have at their disposal, timber which exceeds all requirements.

In the ancient and heavily built which the Portuguese and their descendents were in the habit of constructing, it is found even at this day that the uprights, beams and roof trees which have resisted one century are still capable of resisting the action of another; wood of the hardness and offering such resistance as to resemble iron, served, so to say, as a first *armour* to the iron-clad vessels that left our building slips in 1865 and following years. Cabinet making receives the most precious tribute from the forest trees of Brazil for its work of superior delicacy, daintiness and beauty, and also of great strength for lasting long; and through caprice and from sheer luxury mosaics are made of wood, which in the variety of its colors surpass the true mosaics.

For those civil and naval constructions, besides many other kinds, the iron wood (páo ferro), the peroba, the tupinhoã, páo brazil (brazil wood), and black rosewood, corcunda (hanch back), cabiuna (brown rosewood), sucupira, cedro, massaranduba, itaoba, pequiá, sapucuia, barauna, the crooked, but everlasting camará (for flooring) and the laurel much employed in the inside lining of vessels on account of its tortuous grain.

Cabinet making has vinhatico, marapinima, oleo, jaca-

randa (rosewood wich is gold in veneer slabs), the saboarana, the gonçalo-alves, páo marfim, the páo setim (ivory and satin wood), the muira-piranga, the maracutiara; and a hundred more for its first class work and for its fancy.

Dyeing, still in its infancy, as may be said, forget a hundred resources, avails, of the excellency of Brazil wood, of indigo, of tatagiba, of the cumaté, of campeachy, of the urucú, and of other serviceable plants already approved.

Engraving on wood, stammering out its first word in Brazil, finds a substitute for box wood in *grumarim*, and perhaps meets with it in other woods, amongst the many not yet tried.

Medical science has for the treatment of diseases, an innumerable quantity of vegetables, the powerful action of which is already recognized. The late Doctor Joaquim José da Silva, who had been a professor of the school of Medicine of Rio de Janeiro, and a very clever and distinguished medical man, did a great service, inserting and using in his practice, many of those vegetables; in the *Formulary* or *Medical Guide* of Dr. Chernoviz will be found described, indigenous medicinal plants of Brazil, in number already very great, thus then to make mention of the excellency, and extraordinary abundance of salsaparilla of ipecacuanha, of urari, of guaraná, of caroba, of páo pereira, of abutua, of the tamaquaré, of the *pipi*, of the timbó is only caring to satisfy the fitness of some although most limited notice.

In abundant and spontaneous vegetation, sundry species of the genus *Myristica* offer themselves: that which gives vegetable tallow, *Myristica sebifera*, so well known in Pará, is the same met with in French Goyana, in S. Paulo, the species vulgarly called bicuiba, or bucuhuba, is employed as is the nutmeg, and hence the name of *Brazilian nutmeg*, and the Myristica officinalis of Martius, and its seeds very oleagenous, and perhaps produce some kind of

tallow. Two or perhaps more species of the genus Siphonia from which is extracted india rubber, are equally abundant; besides the siringueiras, the mangabeiras recommend themselves for that (these are of the family of *Apocinaceas*), these however lose by reason of the bad quality of the india rubber, as discovered in the first essays made in England; its milk has worked well attested miracles in treating pulmonary complaints, and its excellence rendered it very appreciable.

The *Carnahuba* palm tree (*Corypha cerifera* of Arruda or Copernicia cerifera of Martius), which in some provinces of the north covers extensive territories, is a vegetable of multiplied utility; in its trunk it is timber for building purpose, its fruit is an excellent food for oxen, its leaves are made useful in manufacturing hats, and for thatching houses, and it is from them that the pouder is extracted which they melt before the fire and which produces the so-called carnahuba wax, both its bark and its root are made use of with advantage. The cacao, vanelle, and besides innumerable other trees and plants, the produces of which recommend themselves, the herb maté may be called to mind here, for its leaves and its fruit are the objects of an animated commerce, and the cocoa nut commonly called da Bahia. The paineira (wild cotton tree) may become a tree of the most precious kind for the industrious arts, should they arrive at discovering the means of subjecting to the spinning wheel the extraordinarily fine *paina* of different colours which are only used by mattrass-makers. The *andiroba*, the *angica*, the balsam, the copahiba, the jatobá, and many other distinguish themselves as resinous, milky and oleagenous. In the City of Campinas, they give the name of *balsam* to the tree, which in other places of the province of S. Paulo, and in those of Paraná they call *cubriuva*, and which resin besides being medicinal, has the same use as that of Arabia. The venerable Bom-

pland assured the illustrious councillor general Beaurepaire Rohan, that it was the same vegetable called in Paraguay palo d'incensio.

It would be tedious to enumerate the vegetables which from their leaves, their bark, or from their wood the ropemaker avails himself extraordinarily; as likewise textile industry, and manufacture of paper; they are innumerable, and are not availed of because they superabound in the country, agriculture concentrates and monopolizes the hands, and industry as yet barely makes its first essay in the land which offers to it inexhaustible sources, and a horizon without limits.

The Pimento is common, and of not a few varieties, without reckoning exotics.

Besides the Mandioc from which the farinha of almost general use is extracted, the numerous varieties of sweet mandioc (aipim), carás and potatoes which superabound every where with the slightest cultivation, must not be forgotten on account of their agreeable taste and alimentary condition; rich and poor esteem them, and doubtless, more than one poor agriculturist, hearing spoken of the suffering of the population of Ireland in the years in which the crop of potatoes either fails or is scant, gives God thanks, seeing at his disposal as simple subsidiaries the aipins, and more than these, the carás, each one of which, among certain varieties are worth ten and even more English potatoes.—The inhames (yams) indigenous or exotic, which is not perfectly elucidated, are as common as they are of large size, and injustly badly received at table; they have on account of their plentiful production and great size, considerable utility, have been long used for feeding pigs which fatten greatly thereon besides saving the expense of more costly food.

The vegetables which afford savoury and delicate dishes are many; as, however, not a few among them are

cultivated in the Brazilian garden, mixed with exotics introduced and acclimatized, mention shall be made of them, but they shall be reserved for the following chapter in which an information on the horticulture both shall be distinctly determined, it being only to be regretted that for want of space it will not be possible to give an idea even in a succinct description of the recommendable qualities, of at least some of the indigenous fruits.

In the animal kingdom, Brazil commences by not competing with Asia and Africa in quadrupeds of great bulk, and of terrible ferocity; she does not possess the lion or the leopard, the elephant, the rhinoceros and others; the camel and dromedary are wanting, neither the bear, neither the European wolf infest it.

Here follow in the order mentioned, many of the animals of Brazil, among which are not pointed out the horse, the ox, the sheep &c., having been introduced into the country, and which have bred extraordinarily and advantageously.

## MAMMIFERS.

Quadrumanous: Monkeys are abundant, of which there are sundry species from the *cuató* which is the largest, to the *saguhi* which is the smallest.

*Carnivorous:* the ounce figures in the first place, the fiercest of the animals of Brazil, and of which species there is the spotted, black, wich is generally called tiger, the light brown which in Paraná is called lion, and in other places the *cangussú* and *sussurana;* the genus *Felis* embraces the lesser species, called *gato do matto*, wild cat, the *jaguatirica*, the *maracaja* and others. The ounce is the object of the great hunting in Brazil. The *cachorro do matto* (wild dog) in certain provinces is called *rapoza* (fox), and they also call *cachorro do matto* (wild dog) and in some places wolf of Brazil, the *guará* (canis jubatus).

The water dog seems rather a species of *ariranha*, the latter being much larger than the former.

*Chirupteres:* in some districts, bats are superabundant.

*Rodents:* there are, besides others, the *capivara* of the genus Hydrochoerus, the largest rodent known, and its flesh is rejected; the rabbit of the genus *Lepus*, smaller than the European hare: the pirá still smaller; the coati of the genus *Nasua*, is of two species, the *coati de bando* and the *coati mundé*, it is full of tricks, mischievous and easily domesticated; the *cutia*, of the genus Chloromys, is much bigger, and like the foregoing, rodent, and except the capivara all their flesh is excellent. The *paca* (spotted cavy) is still bigger than the cutia, and if not the best, one of the best game in Brazil, and is easily made to breed in enclosures. *Caxinguelés* (squirrels) etc. are much smaller and are despised for that reason as objects of the chase.

*Edentates* (toothless): the *tamandua* (anteater) has the first place; there are three species, the *tamandua bandeira* (the great antbear), *tamanduá mirim* and another not described; it feeds much upon ants; it does not attack, but rather flies from aggression; but tired of running, and resistance opposed to it, it becomes ferocious, and the dog which persecutes it or the imprudent hunter who gets within its reach, die from being squeezed in its horrible embrace: the ounce itself that seizes it if embraced by it is also killed; but the creature also encounters its own death in the embrace it gives, which does not relax and consequently suffocates itself. The *tatu* (armadillo) of many species, from the *tatu assu* or *canastra*, which reaches the size of a full grown pig to the *tatuim*, which is the smallest; it shelters itself under ground, in holes which it digs rapidly with its nails; its hunting affords a most savoury morsel, and is only less appreciated for being so easy and trivial. The *preguiça* (sloth) of the

genus Bradypus, is the symbol of slowness; it takes a day to climb the tree on the leaves of which it feeds, and allows itself to be taken or killed without offering any resistance, or hastening its movements.

*Pachydermata:* the *anta* (tapyr) and the wild *pig* represent the order; the anta (tapirus americanus) is the biggest bodied animal of Brazil, it is prodigiously strong, but of a timid spirit; its flesh is disliked by many, and, also, it is considered by others most savoury. The *porcos do mato* (wild pig) belong to the genus Dicotyleo; there are various species, the most known being the *caititús* and the *queixadas;* these with the ounces are the objects of their greats hunts, and that of the *queixadas* (so called from the tusks protruding from their jaws) is not without danger.

*Ruminants*: deer abound, which completes the great hunting of the country; there are sundry species, from the smallest to te greatest, and antlered; some inhabit the plains, and wilderness, others the forests.

*Cetacea:* there are whales etc., grampuses, in great numbers, *peixe-boy* (cow-fish) which is seen in the Amazonas measuring 4 metres in length, and others still larger, which feed on the herbage on the banks of the rivers, and giving to primitive industrial labor a copious yield of oil, and beef, which is rejected at good tables, but which the poor avail themselves of.

*Marsupials:* the *gambá* (opossum rat) presents itself and it disgusts some, others consider it in the light of delicious game, and a most specious dish.

## BIRDS.

In the ornithology, the richness of Brazil is extraordinary and most various, from the eagle which descends from the Andes to the humming bird, a marvel of beauty, of

delicacy and grace. Let us mention some of the birds of *rapine:* hawks abound, the carrion vultures etc.

*Birds:* besides the humming birds which belong to the genus *Trochilus* and *Ornismya*, the following distinguish themselves as soft and greatly appreciated songsters, to wit, the *sabiá* of divers species, the *garauna*, the *encontro*, the *bicudo*, the *canary*, the *gaturamo* of various species, the *avinhado*, the *patativa* &c., many of them also being commendable for their beautiful plumage.

*Zygodoctyli: picapáo* (wood pecker); the *curucous*, and besides others the *papageios* (parrots), a most numerous family, rich in kinds and species, from the great *ararás* (mackaws) to the *periquitinho* (or little parroquito love birds) which are not larger than a canary.

*Gallinaces: jacu* and *jacutinga*, of the genus *Penelope*, are of many species, the *mutum* of the genus *Crax*, also of divers kinds. The family of the Perdix, comprises an infinity of species known, being almost all of the genus *Tinamus;* they are the partridge, the quail, the different *inambús*, the *zabelé* or *juó*, the *macuca* of the size of a large fowl, the *capoeiras*, which keep together in flocks. The pigeon which also form a part of this order present numerous species, from the *trocaz*, handsome and fleshy, to the graceful and loving little *rola* (doves).

*Grallatores* or birds of the river banks: there are the *emas*, of the genus *Rhea*, the *seriemas*, of the genus *Microdactylus*, almost equal to the former, and of the size of a turkey, but with a neck and legs much longer; they persecute and kill the snakes; the *jalurú* of the genus *Mycteria*, of which there are many species; the *jacamim*, the *socó*, the heron, the *garça*, the *saracura* (watch hen), &c.

*Palmipedes:* geese, ducks, *marrecas* (wild ducks), *irerés*, &c.

## REPTILES.

*Chelonians: turtles, tortoises,* &c. Of turtles there are of sea of the genus Chelonia, of fresh water or river of the genus *Emys:* and those of the land, of the genus *Testudo.* With the exception of one or the other species, they are all much prized for the table.

*Saurians*: *jacarés* of the genus *Alligator,* according to Dr. Emilio Maya, *lagarto* (lizard), *sinimbú*, &c.

*Ophidians:* (snakes): the *giboia* (python), and the *sucuriuba* (boa constrictor) belong to the genus *Boa,* and to this same genus, and also to the genus *Coluber* belong many other snakes which are not venomous; but without being so, the two former may be fatal to encounter on account of the prodigious force with which they seize the largest prey, and little by little swallow it: happily man easily avoids and kills them. Beyond those *genera,* the Brazilian *Herpetologia* is sadly rich: the venomous serpents are numerous, and some most virulently venomous. Among the most terrible is principally distinguished the *surucucu*, of the genus *Trigonocephalus*, and the *cascavel* (rattle snake) of the genus Crotalus: the first has a croak at the extremity of its tail: it frequents dark and dump places, and follows furiously, taking great springs in doing so, the man who touched it or awakened it from its sleep; its bite almost always results in death: the *rattle-snake* equally deadly at least announces itself angrily, making the rattle at the end of its tail to be heard. After these the *jararaca*, and many others are really dangerous to the life of man; they however only bite when hurt or trodden on, and almost all take to flight timorously before they bite, if they are not touched, or immediately after. The great danger is always in the carelessness of the victim; for all those snakes, and the *surucucu* itself are easily killed by the blow of a switch on the spine.

*Batracchians:* are many; but offer little interest; frogs are considered by some excellent, as alimentary food.

## FISHES.

The Brazilian Ichthyology comprises numerous species of fish. In the sea, the best consist of the *mero*, *merote*, *garoupa*, *bijupirá*, *robalo*, *badeja*, the *tainha*, which presents itself in shoals, and the salted roes of which are an object of commerce, and besides many other species, less dear and less sought after in the market; there are an extraordinary quantity of sardines in the bay of Rio de Janeiro, which need not to envy those from Nantes. In the lakes bordering the sea, and which periodically open their bar to it, the good fish which are received into the lakes on such occasions, and which get into a new or modified element become still more savoury to the taste. In the great rivers and even the smaller ones, fish of all kinds abound. In the waters of the Amazonas, and in those of its confluents, Baena points out nearly 80 species. In other rivers of the first and second order, in the lagoons, in the lakes, in the rivulets, it is greater or less, but the fishing is certain, and any one who likes may fish, where and when he may wish. The best fresh water fish are the *surubi*, the *robalo*, *bagre*, *mundubi*, *pirunambú*, &c. It is here obligatory to mention the *poraqué* or electric fish of fearful power in its discharge when any one touches it; the paraqué is the *gymnotus electricus.*

To finish for once and all with this already tiresome and still most deficient notice on the animal kingdom of Brazil, it is necessary to put on one side the *Zoophytes;* of the *Mollusca*, we barely make mention of the polvos (polypi), oysters, shellfish (or sea slugs, &c.), the abundance of which is extraordinary; not make capital of the *Annelides*, only mentioning among the *Crustacea*, the *prawns*, *crabs*, &c. in prodigious quantity, forget the *Arachnides*, and the *Myria-*

*podes*, to consider in preference among the insects, some which require special notice.

The ants are of divers species, some of which notably noxious to orchards, and even to great agricultural interests, as no small trouble and care is required in exterminating them. The mosquitos are still more troublesome, principally to the voyager on rivers, not only at night, but also at certain stations by day, although less so. The hornets and wasps, are not wanting, some tormenting the animals as in Europe, the others furiously pursuing, and stinging the animal or man which touches its nest.

But as a compensation for those hurtful insects others abound, which are of considerable utility; insects beautiful, brilliant and of varied colors, which are made use of, by being set in jewels, and fancy ornaments, are many; the bees of which there are sundry species deserve to be more valued in Brazil than they are, their rearing and education have only been followed on a small scale; and now the very easy propagation of those from the old continent, are causing those of the country to be neglected. The rearing of those is certainly very advantageous, on account of producing a greater quantity of wax; those of Brazil however offer a counter poise to that quality of improvement, in making honey of very much superior quality, as the unbiassed and grave Saint Hilaire recognized and wrote it to be, and as France clearly manifests, where they are endeavouring to acclimatize the good Brazilian bees.

In the marvellous and as it were fantastic and most varied abundance of butter flies, some give notice in the cocoons from which they have emerged the silken thread which will not be long before it enters the market to the advantageous profit of individuals, as shall be explained in the following chapter.

As for the rest which could only be added in a very incomplete state, the scanty and poor specimens of the

*richest* collections contained in the museums and cabinets of natural history, both public and private, in England, France, and Germany, &c. tell it.

In what has just been shewn, the riches of Brazil in the three kingdoms of Nature, that is, in the magnificent and extraordinary opulence of its soil, a wonder of spontaneous treasures, which no country possesses united in that great degree, is stated in a modest description, and that trebly deficient in order that above all, the extraordinary grandiloquence of truth shall not compromise and prejudice the verisimilitude, in the opinion of those who do not yet know the marvels of Brazilian nature, and therefore have a right to be slow in belief of the exposition of the marvellous.

# CHAPTER X.

## Industry, Agriculture, Commerce und Material Progress of the Country.

Brazil is not yet properly a manufacturing country, she will, however, become so, and that on the greatest scale; for besides full liberty of all kinds of industry being guaranteed to her, among the natural productions of the country, the *materia prima* of every industry which is attempted to be explored in the civilized world, and all the agents that chemistry can offer, are to be met with. For the present the fruitfulness of the soil, concentrates the greater part of the hands in the pursuit of agriculture which recompenses the labor bestowed prodigally, and in whose bosom commerce is nourished and brilliantly flourishes.

Even so, and in the last universal exhibition in Paris in 1867, although the fact was shewn very insufficiently, there already exist and prosper, industrial art, manufactories, such as, chemical, of optical and nautical engineering, and surgical instruments, founderies, oil cloth, carpet, and varnished leather, carriage and car, saddle and harness, varnish, candle, soap and oil manufactories, distilleries for liqueur, breweries, vinegar factories, the making of artificial feather flowers, crystallized preserved fruits of the country, potted provisions, glass ware, brown paper, paper hanging and paste board, of snuff, tobacco powder, of cigars and cigarettes, of writing ink, of grease, cheese, of salted fish, pisciculture, *extractum carnis*,

many of which gained medals in that universal exhibition, and distinctions attesting the perfection or excellence of their products.

Among the fabrics of woven cotton are conspicuous those of *S. Aleixo*, and of spinning those of *S. Thereza* in Rio de Janeiro; others in the provinces of Bahia, Alagoas and Minas Geraes.

The *carnauba* supplies material for the fabrication of candles, the consumption of which is very considerable.

Besides other industrial employments, in their noviciate that of rope making already attempted in the last century, and up to this day little attended to, although the natural resources of the country might carry it to a surprising pitch of perfection.

For the manufacture of good, and of the best paper, the number of vegetables is unknown, and which abound, and offer a *materia prima*.

The variety of insects which furnish in their cocoons, silk thread, is still in part unknown; the woof of the cocoon, which through the intricacy of the insects winding did not offer the great facility which accompanied that of the Asiatic *bombyx*, will not longer cause the pursuit to dwindle from that disadvantage, for sundry trials and experiments, already great in number promise a wide horizon for sericulture. The Asiatic *bombyx* itself which in the past century the vice-roy, Marquis Lavradio sent to be tried in Rio de Janeiro without any sensible advantage, was tried in the same province by a great, but unfortunate and badly conducted company; the errors of unskilful management of the administration of the undertaking, were scarcely equal to the extraordinary advantages that the industry guaranteed; the Asiatic *bombyx* was got to produce six and even seven deposits of eggs per annum, when in Italy and France, they barely and exceptionally put three; and furthermore, the vegetable food, the *mulberry*, springs up, vegetates, and

prospers everywhere, and even in the worst and abandoned lands.

The seric industrial art is then destined to be one of the most delicate as well as the greatest in Brazil: in order that it may be such, it only requires capital to encourage its exploration, and intelligence and zeal to preside over that exploration, and under such circumstances, probably, the Asiatic bombyx would become merely bred from caprice, and curiosity in Brazil which could dispense with it.

Before going further it is proper to mention that the Imperial Government has subsidized some important industrial companies, and granted to those and to others, considerable favors to encourage them, as for instance, machinery, and pieces of machinery, the number and quality of which they determine, free of import duty; exemption from duty in transporting them from one province to another; exemption from export duty on all produce of factories, exported to foreign countries: exemption from military service of a certain number of workmen employed in the cotton factories.

The subsidized companies have an inspector general chosen by the Government.

These cares and favors are not sufficient to do away with the bad impression of a disagreeable circumstance. Brazil up to the present moment buys, receiving from importation, made useful and perfected by the application of foreign industry, a good part of the cotton, india rubber, and of other produce, which she exports.

But it is well that in compensation of the relative draw back to its fabrile, Brazil sees no competition of whom she may be afraid in her agriculture. The great and certainly serious steps which have been taken to prepare the country for the extinction of the slave element, and which give rise to fearful apprehensions among some people, are the sure bases of the greatest agricultural prosperity of the country.

The agrarian machines, and implements which multiply the hands in the *farms* and in the factories, and economize the time and labor, are doing away with the old routine, and are giving another view, another animation to the farms, and considerable advantages to their owners, and to the agriculturists. The absolute certainty that slavery is drawing nearly to its end, prepares people's minds, promotes and inspires the calculations of interests, and facilitates a complete gradual and prudent solution of the difficult problem, which will not produce the economical calamities, which would result from either a blind obstinacy in maintaining the cruellest and most fatal of abuses, or the violent recourse to the sword of Alexander, cutting with one single and sudden blow the Gordian knot.

Brazil may be vainglorious of the mannerin which is to be solved so complicated and perilous a question: the competent public powers legislate in the endeavour to forward the glorious work of abolition of slavery, without precipitation, and without disastrous consequences to agricultural interests; but the population which embraces the idea, goes further, and with numerous and multiplied manumissions, sanctions with their *manifest and splendid* participation the generous and brilliant principle of the abolition of the slave element. The triumph of so fine a cause is not, in Brazil, the result of the predominance of a party, nor of the energetic and imposing act of the Government; it is the expression of the national will, it is the victory of liberal principles which passed from one of the articles of the programme of the liberal party to the supreme wish of the national opinion.

European emigration which is beginning to turn its eyes to Brazil, whose natural riches exceeding all that is to be met with in the most famous countries in the world, is still incapable of comprehending it in the smallest degree, and of whose soil the fertility goes far beyond what the

European agriculturist himself of France, Spain or Italy can dream of or imagine, European immigration will naturally and necessarily bring to the American Empire, more, and more numerous, intelligent, and produce getting agriculturists, than the rough, indifferent, material, and often inimical slaves, who only work through fear, and who cannot love getting in the harvest, for they neither lose nor gain by it.

The European immigration to Brazil is infallible; for natural laws oblige it; where there are, as in Brazil, unfailing abundance, riches easily to be acquired, opulence probable by labour and economy without privations, the immigrant is sure to come; for man seeks the land which holds out to him a guarantee of greater good.

Europan immigration is therefore infallible, and it will give to agricultural Brazil the intelligent energy of the freeman, in exchange for the inert and brutal labor of the slave.

In all the provinces of Brazil, besides the offering of natural productions of the easiest and indisputed harvest, the soil more or less lends itself to the advantageous cultivation of all the vegetables of the different parts of the world; in chosen land, which for being chosen are not the less immensurably extensive, agricultural industry reaps a production which astonishes by its abandance. Fifty and more for one gathered from the amount of seed sown, is the average even of a trivial and poor harvest. On the banks and lands near to many rivers in sundry provinces, the sugar cane which is once planted, throws out shoots and is cut during ten, twenty, and even more years. Speaking of some of those fertile places reminds us that the enlightened Councillor Christiano Ottoni wrote these eloquent words: "The grandchild sees and profits by the cane planted by the grandfather".

Now considering the agriculture of Brazil in its present

state, it is seen that in the statistics of produce and of commerce, coffee, sugar, rum, cotton and tobacco predominate, which are obtained in immense territories of almost all the provinces; the tea plant, transplanted from Asia, the cocoa, vanille, and many other plants of commercial importance, meet with a like good fortune in the Brazilian soil. In some of the provinces principally of the south, wheat and barley repay the trouble of sewing with advantageous harvests; in all lands, cereals are produced in extraordinary abundance, and the mandioca from which is extracted the precious farinha of the same name.

Beyond the horizons of agriculture on a great scale there is still to be remembered that in the southern provinces the cereals and vegetables of Europe are cultivated perfectly, in the same way as in privileged zones of others: from Europe the potatoe, miscalled English, the trees and fruit bearing shrubs of that part of the world. Fig trees abound and fructify extraordinarily. The vine has all its varieties vegetating so favorably and developing itself so much that out of amusement, in more than one place, and also as an industrial experiment .in S. Paulo, the manufacture of wine has been commenced.

To give a slight idea of the indigenous and exotic vegetables which are cultivated in Brazilian gardens on account of the fine savoured fruits which they yield abundantly, the following indication of the limited number of the principal is a useful help; this indication is due to the able and well authorized M. Glaziou, botanical director of the Public Gardens of Rio de Janeiro; it should be noted that the numerous varieties of some plants such, as orange trees, pine apple plants, banana trees, maracujazeiros (fruit bearing passion flower), vine, etc., are not mentioned.

*Names of the principal fruit trees and plants cultivated in the gardens of Rio de Janeiro.*

| Botanical names | Common names | Country |
|---|---|---|
| Adansonia digitata | Baobab | Africa. |
| Anacardium occidentale | Cajueiro | Brazil. |
| Ananassa sativa | Ananaz | Brazil. |
| Anona muricata | Fructa de Conde liza | South America. |
| Anona squamosa | | Brazil. |
| Artocarpus incisa | Fructeiro de pão | Moluccas. |
| » integrifolia | Jaqueira | Moluccas. |
| Averrhoa Bilimbi | Bilimbi | East Indies. |
| » Carambola | Carambola | East Indies. |
| Barringtonia macrocarpa | | Alo Island. |
| Carica communis | Mamoeiro | South America. |
| » dodecaphylla | Jaracatiá | Brazil. |
| Cicca disticha | Vinagreira | East Indies. |
| Citrus vulgaris | Larangeiro | Asia. |
| » limetta | Limeira | Asia. |
| Cocos nucifera | Coco da Bahia | South America. |
| » schizophylla | Butiá | Brazil. |
| Cookia punctata | Vampi | China. |
| Cydonia communis | Marmeleiro | Southern Europe. |
| Chrysobolanus Icaco | Guajerú. | South America. |
| Dillenia speciosa | | Java. |
| Diospyros exsculpta | Pecegueiro da India | East Indies. |
| » Sapota | Saputi preto | East Indies. |
| » Kaki | Kaki | East Indies. |
| Durio zibethinus | Durião (still rare) | India. |
| Eriobotrya japonica | Ameixieira do Japão | Japan. |
| Eugenia edulis | Cambuca | Brazil. |
| » tomentosa | Cabelluda | Brazil. |
| » brasiliensis | Grumixameira | Brazil. |
| » Michelii | Pitangueira | Brazil. |
| Euphoria Litschu | Lixia | China. |
| » Longana | Longana | China. |
| Flacourtia Ramontchi | Ameixieira de Madagascar | Madagascar. |
| Ficus carica | Figueira | Southern Europe. |
| Fragaria sylvestris | Morango | Europe. |
| Garcinia Mangostana | Mangostão | Asia. |
| Genipa americana | Ginipapeiro | Brazil. |

| Botanical names | Common names | Country |
|---|---|---|
| Jambosa vulgaris | Jambeiro branco | East Indies. |
| » malaccensis | Jambeiro roxo | East Indies. |
| Labatia macrocarpa | Abricó | Brazil Amazona. |
| Lucuma Caimito | Abio | Antilles. |
| Malus communis | Macieira | Europe. |
| Mammea americana | Abricó das Antilhas | Brazil Amazona. |
| Mangifera indica | Mangueira | East Indies. |
| Mimusops balota | Abricó | East Indies. |
| Moquilea tomentosa | Oiti | Brazil. |
| Morus nigra | Amoreira | China & Japan. |
| Musa paradisiaca | Bananeira | East Indies. |
| » sapientum | Bananeira | East Indies. |
| » Cavendishii | Bananeira anã. | East Indies. |
| » discolor | Bananeira roxa | East Indies. |
| Myrtus cauliflora | Jaboticabeira | Brazil. |
| Olea sativa | Oliveira | South Europe. |
| Passiflora edulis | Maracuja | Brazil. |
| » macrocarpa | Maracuja | Brazil. |
| » quadrangularis | Maracuja | Brazil. |
| Persea gratissima | Abacateiro | America (Tropical). |
| Persica vulgaris | Pecegueiro | Persia. |
| Phoenix dactylifera | Bacury | Brazil. |
| Platonia insignis | Tamareira | Africa. |
| Psidium pyriferum | Goyabeira | Brazil. |
| Punica granatum | Romeira | Europe (southern). |
| Pyrus communis | Pereira | Europe. |
| Sapota achras | Saputi | America (southern). |
| Spondias cytherea | Cajazeiro manga | Otahiti. |
| » lutea | Cajazeiro | South America. |
| Tamarindus indica | Tamarineiro | East Indies. |
| Terminalia catappa | Chapeo de Sol | East Indies. |
| Vitis vinifera | Parreira | East Indies. |

The extension and development of Brazilian Commerce may be studied in the following official information which amongst other data more minute and developed, are to be found in the report presented to the legislative body in 1872 by the minister of finance.

Revenue collected by the customs of the empire in the financial year 1870—1871 produced 69,956:698$884; viz:—

| | |
|---|---|
| Importation . . . . . | 52,987 : 063$978 |
| Maritime clearances . . . . . | 450 : 265$050 |
| Export clearances . . . . . | 14,482 : 963$747 |
| Interior . . . . . | 1,375 : 800$329 |
| Extraordinary . . . . . | 139 : 321$412 |
| Deposits . . . . . | 511 : 284$368 |

The value of the foreign importation on which duty was paid for consumption was, in the same year 1870 — 1871 170,200:822$000; of national produce exported for foreign ports, it was 168,018:757$000.

At the same time in the same year, the total of vessels which entered from foreign ports, was in the different ports of the Empire 3447, measuring 1,493405 tons and 62,204 persons for their crews; and 3060 vessels departed, measuring 1,468,507 tons, and 51,455 persons for their crews. The coasting trade inwards was conducted by 4880 vessels of 1,099,133 tons and 72,443 persons for their crews, and outwards by 4564 vessels of 1,088,420 tons, and 66,983 persons as their crew.

The chief articles of national produce, and manufacture exported to foreign countries on the financial year 1870—1871 were the following with the respective quantities; viz:—

| | |
|---|---|
| Rum . . . . . | 8,507163 litres |
| Cotton . . . . . | 38,396023 kilos |
| Sugar . . . . . | 135,315318 » |
| Coffee . . . . . | 229,590341 » |
| Hides salted . . . . . | 12,442007 » |
| Hides dry . . . . . | 9,081440 » |
| Horse hair . . . . . | 499964 » |
| Cocoa . . . . . | 3,181471 » |
| Chesnuts . . . . . | 2,617476 » |
| Diamonds . . . . . | 35163 grammes |
| Mandioca farinha . . . . | 6,919512 litres |

| | |
|---|---|
| Tobacco . . . . . | 16,217227 kilos |
| India rubber . . . . . | 4,798921 » |
| Maté . . . . . | 7,633701 » |
| Gold in dust and bars . . | 316155 grammes |

In terminating the extract of this official information, it appears needful for us to say, for the enlightenment of persons less instructed in those matters, for whom this book is especially destined, that in Brazil, the financial year counts from the 1st July of one year, to the 30th June of the following, and so the above indicated official year 1870—1871 must be understood.

The slight sketch which has just been traced of the commercial picture of Brazil, otherwise deficient from the oblivion of divers articles of exportation of less importance, and of active inter-provincial mercantile relations which were not taken into account, already paints it as encouraging, and so much the more brilliant as the situation, as it is of considerable weight to remember that the free trade, and therefore exclusively Brazilian, commenced barely sixty four years since, in 1808 with the extinction of the colonial privilege and monopoly.

Brazilian commercial law is statued in a respective and special code, and in laws which complete or develop them, and for their principles which are those observed among the nations furthest advanced in civilization. In the proper chapter of this book the tribunals and the judges of the commercial court were mentioned.

The banking institutions, savings banks, insurance companies, and others, which have to do with credit and economy, are most certainly of such importance that it cannot be exaggerated in every point of view: their registry, however, shall have a place reserved for them in the study of each province, it being sufficient to say here, that the spirit of association, and of undertakings of that order, goes on, in Brazil, increasing in development,

which can only be explained by the confidency felt in the future greatness of the country.

The means of communication, vivifying arteries of industry, of agriculture, and commerce, are not wanting; but they are still insufficient for such a wide spreading empire; Nature gave them to her in the course of her innumerable and majestic navigable rivers, but even now, some of these require to be explored, or demand costly labor of art, or intermediary railway lines which shall complete their most extensive navigation, interrupted by dreaded falls; roads are increasing in all the provinces: it is, however, clear that their number cannot as yet satisfy the just exigencies of the population disseminated over such vast territories: the *normal* roads are few; and cannot be many, because they depend on the outlay of enormous capital in a country which first claims a right to others much cheaper, although much less perfect, to the far off centres of populated places which produce the fruits of agriculture. Those who blame the defective system of roads in the provinces of Brazil, judge absolutely, and do not take into due account the special circumstances of so vast an empire.

But the feverish and patriotic heat for railways ought to disarm the censure of the most exacting.

Some moments yet before arriving at the iron rail, it is important to remember that the communication of Brazil with Europe, twenty years since took a month to effect, and now the voyage is measured by days, for the transatlantic lines of steamers from England, France, Germany, Belgium, Italy and the United States of America, are the bearers every week of news, and are the intermediate instruments of commercial interests. Between the capital of the Empire and the provinces of the north and of the south there are lines of steamers navigated by companies subsidized by the State, and besides these, other intermediate,

such as the *Amazonas*, *Araguaya*, and from Montevideo to Cuyabá in Matto Grosso.

Besides these lines of more general and political interests, are many others which by sea and the rivers connect the provinces, and municipalities of each province, as will be seen in the proper study, which forms the subject of the second part of this humble book.

It is now proper to make simple mention of, and name the completed railroads, those still in progressive development, others beginning to be constructed, and others in a state of organized undertaking, or in project, with the hope of an animating and flattering result.

Before all — the Pedro II. railway, with its cradle, initial point, head and heart in the capital of the Empire; it passed over the *Serra do mar*, on the highest point of which it approached the heavens and there received order and the direction of Providence, descended to the Parahyba, crossing it, after making a conquest of its valleys, and with a fixed eye on the S. Francisco, the immense, and enriched by branches which detach themselves from it, arrives at *Porto novo* da Cunha, giving a free traffick of 312,22 kilometers, and a nett revenue in 1871 of 7,44 per cent on its capital.

Of *Maua:* straightened in its short limits, did nevertheless manage in 1871 to surpass by 8:700$350 the receipts of the previous year 1870. Nevertheless this pleasant railway will be entirely done away with, if the Government should start another branch from the first section of the D. Pedro II. railway to go to Petropolis direct.

Of *Cantagallo:* goes up the serra of Nova Friburgo to be extended to the municipality of its name; the traffic from the foot of that Serra to the port of Villa nova gave in the last year, a balance equivalent to 6% interest.

The railway from Nicterohy to Campos in the province of Rio de Janeiro, in a few weeks will join that

of the Port of Villa-Nova, and both are naturally destined to become joined, forming two great branches of *Macahé* to *Campos:* is in the commencement of its construction.

All these railroads run through the province of Rio de Janeiro, and that of D. Pedro II. has its initial station in the heart of the capital of the Empire.

Of *Santos* to *Jundiahy*, in the province of S. Paulo, prospers and will prosper still more with its branches now constructing, or in project: the balance of the last half year covered the amount of interest guaranteed.

Of *Jundiahy* to *Campinas* a prolongation of the foregoing: in March 1872 it opened its traffic to within a league on this side of its terminus.

Of Sorocaba in S. Paulo: is intended to connect the capital of that province with the Iron factory of Ipanema. Its construction will commence shortly.

Of *Antonina* to *Coritiba* in the province of Paraná: it will be 83 kilometers long: the works are in a forward state of exploration.

*Between the City of Porto Alegre, and the municipality of S. Leopoldo* (Hamburger Berg): about the end of November 1871, the works of this railway of the province of Rio Grande de S. Pedro do Sul were inaugurated.

Of *Bahia* to *S. Francisco* in the province of Bahia: in reference to the year 1870, the balance increased in the following year to the amount of 17,999$278.

*Of the Recife to S. Francisco* in the province of Pernambuco: the year 1871 was a bad one for the traffic which felt the effects of the diminution of the crops; but even so the receipts exceeded the expenditure by 263,457$563. Between Maceio and the Recife railroad, in Pernambuco and Alagôas; it is still in project, and the undertaking is already constructed for.

*Central of the province of Alagôas:* it is contracted

for, with the favor of important guarantees, like the foregoing.

*Of Parahyba do Norte to Alagôa-Grande:* in project, and with important privileges guaranteed.

*Between Parnahyba and Iguaraçu*, in the province of Piauhy, merely in project.

Of *Baturité* in Ceará: this is contracted for with a guarantee of 6% on a sum of 800,000$000 destined for its construction.

Of *Caxias* in the province of Maranhão: it is being explored.

Of *Madeira:* there is a contract celebrated with Colonel George E. Church, who organized the company in London which is to construct it within the term marked, under penalty of losing the considerable advantage granted by the the Imperial Government.

Besides these subsidized railways with guarantees and favours with which the general and provincial government promote and aid them, others are proposed, projected and studied, with the ardour which the knowledge of the astonishing natural richness, and the assurance of the progressive increase of agricultural production of the country inspires.

Accompanying the principal lines of railroad, and also independent of them, the electric wire extends, doing away with space and time in its telegraphic communications. Within three years Brazil will be connected with Europe by the marvellous tie of the electric current carried through the Atlantic and merged in its bosom: in a much shorter space of time, doubtless, another telegraph line will unite the south of the Empire with that which already works between Montevideo and Buenos Ayres, and through the same Brazil will communicate with the Platine republic, and with that of Paraguay, and with those of the Pacific. In the meantime the Telegraphic department is organized, and

in active service, having its directory, work shop, and central station in the *Praça da Acclamação*, in the capital of the Empire: the extent to which the line reaches and the tariff of the telegrams may be appreciated in the following official memorandum.

## TABLE OF TELEGRAMS.

The simple telegrams, that is, those which do not exceed 20 words, are subject to pay 1$000 sent to a distance not greater than 200 kilometers.

1st. The telegrams containing 21 words up to 30 must pay half the amount more than the simple telegram, or of 20 words. The telegram containing 31 words up to 40 must pay another half more than this last one, and so on progressively, increasing half of the simple telegram for the increase of 10 or less than 10 words.

2nd. The rate will increase according to the distance in the following manner.

| | | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| From | 1 | to | 200 | kilom. | the | simple | telegr. | must | pay 1$000 |
| » | 200 | » | 400 | » | » | » | » | » | 2$000 |
| » | 400 | » | 600 | » | » | » | » | » | 3$000 |
| » | 600 | » | 800 | » | » | » | » | » | 4$000 |
| » | 800 | » | 1000 | » | » | » | » | » | 5$000 |
| » | 1000 | » | 1300 | » | » | » | » | » | 6$000 |
| » | 1300 | » | 1600 | » | » | » | » | » | 7$000 |
| » | 1600 | » | 2000 | » | » | » | » | » | 8$000 |
| » | 2000 | » | 2400 | » | » | » | » | » | 9$000 |
| » | 2400 | » | 2800 | » | » | » | » | » | 10$000 |
| » | 2800 | » | 3200 | » | » | » | » | » | 11$000 |
| » | 3200 | » | 3600 | » | » | » | » | » | 12$000 |
| » | 3600 | » | 4000 | » | » | » | » | » | 13$000 |
| » | 4000 | » | 4500 | » | » | » | » | » | 14$000 |
| » | 4500 | » | 5000 | » | » | » | » | » | 15$000 |

3rd. The telegram in a foreign language or in cypher, must pay double the preceding rates.

4th. Whoever wishes to ascertain the correctness of the telegram and requires that it should be repeated by the receiving station must pay double the sum.

5th. Double the rate must equally be paid by the party who presents the telegram to be passed after sun set until sun rise of the following day and who may obtain a preference for urgency.

The southern line, as we have just seen, goes as far as the province of Rio Grande do Sul, the southernmost province of the Empire, and that of the north, still much less extensive, will shortly extend to Pernambuco; the wires from that province, and those from the extreme point of that of Rio de Janeiro will meet.

It is not necessary to insure that which the law of progress imposes; the line of the north will get to the provinces of Pará and Amazonas much earlier than perhaps is now presumed.

Besides the *Department of the Telegraphs*, there is in Rio de Janeiro the *Company of the Telegraph lines in the interior*—which has its central station in the Praça da Constituição, and *stations* in the following places of Rio de Janeiro, and Minas-Geraes, viz:—Iguassú, Petropolis, Entre-Rios, Parahyba do Sul, Parahybuna, Luiz de Fóra, Rio Novo Mercês, do Pomba, Espera, Ouro Preto.

To be opened: Porto Novo da Cunha, Cantagallo, Macahé, Campos, S. João da Barra.

The tariff of the telegrams is as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| The first 30 words as far as 150 kilometers . . . | 1$000 |
| For each 10 words or fraction of 10 additional words | $400 |

Each cypher is charged as a word, also each single letter when alone.

Telegrams in a foreign idiom, and in cypher shall pay double, as likewise those telegrams which are sent at night.

Telegrams sent to the interior of the city, to a dis-

tance of 2 kilom. from the central station shall pay a fixed taxe of 500; beyond this distance the despatches shall be paid for as those by a courier.

The despatches should be *legibly* written in ink and signed by the sender with a note of his address.

For the sufficient state of progress at which Brazil has arrived, the information which is met with in this chapter and which is merely indicated, is certainly not sufficient; they are, however, such as can only come within the narrow limits of a small book.

# CHAPTER XI.

## Governmental and Administrative System.

The Government of Brazil systematized by the political constitution of the Empire, Pact Fundamental, from the 25th March 1824, is hereditarily monarchical, constitutional, and representative.

The additional Act which in 1834 reformed some of the articles of the Constitution, only refers to the government, and particular administration of the provinces and municipalities with the ruling of the Empire, in the absence of any relation of the Emperor—a minor—who should possess the qualification required by the Fundamental Law; it refers also to the council of State, which said law had instituted, and which the council suppressed.

To the Chief of the State belongs the title of Emperor Constitutional, and Perpetual Defender of Brazil, and also that of the first representative of the nation, where virtually and essentially resides the sovereign power, and of which are delegates, the four political powers recognised by the constitution—these are the legislative, moderating, executive, and judicial.

The legislative power is delegated to the General Assembly and must be sanctioned by the Emperor.

The general assembly is composed of two chambers, one of the deputies, the other of senators. The deputies are chosen every four years by voters (chosen by the suffrages of the people) in the electoral districts into which the

provinces are divided, except those, which as yet for want of population, are each composed of one single district.

The senators are chosen by the Emperor, in lists of three names, resulting from the votes of especial electors, these latter having been also chosen in the first parochial election, as the others, not however presented by electoral districts, but rather by provinces, or by provinces with the votes of all their districts, and even by those who have not more than one, inasmuch as that all combine to form the senate—only differing as to the number of senators, which each one essentially elects, giving in the names of three, in which the name of the candidate chosen shall appear.

The general assembly has functions distinct from those of the particular ones of each one of the two chambers of which the said Assembly is composed—these are: to receive the oath of the Emperor, of the Prince Imperial, and of the Regent, and to fix the limits of the authority of the latter; to acknowledge the Prince Imperial as successor to the throne in their first session immediately after his birth; to appoint a guardian to the Emperor as yet in his minority, in case his father should not have named one in his will; to clear up any doubts as to the succession; on the death of the Emperor, or on the throne becoming vacant, to examine the acts of the last administration, and to reform the abuses therein introduced, and also to choose a new dynasty, should the reigning one become extinct; enact laws, interpret, suspend, and reform them, watch over the constitution, and promote the general welfare of the nation; fix annually the public expenditure, and apportion the direct taxation; to determine annually, according to information from Government the land and sea forces, ordinary, and extraordinary; to allow or to refuse admittance of foreign sea or land forces into the Empire, or within its ports; to authorize the Government to contract loans, to furnish means for the liquidation

of the national debt, and to regulate the administration of national property, and to determine alienation, or suppress public posts, and fix the salaries of same, and lastly to determine the weight, value, inscription, effigie, and denomination of the current coins as well as the standard of weight and measures.

It is a privilege of the Chamber of Deputies to take the initiative in determining upon taxes, recruiting, and the selection of a new dynasty in the case of the reigning one becoming extinct, and also in the said chamber shall begin the examining into the past administration, the reform of abuses therein introduced, and the discussion of proposals made by executive power; and lastly the impeachment of the ministers of State lies within their peculiar attribution.

To the Senate alone is given the power to take cognizance of crimes committed by members of the imperial family, ministers of State, senators and deputies during the time of sitting; to issue letters convoking the assembly, should the Emperor not have done so, within two months after the time determined by the constitution; for this a special session shall be held.

The persons of the members of the chamber of deputies, and of the senate are inviolable, as to the opinions they may utter in the performance of their functions, nor can they ever be arrested except by order of their respective houses, or in case of *flagrante delicto* of any capital offence.

The Emperor takes a part in the legislative power, inasmuch as he can put off, prorogue, and dissolve the general assembly, immediately calling another to substitute it; inasmuch as his selection of it assists in the formation of the senate, and finally because the resolutions noted and adopted by the general assembly still depend on their being laws of the Empire by them sanctioned, which he may refuse, even although temporarily, if the sovereign will of the nation

declare itself, the same subject, which in such case will be understood to be santioned, being reproduced in the same words, by the two following and successive sittings of the legislature.

The Moderating Power is delegated to the Emperor, personally, as supreme head of the nation, and its first representative in order that he may unceasingly watch over the maintenance of the independence, the equilibrium and harmony of the other political powers. The Emperor exercises it in relation to the legislative powers, choosing the senators in the manner afore mentioned, convoking on extraordinary occasions, proroguing the general assembly and dissolving the chamber of deputies, in cases where the welfare of the State shall require it, and sanctioning the decrees and resolutions of the general assembly in order that they should have the force of law, and also refusing his sanction to them; but without absolute veto; for if the sovereign will of the nation declare itself, the same matter being brought before the two successive and necessary sessions, in such event it will be understood as having been sanctioned. He exercises it in relation to the executive power; appointing and dismissing at will the ministers of the State. He exercises it in regard to the judicial power, suspending the magistrates, pardoning or changing the punishments, to which condemned persons are sentenced—and also in granting amnesty. The person of the Emperor is inviolable and sacred, and therefore is not subject to any responsibility whatever.

The principal attribution of the Executive Power consists in convoking a new ordinary general assembly within the term set down; to appoint bishops, magistrates, officers of the land and sea forces, ambassadors, and other diplomatic and commercial agents; to grant ecclesiastical benefices, and civil as well as political appointments; to direct international negotiations, form alliances offensive and de-

fensive, of subsidy, and of commerce, to declare war and to make peace, making known to the general assembly such communications as may be compatible with the welfare and safety of the State, and also those former treaties after their conclusion; inasmuch as those celebrated in time of peace, should they involve a cession or exchange of territory of the Empire or of possessions to which the Empire has a right, shall not be ratified without the approval of said assembly; to grant letters of naturalisation according to law, to confer titles, honours, military orders, distinctions as a reward for services rendered to the State, subject to the approval of the assembly the pecuniary rewards which may not be marked down and estimated by the law; to issue decrees, instructions and regulations; to determine the application of the revenues appropriated by the chambers to the different branches of the administration; to refuse or grant bene placito to the decrees of the concilios and apostolic letters, and any other ecclesiastical constitutions, which are not opposed to the constitution, and preceding approval of the assembly, if they should include general disposition; to provide all that may be necessary to the internal and external safety of the State according to the constitution.

The number of the ministers of State is determined by law and at present consists of seven, and are the following, of *House Affairs*, *Justice*, *Foreign Affairs, War*, *Marine*, *Finance*, and of *Agriculture*, *Commerce*, and *Public Works*.

The Judicial Power is independent, and consists of judges and juries; the latter declare upon the fact; the former put in force the law. The district judges are named for life, but when responsible for abuse of power and transgressions, are judged by the Courts of Appeal of the respective districts; they cannot lose their place ecxept by sentence.

In the provinces of the Empire with their fixed districts

different Courts of Appeal are established to decide upon causes in the second and last instances.

In the capital of the Empire in addition to the competent Court of Appeal, their exists a supreme Court of Justice composed of Judges in law chosen by seniority from the Courts of Appeal, receiving the names of Counsellors; this court grants or refuses revisals in causes according to law, takes cognizance of the crimes and errors of office, committed by their members, by those of the Court of Appeal, the employés of the diplomatic body, and of the presidents of the provinces. The public ministry, the regular organization of which was lost sight of by the wise architects of the political monument of the constitution, still wants a complete system which shall take in and suffice for all degrees of judiciary hierarchy; the lawyer of the crown, sovereignty and Public Treasury, a magistrate of high category, the crown lawyers in the provinces, the fiscal officers of the National Treasury, and the public prosecutors in the districts of each province exercise however before the respective authorities functions and perform services of the utmost importance in the transcendent horizon of this ministry.

In civil causes, and in the penal ones civilly commenced, judgment by arbitration chosen by the parties concerned is admitted.

No suit is commenced without its being made apparent that means of reconciliation have been tried between the parties in dispute, and for this purpose there are in all the parishes, the judges of peace elected by the voice of the people for the same term and in the same manner, as the aldermen of the municipal chambers are elected.

The Roman Catholic and Apostolic religion is the religion of the Empire; all other religions are allowed with their domestic or private worship in houses appropriated

for this purpose, but without any external appearance of a temple.

This mandate of the constitution, well received by the public opinion, is developing itself in the most practical, liberal manner possible, because the Government does not throw obstacles in the way of the teaching of protestant doctrines, which is carried on in meetings almost public, and where the gaining over of some proselytes is shewn, besides this, even in the legislative body, it has been proposed, and initiatory measures have been taken, which shall assure the liberty of conscience of each one in honour and justified interest of the individual and family of as many as inhabit, or may come to inhabit Brazil, who nevertheless, on that account, will not cease to remain Roman Catholic and Apostolic by reason of the immense majority of her inhabitants, both national and foreign.

The capital of the Empire, or the metropolis and its municipality, in conformity with the additional act, have nothing to do in common with the governing and particular administration of the province in which it lies.

The higher branches of education (besides the primary and secondary ones granted in the municipality) are exclusively comprehended in the supreme jurisdiction of the General Government of the Empire under the care of the Minister of the *Empire;* the *Post Office* under the wide attributes of the Minister of *Agriculture*, *Commerce*, and *Public Works;* the *Administration* or *general finance* system under the charge of the Minister of *Finance*, *Diplomatic* and *Foreign Affairs;* the *Police* which is concentrated in the Ministry of *Justice*, and lastly the *Public Force* under the Ministry of *War* and *Marine*.

The *judiciary* as well as the *ecclesiastical division* which also belong to the executive power, and are subject to the Ministers of *Justice* and of the *Empire*, are also under the dependence of the provincial element; inasmuch as it be-

longs to the legislative assemblies of the provinces to create parishes, towns, and districts, to extinguish or transfer the seat of them, and to alter territories and their boundaries.

The civil judiciary, and ecclesiatical divisions are to be rated according to the following tables which are the last officially exhibited.

The civil and administrative division consists:

1st Of 20 Provinces into which the Empire is divided, besides that of the capital or municipality of the court, there being in each one, as already mentioned, a president delegated by the general government, and an assembly representing the legislative provincial authority, the municipality of the capital in its municipal administration being entrusted to the respective senate of the municipal chamber and to the minister of the Empire.

The 20 provinces are *Amazonas*, *Pará*, *Maranhão*, *Piauhy*, *Ceará*, *Rio Grande do Norte*, *Parahyba*, *Pernambuco*, *Alagôas*, *Sergipe*, *Bahia*, *Espirito Santo*, *Rio de Janeiro*, *São Paulo*, *Paraná*, *Sta. Catharina*, *São Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul*, *Minas Geraes*, *Goyaz*, and *Matto Grosso*.

2nd Of the Municipalities (cities or towns) into which each province is subdivided, their economical administration, as already pointed out, are performed by their economical chambers. The corporate towns, at present existing in the Empire, are in number 618.

3rd Of the Parishes, of which each municipality is composed, the citizens thereof exercising their civil and political rights under the authority of the judges of peace, and of the functionaries designated according to law.

The Judiciary Division includes:

1st The Supreme Court of Justice consisting of 17 members, one of whom is its president chosen by the executive power.

2nd Four Courts of Appeal, viz: —

1st That of Rio de Janeiro, whose jurisdiction extends

to the provinces of Espirito Santo, São Paulo, Paraná, Sta. Catharina, Rio Grande do Sul, Minas Goyaz, Matto Grosso, having twenty six chief judges.

2nd That of Bahia with sixteen chief judges, including in its jurisdiction the province of Sergipe.

3rd That of Pernambuco, fifteen chief judges, including in its jurisdiction the provinces of Alagôas, Parahyba, Rio Grande do Norte, and Ceará.

4th That of Maranhão, with 14 chief judges, including the provinces of Piauhy, Pará, and Amazonas.

3r Four Tribunals of Commerce being located in the same cities as the courts of appeal.

4th Two hundred and forty five Districts of which 139 are of the first instance, 78 of the second, and 28 of the third, each one having its competent district judges and public prosecutor.

5th Three hundred and seventy nine places of municipal Judges.

6th Justices of Peace of parishes, and of districts in which some of those are divided.

7th The Jury or the Tribunal of the Jury, the number of which must be equal to that of the districts, and must meet, being convoked by the district judge according to the mandates established by law.

In addition to these courts and judges, there are also in the capital and principal cities separate district judges of commerce, of feitos, of auditorias of war, and marine, and in the capital a district judge of the orphans court, and a civil one, there being also seven especial orphan's judges in other cities. In the capital and in the city of Rio Grande there are two, instead of one, public prosecutor.

The police duties attached to this judiciary department follow the subjoined scale.

1st The Chief of Police in the capital, and in the capital of each province, chosen from amongst the doctors

or bachelors in law, who have four years practiced at the bar or of administration. All the capitals have one public prosecutor.

2nd The Delegate of Police, one in each district, except that of the capital which has three, and each with subdelegate in each parish.

3rd A Subdelegate in each parish.

4th Police Inspectors in all the districts into which each parish is divided.

The chiefs of police are appointed by the minister of justice; the delegates, and subdelegates by the same ministers in the municipality of the capital, and by the presidents of the provinces in the latter, the inspectors of districts by the delegates proposed by the subdelegates.

The ecclesiastical division consists of the following.

The Empire represents one ecclesiastical province and has,

1st One Archbishop of Bahia as metropolitan.

2nd Eleven subordinate Bishopricks which are as follows:

1st That of Pará and Amazonas.

2nd That of Maranhão and Piauhy.

3rd That of Ceará.

4th That of Pernambuco, *Rio Grande do Norte*, *Parahyba*, and *Alagôas*.

5th That of *Bahia* (arch-bishoprick) and Sergipe.

6th That of *Rio de Janeiro*, *Espirito Santo* and *S. Catharina*.

7th That of *São Paulo*, and *Paraná*.

8th That of *São Pedro de Rio Grande do Sul*.

9th That of *Marianna* (partly of the province of Minas Geraes).

10th That of *Diamantina* (partly of the province of Minas Geraes).

11th That of *Goyaz*.

12th That of *Cuyabá* (Matto Grosso).

In the names underlined, the denomination of each one of the bishopricks is indicated, and amongst them that of the arch-bishoprick, which does not prejudice the conclusion arrived at of eleven subordinate bishopricks in section 2nd heading the 12 paragraphs.

3rd 1411 Parishes, in which are divided the arch-bishoprick and the bishopricks as will le seen in the particular study of each province.

4th The Curacies included in various parishes.

The archbishop and bishops are appointed by the executive power, but the nomination is, as is imprescribably observed in all Roman Catholic countries, subject to the preconisation of the supreme Chief of the Church, the Pope.

The vicars of the parishes are chosen by competitive and scientific examination as to capability in ecclesiastical matters, and proposed by the bishops or archbishops in lists on a sliding scale of merit as proved by the candidates and presented to the Government who will select those they prefer. The curates are appointed by the bishops and archbishops in their dioceses, without interference on the part of the Government of the State. The Government and the particular administration of the province, each one of which possesses its president and vice-presidents appointed by the executive power, are managed by the district or municipal chambers, and by the legislative and provincial assemblies, the first are elected, as we have before mentioned, every four years, by the votes of the citizens in parochial meetings, and the second every two years, by the same electors of the deputies of the general assembly, and therefore in electoral districts such as these.

The municipal chambers consist of nine members or aldermen in the cities, and of seven in the towns, and he, who obtains the greatest number of voters, becomes the president; it is in their province to look after the municipal expenditure and police, having in order to carry out

their duties, their own particular revenues, their code of bye-laws, their procurators, and their fiscal officers.

The provincial legislative assemblies have a greater or less number of members according to the population of each province, there not being any, according to the law in force, with less than 20, nor more than 45. It is in the province of these assemblies to establish regulations as to the civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical divisions of the respective provinces, and as to the removal of their capital, public primary and secondary instruction, when, why, and how disappropriation of property on account of municipal or provincial utility can be effected; proper municipal administration and economy preceding the proposals of the chambers; fixing the provincial and municipal taxes, as long as these latter do not prove prejudicial to the general imposts of the State, division of the direct contribution by the municipalities of the province, and fiscalization of receipts and disbursements; the creating and suppression of municipal and provincial official posts and fixing the salaries of same; public works, roads, and inland navigation of the provinces, which do not belong to the general administration; building prisons, work-houses, and houses of correction, and their discipline; asylums, convents, and any other associations either political or religious; and upon the subjects and manner, how and why the presidents of the provinces may appoint, suspend, and dismiss provincial employés. Besides this the same assemblies may organize their internal regulations; determine the respective police force; authorize the municipal chambers and the provincial government to contract loans, regulate the administration of provincial property; promote in conjunction with the general assembly and Government the compilation of the statistics of the province, the teaching and civilizing of the Indians, and the establishment of colonies; decide when the president of the province has

been impeached, whether the trial should or should not be carried on, and whether he should or should not be suspended from his functions; in the cases where according to the laws his suspension ought to take place, decree the suspension and even the dismissal of the authority against whom there is complaint involving personal responsability, he being heard and allowed time and opportunity for his defence; exercise in conjunction with the general government the right of dispensing for a fixed time some of the formalities which guarantee the individual liberty in cases of rebellion or invasion of enemies; finally watch over the preservation of the constitution and of the laws in their provinces, and petition the general assembly and government against the laws of other provinces which injure the right of their own. The municipal expenses are fixed upon the estimate of the respective chambers, and the provincial ones and those of the police force upon the estimate and information of the president of the province.

Confining themselves to those powers, the provincial assemblies do not exact laws on account of the declared prohibition of the additional act upon the duties of importation. With exceptions of the resolutions relative to the police, economy, receipt, expenditure, and municipal employés, and those concerning the case of impeachment of the president of the province; to the suspension and dismissal of authorities to the organization of home regulations, and the preservation of the constitution, and of the laws, and specified right of representation, all the other provincial assemblies must have, to be lawful, the sanction of the president of the province, who may refuse it, giving his reasons for his refusal, within ten days, beyond which time the sanction is considered as understood, although not given.

The unsanctioned resolution is returned to the assembly who again discusses it, and again send it to the president.

if by two thirds of the votes of the members of the same it be adopted, such as it is, or according to the reasons alledged by the former, and in such case, a fresh refusal to sanction being given, the assembly will cause it to be published, as a law, which will enter into full force, unless it offend the rights of some other province in the matter of roads, public works, inland navigation, of treaties made with foreign nations, whatever may be the refusal to sanction; for then the president of the province lays the project sent back to him by the assembly before the general government and assembly.

The members of the legislative provincial assembly are inviolable as to the opinions they pronounce in the exercise of their functions.

The presidents of the provinces represent in the said provinces the general government, with limited powers, and are executive chiefs in the provincial administrative system.

The municipal chambers declared by their constitutional law of 1828 merely administrative, and even in this good vivifying jurisdiction reduced by the additional act to an excessive state of dependency which lowers them, exercise, nevertheless, a political influence by the vote of their presidents, who assist at the municipal councils in the first judgment of appeals in the trials for qualification of citizens voting, and of elegible electors.

The justices of peace in the parishes still more lawfully influence the political action, inasmuch as they preside over the board of electoral qualification, and are the first official founts of information for that organizing of voter's lists besides the presidency of the electoral assemblies pertaining to them.

Before concluding this rapid and doubtless deficient exposition of the political and administrative system of the government of Brazil, it is indispensable and essential to

point out at least the civil and political rights which the constitution confers on Brazilian citizens.

Following the authorized division of the profound lawyer and writer in the law the marquis S. Vicente in his work *Brazilian Public Right*, those rights are in *relation to liberty*:

The right of the freedom of thought, and of its communication.

On conscience and religion.

On locomotion, on travelling or emigration.

On work or industry.

On contracting and on association.

As regards individual security:

The right of inviolability of refuge or of one's house.

On not being arrested without the charge being made.

On release without imprisonment.

On legal formalities attendant on the order for imprisonment.

On the abolition of arbitrary punishment and of judgment of commission.

On guarantee emanating from the independence of the judiciary power.

On the guarantee for the justice of civil and criminal laws.

On the abolition of tortures and cruel punishments.

On the guarantees relative to prisons.

On defence and resistance.

In reference to equality:

Equality of citizens to be admitted to public offices.

Of proportional equality in contributions.

Of the abolition of privileges merely personal.

Of the abolition of privileged courts.

In reference to property:

Right of plenitude in possession and enjoyment of the property.

Of conditions and legal formalities of desappropriation in cases of *necessity* and *public utility.*

Of guarantee of the public debt.

Of the property of inventions or productions.

Of the secrecy of letters.

Of rewards for services rendered to the State.

In reference to the rights of claim, complaints and of petitioning:

Right of request or claims to the legislative and executive authorities.

Of complaint against infraction of the constitution.

Of petitioning on the social rights of legislation or of the administration of the State.

Besides these, the Brazilian citizens yet possess the work:

On right of responsibility of public employés.

On the guarantee of public assistance.

Of primary and secondary gratuitous instruction, and that of schools and universities.

On the prohibition of the suspension of the Habeas Corpus, otherwise granted exceptionally in cases of rebellion and invasion of an enemy.

And yet again as rights of a political nature:

That of voting in primary elections.

That of eligibility in primary and secondary elections.

That of reform of the constitution.

It is evident that in a great part these rights are subordinate to legal restrictions indispensable to the general welfare of society, and to the undeniable conditions of the public good and of the order of the State, but restrictions and conditions which are prescribed by the very constitution of the Empire and in laws which develop their solid principles and apply them.

## CHAPTER XII.

Supplementary to the preceding.

Having made an exposition of the system of government, and of the higher administration of the Empire of Brazil, more enlarged information respecting the principal administrative services, already noted as belonging to, or in the jurisdiction of the various ministries of the state, ought naturally to follow.

The *higher branch of instruction* belonging exclusively to the *general powers*, consists, at present, of two *schools of medicine*, one in the city of Rio de Janeiro, and another in that of S. Salvador of Bahia; of two *schools of law*, one in the city of S. Paulo, capital of the province of the same name, and another in the city of Recife, the capital of Pernambuco; of a *military school* with a three years course of study, exclusive of preparatory teaching which is annexed thereto; of a central school, which is properly for mathematics, physical and natural sciences, and of the *naval school* for boarders and day-scholars, the former on board a vessel of war, and both being taught nautical affairs by theory and by practice; this school like the forementioned has likewise annexed to it, its system of preparatory teaching. The three last institutions of the higher branches of instruction are established in the capital of the Empire.

The postal service has ramifications in all the provinces, towns, and parishes, having its central directory in the capital where besides the urban and rural service, the former

being incessant, and the latter daily, there are inland lines of post or periodical, according to the distances and facility of communication; never less, however, than ten times per month, and lines of mails by sea, dependent on the departure and arrival of both national and foreign packets, both of which are calculated and marked.

In the city and its suburbs, there are *twenty seven agencies* where stamps and stamped envelopes are sold, and at the doors of which are to be seen boxes to receive by day and night, letters for all parts of the capital, as well as for the interior and for foreign parts.

The postmen of all the districts of the city are furnished with passage stamps to frank the letters which may be entrusted to them.

The letters which circulate within the Empire pay a postage of 100 reïs for a single letter of 15 grammes or fraction of 15 grammes. The increase of postage for letters that weigh more than 30 grammes is always at the rate of double postage for 30 grammes or fraction of 30 grammes which they may exceed.

Town letters only pay half of that tax. Letters not prepaid, or insufficiently so, are sent by the post office; subject however to double postage which will be paid by the receiver at its destination.

The small parcels, samples of merchandize, books, journals and printed matter, pay twenty reïs per 40 grammes or fraction of 40 grammes.

By means of an additional, and unchanged payment of 200 reïs, letters and the other objects pointed out may be registered, and a receipt must be received from the receiver of the same.

Financial position; prominent in which is certainly the public debt; but in considering it, it is necessary to remember that the tremendous war with Paraguay which was prolonged for almost six years, barely finishing in

1870, cost the Empire, besides the noble blood of her sons that was shed, more than four hundred and sixty thousand contos, very considerably augmenting that debt.

The state of the National Treasury shewed in the financial year of 1871—1872 in resources 129,733:896$000, in liabilities 100,757:747$000.

The budget of expenditure and receipts presented to the chamber by the minister of finance was

| | |
|---|---|
| Expenditure, estimated at . . . . . | 90,662:740$617 |
| Receipt, » » . . . . . | 97,000:000$000 |

In the expenditure the following items relative to the national debt are included:

| | |
|---|---|
| 1st Interest, cancellation, and other expenses, of the foreign debt, belonging to the estate at par of exchange (27) . . | 9,918:968$889 |
| 2nd Interest and cancellation of the home funded debt . . . . . | 17,387:030$000 |
| 3rd Interest of the debt inscribed before the emission of the respective bonds and payment in money of sums under 400$000 | 50$000 |

This expenditure therefore amounts to more than a quarter of the public receipts; but the national fund debt, otherwise annually under cancellation, is externally 140,673:777$778, internally 254,930:700$000, which sum still amounts to more than four hundred thousand contos with the debt previous to 1827 and with that to be inscribed, and that already inscribed.

The proposed budget for the expense of the financial year 1873—1874 embraced the different ministries with the following amounts of expenditure:—

| | |
|---|---|
| The ministry of the Empire . . . . . | 6,061:180$661 |
| » » of Justice . . . . . | 4,681:771$030 |
| » » of Foreign Affairs . . . . | 927:486$666 |
| » » of Marine . . . . . | 4,688:884$003 |
| » » of War . . . . . | 14,867:538$395 |

The ministry of Finance . . . . . 40,096:923$322
» » of Agriculture, Commerce, and
Public Works . . . . 14,338:956$340
In the expenditure of this last ministry was
destined for *crown lands* and *colonization* 1,518:580$000

The public force properly so called consists of the land and sea forces: that of the land is composed of the regular army, or of the line, until now recruited by force, and by voluntary engagement, and of the national guard on active service, and in reserve, composed of citizens annually qualified to enter the same to do civic duty. — In the Navy recruiting is practiced as in the army; the officers, however, are taken exclusively from the respective scientific school.

The posts in the Army are: ensign, lieutenant, captain-major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel, brigadier, field-marshal, lieutenant-general, and marshal of the army. In the Navy and corresponding with those posts are midshipman, second lieutenant, first lieutenant, commander, captain of a frigate, post-captain, chief of a division, chief of a squadron, vice-admiral, and admiral.

In the National Guard, the posts are obtained by the nomination of the general government, and without right of promotion, being ensign, lieutenant, captain, major-instructor, lieutenant-colonel, and commandant superior.

In the land-forces the full complement of the corps of the three arms of the army, according to the plan of the last organization, approved by decree of 12th August 1870 comprising the corps, it is formed as follows: —

*Special corps* (general staff, corps of engineers staff of the 1st, 2nd and 3rd class, ecclesiastical department, and medical corps): 1 marshall of the army, 4 lieutenant-generals, 8 field-marshals, 16 brigadiers, 25 colonels, 38 lieutenant-colonels, 54 majors, 122 captains, 140 first lieutenants, 70 second lieutenants (468 officiers), 173 men; total 641.

*Artillery* (battalion of engineers — 1 regiment of horse artillery with 6 batteries — 5 foot battalions with 8 companies): 216 officers, from 1 colonel to 92 second lieutenants, and 4110 men; total 4326.

*Cavalry* (5 regiments of 8 companies, 2 corps of 4 companies, a squadron of 2 companies, 4 companies in garrison with 71 men each): 270 officers from five colonels to 108 second lieutenants and 2882 men; total 4152.

*Infantry* (6 battalions of infantry, of 8 companies in garrison with 78 men in each): 809 officers, from 21 lieutenant-colonels commanding to 352 ensigns, and 15,354 men, total 16,163.

Total of all the corps 1773 officers, 23,509 men = 25,282.

It should be observed that the supernumerary marshal of the army, H. H. the Comte d'Eu, who, moreover, has received no kind of pay, notwithstanding he has almost always been in active service, has not been counted in the tables from which this information has been gathered.

It is still necessary to state that the corps of the three arms of the service have not their full complement, according to the map of the last organization, there being in 1872 only 1516 officiers, 14,726 men, total 16,242.

The National Guard is divided into 274 superior commanderies, comprising:

*Cavalry:* 112 corps, 96 squadrons, 10 detached companies shewing in 1872 the force officially recognized, of 27,715 national guards.

*Artillery:* 11 battalions, 9 sections of battalions, 4 detached companies, shewing in 1872 the force officially recognized of 5938 national guards.

*Infantry:* 279 battalions, 44 sections of battalions, 15 detached companies, 1 section of a detached company,

shewing in 1872 the force officially recognized of 26,0467 national guards.

*Reserve:* 79 battalions, 144 sections of battalions, 97 detached companies, 57 sections of detached companies, shewing in 1872 the force officially recognized of 68,790 national guards.

Which gives a total of 362,910.

This is merely the sum of the qualifications of the citizens who are national guards received by the Goverment up to the month of April 1872, there being still to receive the respective tables from some of the provinces, and the estimate of the force of that civic militia, of seven superior commanderies, and of one squadron of cavalry.

The report of the respective ministry (that of justice) in 1871 computes, presumably, the national guard force of all the provinces to be 614,241 national guards thus classified:

*Cavalry:* 112 corps, 96 squadrons, 10 companies, 49,478.

*Artillery*: 11 battalions, 9 sections of battalions, 4 companies, 7746.

*Infantry:* 279 battalions, 44 sections of battalions, 15 companies, 1 section of a company, 464,870.

*Reserve:* 79 battalions, 144 sections of battalions, 97 companies, 57 sections of companies, 89,147.

The naval force of the Empire, consisted in May 1872 of the following vessels: — Iron clad 10, monitors 6, steamers (built of wood) 40, transports (steamers) 8, corvettes on the mixed system 2, sailing corvettes 2, barque 1, brig 1, schooner brig 1, schooner 1, yachts 2, bomb vessels 2.

Among the iron clads, the corvette Sete de Septembro does not figure, as she is still on the stocks.

The above named vessels, had 349 officers of different grades, and were manned by 5099 able bodied, and other seamen.

Every thing induces the belief that in the course of

this said year 1872 there would be introduced in the navy notable improvements required by the new and extraordinary state of gunnery, of armour plates, and therefore of the whole navy.

The Navy table is the following

| It is composed of the following: | there are actually: |
|---|---|
| Admirals 1 | 2 |
| Vice-admirals 2 | 3 |
| Chiefs of squadron 4 | 5 |
| » of division 8 | 9 |
| Captains post 16 | 18 |
| » of frigates 30 | 31 |
| » lieutenants 60 | 66 |
| First lieutenants 160 | 120 |
| Second » 240 | 43 |
| Pilots | 68 |

Of the two admirals, one H. H. the Duke of Saxe is supernumerary, and has received no kind of pay whatever, althoug he has already served actually as the vice-president of the naval board.

Of the three vice-admirals, one is so by brevet.

In the ecclesiatical corps of the navy, there are at present 20 chaplains being all supernumeraries.

The medical staff consists of 1 chief-surgeon who ranks as post-captain, 2 surgeons of squadron, 1 being in rank brevet post-captain and the other holding rank as the captain of a frigate, 6 surgeons of division of whom 2 are brevet captains of frigates, and 4 lieutenants-captains (commanders), 20 first surgeons of whom 4 are brevet commanders, and 16 first lieutenants, 40 second surgeons of whom 2 are brevet first lieutenants and 38 second lieutenants, otherwise 26 second surgeons are wanting to complete the table, 15 apothecaries of which number 5 are contracted for, 3 are first and 3 are second apo-

thecaries holding rank as second lieutenants and 4 apothecaries that of midshipmen.

In the Finance Department, are to be counted 40 officers (clerks) of the 1st class, 13 of the 2nd, 25 of the 3rd and 38 of the 4th, there being vacancies in all the classes, in which this special service is subdivided.

In the corps of warrant officers in the table of which the number is not complete, are reckoned boatswains of the 1st class 7, vacancies 5, boatswains of the 2nd class 16, vacancies 14, boatswains mates 48, vacancies 32. There are, nevertheless, some supernumeraries; engineers of the 1st class 15, vacancies 3, of the 2nd class 10, vacancies 22, of the 3rd class 11, vacancies 25, second-engineers of the 1st class 24, of the 2nd class 24.

On terminating this notice of the Brazilian navy, it would by unpardonable to forget its matrix, the already glorious nursery of the officers of that navy. The respective school is divided into boarders and day-scholars: a course of humanities prepares and fills with light the intelligence of the young academicians, who afterwards pass on to theoretical and practical studies to the profession to which they dedicate themselves, imbibing them from the books, and from the lessons of the professors, and applying them in the nautical manlluvres and evolutions, and in voyages of instruction, which are annually repeated.

First as *aspirants*, and in time, and by right of their merit, proud *midshipmen*, which young academicians have already given to their country a just foundation for pride; wherever they have gone to in voyages of instruction, they have known how to honour their country, by shewing their discipline, their morality, and by the learning acquired at their age; they have already given proofs of what they can do and are worth in struggling against tempests, and in the agonies of shipwreck; they have already shone as fearless and most distinguished, in the horrid blaze of fire,

which they have known how to fight against; and the best and the brightest of their blazonry, beardless heroes in the last war have already given to Brazil admirable examples of inexceedable bravery, of conquerors and of sublime martyrdom. One of them, the young, almost child—Greenhalgh was killed whilst embracing and defending the national flag; if others of the same *school* did not imitate him in the grandeur of his fall, they knew how to equal him in stupendous acts of bravery, and there was not a single one who failed in the heroism, and, at times, the temerity of his colleagues, companions and brothers.

The acts of surprising intrepidity, of heroic and absolute sacrifice of life in the tremendous and as it were fantastic episodes of the Paraguayan War added to the natural bravery of the young officers of the Brazilian navy a sure legacy, obligation and conscience of inexceedable bravery, which lights up in them, both from duty and pride, of goodly heirs, the flame of heroism.

There is no patriotic exaggeration in this opinion; let who will study and question, the spirit and frank expansion of feelings in the young naval officer, as well as in the simple sailor, and in those of the soldiers of the army of Brazil, and he will acknowledge that both sailors and soldiers tolerate the hypothesis of equality: but they do not admit the superiority of valor, of constancy, and of martial daring.

---

# CHAPTER XIII.

## Civilisation and Population.

When in 1808 the Royal Family of Portugal arrived in Brazil, civilisation had already begun to dart her rays, and even shining by the reflection of the diamond light of scientific attainments and genius of some of this country. Nor was it as of old, the isolated or individual splendour of genius of Rocha Pinto, the historian, of Gusmão, the inventor of balloons, of Antonio José da Silva, the inspired and popular author or more correctly the comic dramatic poet, surnamed by an excusable exaggeration of vanity the Portuguese Plautus.—Dating from some time past, at nearly the close of the 18th century, these and others their equals, who started as oases of enlightened and superior intellect in the immense and greedy deserts of darkness and ignorance in Colonial Brazil, substituted by the natural, fraternal advance of sciences, letters and arts made more manifest by the brilliancy of many celebrated Brazilians who flourished at that time.

In like manner, in Rio de Janeiro, Master Valentim, the architect, was the right hand of the vice-roys, then undertaking vast works, and realised poems in stone, which still remain to be admired; in Minas Geraes, poets of great acknowledged merits were lost through joining the conspiracy of "*Tira dentes*"; the priest Santa Rita Durão had already written the Caramurú, José Bazilio da Gama the Araguayan; a society of encouragers of art, to which also

belonged the individual afterwards known as the Marquis of Maricá, the Brazilian La Rochefoucauld—and the priest, afterwards Monsenhor Pizarro, one of the presidents of the Brazilian assembly, and author of the voluminous *Historical Memoirs of Rio de Janeiro* in nine volumes, was broken up by the cruel and asinine persecution of the Vice-roy, Count Rezende, the *Seminaries* became pregnant not only with many well instructed priests, but also with men who cultivated science and the belles lettres. Friar Leandro, the author of the *Flora Brazileira*, and in connexion with it, the precursor of Martius, and of his scientific successors, had already shone out, followed by many neophytes teaching botany under the shade of those beautiful alleys of the Public Gardens which the genius of Master Valentim contributed to the fame of Luiz Vasconcellos; the captaincy of Brazil took the lead in the onward path to civilisation, assisted by the means and institutions, which, more than any other, her position as capital for two centuries and a half enabled her to carry out, the captaincy of Minas Geraes gained the title afterwards given to it of the *Brazilian Italy* on account of their taste and proficiency in the latin tongue and music; the Marquis de Pombal, and subsequently D. Rodrigo de Souza Coutinho, afterwards Count Linhares, ministers of the crown of Portugal, were already well acquainted with the worth and distinguished talents of many of the sons of her rising colony, appointing them to important posts with the most laudable contempt for routine and petty jealousies, and to sum up all, in the University of Coimbra the students of Portuguese America encreased as it were by one accord, and shed lustre on the Mother Country, by distinguishing themselves.

Dom João, the Prince Regent, and the Royal Family shortly after emigrated to Bahia, where they became acquainted with José da Silva Lisboa, afterwards Viscount Cayrú, a jurist, lawyer and political economist, such as

England and France might be proud of, in Rio de Janeiro; great orators such as Caldas, S. Carlos, S. Paio, Montalverne, besides some others, who forced a fastidious and devout Prince to abandon the luminaries of the Lisbon pulpit;—poets, such as the same Caldas, São Carlos, and Eloy Ottoni, whose works have immortalised them; profound theologists, amongst others for example the priest Luiz Gonçalves; composers of music, and musicians, who first and foremost of all proudly stands forth the priest José Mauricio, a sincere follower of the severe school of Haydn, so remarkable for masterly style, and marvellous for the inspiration and rapidity with which he composed, that the country which gave birth to Mozart wished to adopt him as her son; painters—such as Raymundo and José Leandro, the portrait painter of incredible yet nevertheless unquestionable memory, for he possessed the talent of producing a perfect likeness of an absent person, if he had once seen and looked at him with attention.

Other captaincies contained modest men of incontestable merit, remarkable persons, who shall be made known opportunely. Rio Grande do Sul already had her future Viscount São Leopoldo, a distinguished literary man, statesman, and author, as well as skilful and undaunted warrior. S. Paulo justly prided herself on the well merited reputation which the learned José Bonifacio obtained in Europe, whose brothers—Martim Francisco, celebrated for his austere virtue, and Antonio Carlos, who for his parliamentary eloquence was styled the Brazilian Mirabeau, like José Bonifacio himself deserved well of their country. Pernambuco which had been the birth place of Moraes, the celebrated lexicographer of the Portuguese language, also afforded the last resting place and consolatory asylum for his old age. These names which we have mentioned are sufficient to serve as an example of the great number of celebrated men, science, letters and arts.

The capital of the Portuguese Monarchy for thirteen years established in the city of Rio de Janeiro, took considerable advantage of the intellectual and material progress of Brazil: the Academy of fine arts was founded by the powerful combination of celebrated artists, such as Le Breton and De Bret, and others who were engaged in France; primary instruction was much more extended, and secondary instruction was developed; the regular teaching of medicine and surgery was established, so that in the Portuguese cortes not a few deputies of the old colony, now the new kingdom, shone out with vigour and brilliancy, and in the Brazilian assembly, and during the infancy of the Empire, there appeared many illustrious men, such as Paulo e Sousa, a living academy without academical titles. Evaristo who joined to the enlightenment imbibed from the *books of his shop*, and to the knowledge of the humanities that patriotism and good sense which rendered him one of the most worthy citizens, and the *head* of the political periodical press; besides these, and others whose intelligences had not acquired their placentas in the academies of Europe, there appeared a numerous pleiad of learned and remarkable thinkers nourished in the bosom of Coimbra, statesmen, orators, administrators, men who could study, produce and draw up the constitution of the Empire, and the criminal code which obtained for them the applause of eminent European authorities, the trials, the additional act, laws for municipal organization, of the financial system, and other great works of public utility. It would be well that the name of those illustrious Brazilians who were renowned in those times should be inscribed, in order that they should not pass into oblivion; but it is sufficient however to call to mind the three Andradas, Alves Branco, Vasconcellos, Carneiro de Campos, Feijó, Marquis Paranaguá, and the Marquis of Maricá, the Viscount Cayrú, Vergueiro, Lino Coutinho, the Marquis Olinda, the Marquis d'Abrantes, the Marquis

de Paraná, Ledo, the Viscounts Albuquerque and S. Leopoldo.

The establishment of the superior scientific schools and academies of the Empire, the increase relatively considerable which primary public and private instruction has already received and goes on receiving daily, the development of the daily and periodical press in all the provinces, and the incontrovertible truth that there exists not any science, art, or specialty of science and art, which have not their devoted cultivators, and their writers either of voluminous works, or of memorials and works of less importance, the scientific, literary, industrial societies, which maintain themselves, and are being organised, the spirit of interprise which begins to declare itself in the capital, in the cities, and in the interior, establishing courses of night lessons for children and adults, public libraries, an increased taste for reading, rapid and easy communication daily improving, and lastly, in conclusion the religious tolerance of the constitution, and of the minds of the people, the most extensive freedom of the press, which freely discusses, inculcates, and diffuses all sorts of opinions and principles, even such as are adverse to the system adopted by the Government, and what is yet of transcendent consideration, a greater security, and more efficacity, than was formerly to be observed exercised by the authorities in suppressing crime throughout the widely extended distances of the interior, and the pleasing smiling picture of domestic tranquillity during almost a quarter of century, during which time there has not been a single outbreak, or open rebellion, — all these facts loudly proclaim the degree of civilisation which Brazil has attained.

In stating this we do not wish to institute comparison with Germany, France, England, the North American Union and some others the most ancient and flourishing; vanity would be ill judged in Brazil, the duty of whose Govern-

ment and people is rather more carefully to watch over and obtain the elements and fonts of progress, and civilisation, which she does not yet possess, than to boast of the little, or relatively much which she possesses through her stupendous aggrandizement.

The lines of railroads which now open are in a forward state of progress, being pushed forward in the direction of Minas Geraes and S. Paulo, as well as in the northern and southern provinces; the wires of the electric telegraph, which principally advance along the seacoast, and awaiting the transatlantic line, should make us bear in mind the thousands of miles which have yet to be extended from one to the other different points. This as well as all else has to be taken into consideration. At each step or flight of progress, at each flash of new light, or victory obtained by civilisation, the battle cry of—We have gained, let us now pause!—would be a mistake;—the appeal — not yet enough! advance!—is a bounden duty!

Customs like those of the patriarchs of old, and free from patriarchal customs the rapid progress of civilisation throughout the whole of Brazil, it gladdens and makes the heart feel proud to note the feeling or sentiment, or that benevolent custom of hospitality which every one experiences in this country, in the generous openheartedness of character, inborn of the people.

European customs, hotels, conveniencies and resources easily commanded in the capitals, and opulent cities of the provinces dispense with and place aside one of the most prominent features of that character which is justly called patriarchal.

The throne of Brazilian hospitality is chiefly and ostensibly in the interior of the country. A traveller known or unknown finds board and lodging in the residence of the farmer or landed proprietor, who affords them less as a favour than as a duty which he ought to fulfill.

In the interior of Brazil, when the *landed proprietor* delineates the dwelling house which he orders to be built, he never forgets to have what he designates as the *Apartments for the guests*, or visitors, three or more of whom may come to the table where there is more than enough, and the hospitable roof shelters all.

In order not to fall under the suspicion of exaggeration when offering the remarks which are of unimpeachable veracity, it comes now very apropos to make mention of a curious custom, which to speak truly is not general, still actually in force in some of the Estates in the municipalities of the interior of the province of Rio de Janeiro, but which in its exceptional observance sanctions the precepts of hospitality generally respected, and which may also be known in other provinces,—seeing that the people are of the same origin, and are endowed with the same virtues.

*In some of those Estates*, the bell is daily rung at meat times announcing the hours of breakfast, dinner, and supper, in order that wayfarers *known* or *unknown* should receive by the warning of the bell the kindly invitation given by the daily Amphitryon to chance and unknown guests.

Not a few European travellers have experienced and enjoyed the benefit of this hospitality, a characteristic feature of Brazilians dwelling in the interior, and the unjust epigram and the ungrateful and malevolent estimation of some who retributed with mockery and scorn the rustic but expansive hospitality of the Brazilian farmer, have as yet been unable to destroy or render insignificant that high-souled sentiment which ensures gratuitous food and shelter, and other favors to those who travelling, arrive at the estates of the rich or modest agriculturists.

The population of Brazil is vaguely calculated at between eleven to thirteen millions of inhabitants; a base, however, is wanting which might inspire full confidence in those calculations; the last official statistic which is found

in the report of the minister of the Empire in 1872 reduces the population to ten millions, ninety five thousand, nine hundred and seventy eight inhabitants, of which eight millions, six hundred and twenty four thousand, one hundred and fourteen are free, and one million, six hundred and eighty three thousand, eight hundred and fifty four slaves. For as it has an official character, and no other presents itself based on better and more investigated information, that statistic competently authorized shall be adopted in this work, and followed in the study of the provinces, as it has just been done, for the same reasons in the study of *Brazil in general;* but it is proper to state, that if the necessity and fitness of an official base determined its adoption, when there is wanting trustworthy data for any other calculations, it is not less certain, that those of the Government being faithful, because all the competent local authorities of the provinces and of the capital of the Empire have an exclusive part in the statistical work, it is nevertheless much below the reality, as we are learning every day, even in the city itself of Rio de Janeiro.

The statistic is, as every one knows, one of great difficulty as to precision and reliance, in any of its branches, and in Brazil where it commenced only a few years since to be duly attended to, it still requires a perfectly regular system, which shall offer positive and incontestable data. The statistic of the free population meets with difficulties which cause a deficiency through fear of the forced recruitment, the same in the national guard, and in the negligence and unfounded fear of the more ignorant class of people: that of the slave population is only now being regularly appreciated; that of the housed Indians in villages, and of the tame Indians who are in frequent communication with the populated places in the interior, it is almost null; so that it did not surprise one to see recognized the involuntary errors of that one in a new and better official statistic,

that shall be in this book followed and respected, and that the population of the Empire be raised to at least thirteen millions of inhabitants, besides the Indians still uncivilized.

The population of Brasil presents distinct types or varieties; the Indian of the country, or the aboriginal, copper coloured; the *European*, or white man, and his descendants; the *mameluke*, springing from the mixture of the white man an the Indian; the negro from Africa introduced into the country since the foundation of the hereditary captaincies in 1534, and afterwards, and the *mulato*, or coloured man, born of white and black parents, and of their descendants, and who become progressively whiter. The aborigines are as at first refractory to civilisation; the negroes from the coast of *Africa*, who still exist, are in the same category; but the *creoles*, offspring of the latter, show at once remarkable intelligence, and the mixed are on a par with the Europeans and their descendants in capacity, force and extent of their intellectual faculties.

Equal in the sight of the law, equal by their reasoning faculties, by philosophy, and by constituted rights, every Brazilian citizen springing from these varieties of the human race, yet hold a foundation of civic glory, which each one of such varieties reckons in Brazil heroes or remarkable men, whose names are registered in the book of annals of a grateful country. The *Indian* may be proud of Martim Affonso *Tebyriça*, of Martim Affonso *Ararigboya*, of deserved merit, and celebrated in S. Paulo, and Rio de Janeiro, and of the far famed *Poty*, the *Camarao*, of *Don Felippe*, one of the principal captains in the wars against the Dutch, and already renowned before that war; of the negroes stands out pre-eminent Henrique Dias, the unshaken, valiant, devoted, and self denying Greek Cynegiras, who, in the heat of battle engaged with the Dutch conquerors, had quickly amputated his shattered left hand in order that he might continue to fight on with his right, which

remained; the mameluke is shewn in the indomitable backwoodsman of São Paulo, who made a conquest of and took from the Indians, rescued from the desert one half of the immense territory of Brazil, and before these the intrepid and conquering Jeronymo de Albuquerque *Maranhão*,—who was the restorer of Maranhão,—forcing the French invaders to surrender after defeating them; the mixed or coloured man is shewn in *Calabar*, infamous for having deserted the colours of his country, but so superior in the art of war to his contemperoraries, that he changed the aspect of the Dutch war, at its first outset, by the simple fact of his culpable desertion to the enemy's camp; and beyond and superior to Calabar, are magistrates, orators, authors, legislators, distinguished, prominent and honoured in all positions of society, and in every thing which can elevate the Brazilian citizen.—Of the white man, or of the descendant from the European it would be useless to speak.

In this first and constitutional equality Brazil contents herself with the sacred principle of the rights of all, despising accidental circumstances which do not affect or determine qualities, and the general harmony and public tranquillity are confirmed by the assurance that there does not exist amongst the people any civilised classes, and that the social, civil, and political horizon of some is the horizon of all.

It would be an unpardonable piece of forgetfulness to close this chapter without for a few moments taking into consideration the Brazilian Woman;—she, who, as a mother, exercises such important influence in the civilisation and future of nations. The ancient, anachronic, and oppressive Portugusse customs which compelled the ladies, mothers and daughters to live secluded from society, shut up in the depths of the domestic hearth, only visible to relations and intimate friends, and only to be guessed at

in the churches and public places of amusement through their rich or simple mantilhas, and their thick veils, those rude customs of woman's captivity for whom as a general rule the father selected a husband, have long since been condemned and banished from Brazil, where in the capital and in the cities, as regards ladies and families, the same formalities of a good accessible and polished society are observable and practised as in the most civilised cities of the old world, and in the interior, without so much elegance and luxury, and ceremony of the cities, simplicity, expansive ideas, and frank reception are met with, which in truth excuses the want very often felt of more delicate or artificial manners.

It is beyond doubt that in Brazil, the education given to women is not yet such as to prepare her for arriving at the intellectual and moral height of her grand social mission, as first and absolute guide of the understanding and feelings as a queen over infancy, and the soul of the hearts of future citizens, who will be answerable for the future of their country;—but in what country of Europe is Woman educated under this transcendent point of view?—In this matter Brazilian carelessness equals European carelessness.

Nevertheless, exactly as the civilized world adopts and constitutes the instruction and education of woman, it spread and is developed in the capital and provinces of Brazil, in public free and private schools, which are under the yealous fiscalisation of the government.

Studied without the least prejudice or patriotic partiality the Brazilian woman in her character and her predominant qualities is every where more religious, more self denying, more heroic in the high sentiments of the heart, and with all her weaknesses, always superior to man, and besides that, the Brazilian woman, whether rich or poor, is the type of the devoted mother, and perhaps

carries to excess her maternal love; no one can take her child from her during the first years of infancy, and should she be unable to suckle her child, the wet nurse is called in, remains under her eyes, and not for a moment is the hypothesis to be imagined of a child reared and brought up away from her sight or from the incessant and minutely scrupulous affection of its mother.

The closeness of the ties in Brazilian families, which has no exceptions, arises from this fact: there do not exist in any country brothers more or so brotherly, as are the Brazilian brothers. This sensitive and religious maternal tenderness is also a manifestation shewing the force of conjugal love and fidelity. The sensual passions and instincts in all nations and countries tell of and conceal lamentable acts of giddiness and falls; the burning climate of Brazil should facilitate the increase, or show a greater number of examples of breach of chastity, but the education and character of the Brazilian woman challenge inquiry as to their virtue and correct behaviour, and can bear comparison with any women of the most moral nations.

Intelligent but obedient, sympathetic but chaste, high spirited but yet restrained; beautiful and vain, yet true to the principles of morality and duty, the Brazilian daughter never entirely detaches herself from her parents, as a wife she ever watches over her love, and even when neglected and unloved, she honours for her honour's sake the name of her husband, and as a mother, words are insufficient to render justice to her sublime qualities,—beyond apogee, the infinite in the imagination of tenderness, of weaknesses, and indulgences, in a word of the unfathomable depths of maternal love.

If there be in this world any woman who, desirous of celebrating her birth place, may wish to symbolize the *mother* of family, that woman is the Brazilian. As in general, she does not contest with the women of many

other countries in competent instruction and in love of letters and arts, so the Brazilian woman regarded in the light of daughter, sister, wife and mother is the type of the most devoted love, and in this fourfold worship of her family, she does not yield in tenderness, fidelity, in retiring grace, in virtue to the most noble and virtuous women, who in any other country or community shed the beneficent and dazzling light of their example.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

### Colonization and Religious Instruction.

The necessity for European emigration to Brazil is intuitive; the easily obtained and immediate benefits, the most assured abundance, the very probable wealth that Brazil holds out to European immigrants, are indisputable, and will be carried to the last stage of conviction through the shining light, which bursts forth as a gradual knowledge of the country as well as that of its laws, of its civilisation, and of the examples, happily very numerous, of the well to do immigrants, and of the great fortunes, which those already established, and who have in a few years become proprietors more or less considerable, enjoy — is acquired.

Of the old colonies founded at the expense and under the protection of the Government, that of the Swiss established by Dom João VI. in 1820 at *Morro Queimado* (a point of the Organ Mountains in the province of Rio de Janeiro) which immediately took the name of the town of Nova Friburgo, received a few years afterwards a reinforcement of German colonists: to every one of them were granted lands; but the swiss principally preferred in Cantagallo and in Minas Geraes a more fertile soil than that of the admirable healthy New Fribourg: nevertheless many became rich in this same place, and in Cantagallo and Minas Geraes, all those, wo proved themselves laborious,

made their fortunes. The Brazilian families intermarried with those of the immigrants and colonists; the colony lost its distinguishing feature; but the Swiss and German names perpetuate themselves, esteemed and honoured through descent, and New Fribourg prospers and is sought as a sanitarium. In Rio Grande do Sul, the colony of *S. Leopoldo*, exclusively German, which was founded in 1824, is a striking example of prosperity obtained in spite of a rebellion, which during ten years convulsed that province.

All the colonists were well off, many became rich, some left or still enjoy opulence. S. Leopoldo commences a new era of still further development, and is encouraging the creation of other nuclei of German colonies. Petropolis, the seat of another improvised German colony, placed on the summit of the Estrella range of mountains (another point of the Organ range) on crown lands in 1845 likewise lost, and that almost immediately and most completely, its colonial features: raised to a city, connected by a carriage road to the foot of the mountain, and from thence by railroad of 17,5 kilometres in extent to the port of Mauá, in the bay of Rio de Janeiro, and from thence to that capital by steamboat running daily. Petropolis is, principally in the summer months, on account of its cool situation and mild climate sought by predilection by the highest and wealthiest of the society of the capital: the Emperor has a palace there, rich families have pleasant houses: the *rustic city* is bathed by limpid streams, is composed of contiguous quarters, each one of which preserves the German name given to it by the colonists who live happily, with their protestant ministers, their schools and their labours: horticulture for them is one of their best sources of gain: some of them placed at a distance from the seat of the colony explore the wide field of agriculture. Nevertheless we must say that Petropolis was not the

most advantageous place for establishing the nucleus of a colony.

Of more recent date there are in Brazil following state colonies, which cannot be confounded with the foregoing.

The *Blumenau Colony*, situated in the parish of São Pedro Apostolo, in the municipality of Itajahy, province of Sta. Catharina, founded in 1852 by Dr. Hermann Blumenau, became Imperial Government property in 1860, under the direction of its founder.

The area of its territory comprises 595,450 hectares (of 10,000 square metres) of which 5450 are cultivated. Its population which in 1870 was 6188 advanced in 1871 to 6329 souls, the greater part of whom belonged to the German nation, and among them some Swiss, Danish, and 100 Brazilian families; among the total number, 3218 are males, and 3111 females. The deaths in 1871 amounted to 50 persons of all ages, the births were 335. At the seat of the colony there are 476 houses solidly built, of which 5 for receiving guests, capable of accommodating more than 300 immigrants. The produce consists in grain, cotton, coffee, arrow-root, sugar, rum, tobacco, butter, cheese and honey. Local consumption being supplied, the export of the surplus produced 132,300$000. The importation which consisted in foreign merchandize amounted to 165,000$000.

The colony possesses an *Agricultural Society*, which has done much good by means of instruction, exhibitions, and besides that by its library. The means of communication and carriage which become daily more developed, present already 80,906 metres of carriage road, 315,195 meters of bridle paths, and 302 metres in bridges of wood or stone. The colonists in the same year 1871 paid to the national treasury, on account of debts arising from the purchase of lands, and advances made to them, the sum of

8,017$270. Steam navigation became established at the port of Itajahy, by means of a tug which conducts lighters to be loaded at the colony. A growing vineyard, a cotton spinning and weaving factory, and in a moral point of view, schools and absolute liberty of religion complete the picture of the already hopeful and flourishing *Blumenau*.

The *colony of Rio Novo*, in the province of Espirito Santo, contains 958 persons, of which 515 males and 443 females, forming 314 hearths. In 1871 there were 84 births and 13 deaths. The produce was valued at 80,900$000— the exportation at 52,000$000, the importation at 22,240$000. The colonial area embraces 36,000,000 square fathoms = 174,240,000 square metres, of which 11,570,629 square metres have been cultivated. The produce was coffee and grain. The amelioration and devolopment of the means of communication are being studied.

The *colony of Cananea* situated in the district of Iguapé in the province of São Paulo is composed of 478 persons, of which 300 are natives, 124 English, and 54 German. The produce of their labour consists in grain, sugar cane, and tobacco: they are beginning to plant the cocoa-shrub, and the Indian rubber tree.

Faults of administration, which the Government is endeavouring to correct, have hindered the development of the colonial nucleus, which will certainly prosper once rid of that drawback, more especially when endowed with the road which to the extent of 23 kilometres will tend to connect it with its respective port.

The colony (subsidized) of *Dona Francisca*, founded in 1851 by the colonizing society of 1849 in Hamburgh, had its seat in the parish of S. Francisco Xavier of the municipality of Joinville, in the province of Sta. Catharina.

Its surface contains 218,826,080 square metres: its population consists of 6671 individuals, of whom 3401 are

males, 3270 females, having 1347 hearths. Of those colonists 1065 are Catholics, and of various sects there are 5606; Brazilians 2426, foreigners 4245. In 1871, the number of births was 209, and of deaths 88. Besides grain they cultivate in the colony sugar cane, tobacco and arrow-root. The increase of cattle is very great, as is that of apiaries. Various manufactories are in active work. There is a press which publishes a periodical in the German tongue. There are 14 schools for the instruction of children of both sexes. The colony possesses a Catholic church, a meeting house for those of the protestant faith, a house of detention, hospital, and receiving house for new colonists. The exportation in 1871 was calculated at 230,000$000, and the importation at 220,000$000.

The subsisting contract between the Imperial Government and the colonizing society being about to terminate, it was renewed at the petition of the latter on the 30th December 1871 with some important alterations, of which the principal binds the society to introduce annually, and for the space of ten years 1000 immigrants, by means of a subvention of 70,000$000 per annum, the sum of 26 thalers being over and above paid to them under the head of difference in price of passage for each adult colonist, and 20 thalers for each minor. In the meanwhile the works on the road which leaves *Joinville*, the seat of the colony, crosses over the mountain range, penetrates into the province of Parana, and will reach the banks of the Rio Negro, are in active prosecution.

The colonies of the State, and the last subsidized by the same, are limited to the above; but the sacrifices made by the State to attract immigration have been great and badly recompensed: from 1853 till 1870, the government expended in colonization service and in crown lands the sum of 12,374915$862, and in the same period only 34,737 colonists were brought into Brazil.

Inexperience explains many errors which rendered nugatory patriotic efforts and intentions, and calculations apparently well combined on the part of the Government, and on that of contractors and companies, who received large subventions: on the other hand the ignorance as to the country, of the language spoken by its inhabitants, the already impetuous current of European emigration to the United States of North America, and still other causes decided, if not the total failure, at least the paltry result of so many efforts.

The Imperial Government abandoning the following on system after system, tried without any cheering success, at length adopted one, in which is simultaneously joined their own action with the personal initiative of the contractors for the introduction and establishment of immigrants.

This system, observed in all the contracts lately celebrated, is thus explained in the report which in 1872 the minister of agriculture, commerce, and public works presented to the chambers.

"The Imperial Government, as the born guardian of immigrants and chiefly interested in their prosperity, which is indissolubly bound to that of the country, stipulated the following conditions.

"1st. Observance of the determinations of decree No 2168 of 1st May 1858 relative to the passage of immigrants.

"2nd. Sale at a lawful price and at a term of 6 years of lands adjoining or in a proximity of two leagues from the rail-road, great markets, or of other places which the Government may point out or approve.

"3rd. Free passage to the immigrants and free carriage of their luggage in the packets of the companies, or steam navigation companies subventioned or protected, and on the railroads.

"4th. Exemption from duty on baggage, utensils, in-

struments, and ploughing machinery which may belong to them.

"5th A subsidy of 60$000 to those who shall employ themselves as simple workmen, and 70$000 to partners, 150$000 to those who may establish themselves as proprietors, and half this sum to minors from 14 to 2 years.

"6th Contractors bind themselves not to exact interest from the immigrants during the first two years, and not to receive more than 6% in the subsequent years, till the fifth when they can claim the reimbursement of the debt.

„These and other favours of minor importance being granted, and barely the proof of the qualifiaction and morality of the immigrants being required, the Government likewise stipulated, that before embarking they shall declare that they do not come for account of the Imperial Government, from whom they will claim nothing besides the protection which the laws guarantees to foreigners."

In conformity with these principles adopted by the Government, sundry contracts were signed in 1871 for the introduction and establishment of a very great number of immigrants, in the provinces of Paraná, Sta. Catharina, S. Paulo, Rio de Janeiro, Bahia, Pernambuco, and Maranhão; other proposals, presented by native and foreign contractors, still depend on being considered, and besides that, the Government granted to the province of Rio Grande do Sul powerful aid in the introduction of 40,000 immigrants.

It is therefore permitted us to hope that from the immense advantages Brazil insures, from the enlightenment respecting this country spread over Europe, from the sacred right and its consequences established by the law of 28th September 1871 which declared freedom thenceforth to the offspring of the female slaves of the country, from the peace, the public tranquillity, the favour declared

by the Government, and from the spirit of the people, immediate, progressive, and in a short time quickened movement of European emigration to the American Empire, where each laborious immigrant may infallibly possess more than sufficient territorial property without any dependence whatever, at the end of five years, and property purchased at so low a price to be almost a gift, and besides that, possession at once granted through the confidence on the smallest part of the annual produce of the accredited proprietor.

On quitting this subject it is not necessary, but at all events it is as well to make known, that the mention which shall in another place be made of colonies and nuclei of colonies, which belong to the particular study of the different provinces, had not a fitting place here.

But besides the European emigration which ought and will be the source of extraordinary progress, and of the incalculable opulence of Brazil, there is a source slightly hopeful for some, and more than doubtful for others, almost a doubtful hypothesis of the acquisition of useful arms, of labourers who might be energetic and more so than foreigners, naturally adapted to the land and to the climate of the country in the religious instruction and civilisation of the savages.

Shall religious instruction be improficious?—let us abandon the discussion of the theme and let Brazil speak with the experience of the facts.

The Jesuits managed to instruct in religion, bring into villages, discipline, lord over absolutely, employ in active works daily, with systematized and admirable regularity, not hundreds but thousands of aborigines: had the Jesuits the divine privilege of giving religious instruction? . . . . even now, in very modest proportion, the capuchin friars, who are far from attaining the science and traditional cleverness of the former, afford the pleasing spectacle of suc-

cesful religious instruction imparted to the aborigines, although unfortunately very limited.

Man arrives at governing imperiously the most ferocious animals, and makes the lions and tigers bend down at his feet; why then shall he not be able to tame and civilize man himself, when found in his savage state?

No one can calculate even approximately the number of Indians who in many hundreds of family groups shelter themselves timourously in the vast interior of Brazil: they are counted by hundreds of thousands of men who could be useful, and who *vegetate* brutally, when they do not sometimes prove themselves harmful and fierce enemies; there is, however, one undeniable fact to be declared: the influence of the *Cross*, the evangelical voice, the charitable spirit of the missionary—never reach in vain the bosom of the savages.

And not only the religious missionaries, but also those who are not; but who have patience, good will, and dedication to assist intelligence, may obtain like victories. There is for example the enlightened Señor Dr. José Vieira Couto de Magalhaes, who assuming in 1870 the direction of religious instruction in the valley of Araguaya, founded the college of St. Isabel, destined for the instruction of the children of both sexes, belonging to the tribes who live in that valley: twenty one boarders, representing the tribes of the *carajas*, *cayapós*,' *gorotizés*, *chavantes*, *tapirapés*, and *guajajaras*, are already learning to read and write in that college, and affording proofs of facility of comprehension: the girls besides that, apply themselves to domestic service, and the boys in 1872 commenced learning mechanical trades. Two capuchin missionaries are employing their efforts in religious instruction.

The Imperial Government has employed in this important as well as difficult matter Italian missionaries of the above order, distributing them among the provinces, and

for that reason endeavour to invite to Brazil a greater number of those missionaries.

In the province of Maranhão, where there are four villages having the name of Colonies Indians, and nineteen partial directories, in many of which the number of these is not known, it is calculated that 12,000 are collected together in such establishments.

The system of directories is condemned from long and sad experience. In the province of Minas Geraes the respective government determined on suppressing the ancient directories, and have in project the forming of villages of Indians on a great scale, confiding in the direction and administration of the missionaries. In the valley of the Rio Doce, on the left bank of the said river, near the brooks Suassuhy Grande, and Urupuca, in a healthy and fertile locality, the first village has been established. It would be at hankless office to run over the provinces of the Empire, in order to point out some, barely small and insufficient oases of religious instruction, among the vast deserts of the boundless virgin forests.

The capuchin missionaries have, incontestably, not been able at least to approach in a slight degree the Jesuits in their mission; it is, however, right to acknowledge that they have not the science, the means, the riches, and the powerful exaggerated and fearful influence, which the priests of the company of Jesus had at their disposal in the two centuries in which they carried their triumph so high in the religious instruction of and dominion over the savage.

In order that the religious instruction be realised in the same and even in a higher degree, it will be necessary to incur considerable expense in order to aid men of recognized and efficacious capacity; but in such a way, that, besides the glory of the philantropic work, the Indian should prepare himself to become a laborious man, well

conducted and useful to his country, and not exclusively a catechumen; but the passive instrument of the absolute will, interest, material advantage, and of the audacious power of a company, which if perchance should turn its mind heavenward, had its heart at the same time rooted to the vanities, to the calculation of golden opulence, and to the greatness of the earth.

# SECOND PART.

## PROVINCES AND MUNICIPALITY OF THE CAPITAL

OF

## RIO DE JANEIRO.

Upon entering on the study of the provinces and of the municipalities of the capital of the Empire, it is fit that we should previously make the following declaration, which we are in duty and for clearness' sake bound to do.

In this second as in the *first part* of the modest book, the meridian adopted is that of Rio de Janeiro, and in the astronomical position of the provinces, as in their dimensions and boundaries, was followed, and often copied the precious teaching of the excellent and luminous *Atlas of the Empire of Brazil* of the enlightened senator Senhor Candido Mendes de Oliveira.

The statistics are especially taken from the last report of the ministers of State, and of the presidents of the provinces, as official bases, and those most to be depended on, it being, however, as well to warn the reader, that on this point the scrupulous exposition established on authorised bases, often belies the real state.

The statistics of the Governmen tare certainly less vague, it is however far from being complete and true; the Government gave such information as they were enabled to collect with certainty; but far short of the truth, which they could not investigate: in calculating the population they were led into error from want of information, which will probably be shewn by the new official statistic, which will recognize in Brazil two to three millions more of inhabitants, that, from reasons already given, were denied to the census tables of the local authorities. In the statistical data of private

prepraratory schools, the deficiency is considerable, owing to the reluctance and want of care of the professors. In the mean time, it is certain that the Government did not sin by exaggerating, and only limited themselves in stating less than was the fact, but what they did state cannot in the slightest degree be contested.

In the articles of the boundaries of the provinces, the history of the pretentions and disputes is put on one side, in some of which doubts may be observed, which require a fresh revision of the map of the Empire, as also new provinces to the advantage of the administration, of the policy, of the material progress, and civilisation of so great and glorious a country.

When in the study of the various provinces, information is wanting on some important subject, as for example on *islands*, *bays* or *inlets*, *mountains*, *rivers*, and *colonization*, and *civilisation* of the *aborigines*, the reader should turn to that which is written in the *first part* of this book, considered necessary and indispensable — as far as the narrow limits of the work permitted to be embraced, — finally the ignorance of the writer does not permit him to go beyond what he has written, and writes.

Furthermore in the statistical copy, it seemed the better and simpler way of leaving the articles — on *Commercial Movement*, *Shipping Movement* and *Public Revenue* of the several provinces, for the *second part*, they being shewn in general tables, textually and faithfully copied from the reports of the ministers of State, presented to the chambers in 1871, the information being by this means much more authentic, and its appreciation and comparison under the point of view of the progress of the country much less diffuse, and evidently much easier of comprehension at first sight on general tables of investigated administrative work.

# CHAPTER I.

## PROVINCE OF AMAZONAS.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

Two lay-brothers, Domingos Brieba and André de Toledo, having arrived at the capital of Pará after a most painful journey on the Amazonas, coming from Quito, where a much more numerous mission of Franciscan friars, whom death and terror had decimated and dissolved, formed the idea of establishing safe communication with Pará, through that immense river.

Pedro Teixeira, entrusted with the command of a considerable expedition for the purpose of exploring the Amazonas, left Cametá in October 1637, taking with him among other officers, the intrepid Pedro da Costa Favella (others write it Favilla) a native of Pernambuco with seventy soldiers, and one thousand two hundred Indians in seventy canoes, of which forty seven were large ones: in the river *Napo*, at the confluence of the *Aguarico* he left the above mentioned Favella with a part of the expedition, and continuing on up the river, he afterwards marched by land from Quios to Baeza, where he received from the Viceroy, Count Chinchon, orders to return to Pará, taking with him the famous priests André de Artieda and Christovão Acuña, destined to go to Lisbon, or rather Madrid, to give an account of the famous exploration.

Pedro Teixeira met Favella on the *Napo*, and being a

true Portuguese, stuck up a wooden land mark on the left bank of that river, one hundred leagues above its confluence with the Amazonas, took formal possession of all that territory for the crown of Portugal, calling *Franciscana* that bank of the *Napo* or the place to be populated in the future which should be founded on that spot in which he had placed the land mark.

This voyage of exploration, which only terminated in February 1639 with the arrival of the expedition at Pará, marks the epoch of the first knowledge of the lands of the actual province of Amazonas, which Orellana, Pedro Ursua, and other Spanish officers, companions of both, merely saw on their passage down the great river.

The hunting down of the Indians was followed up for some years; this was what was called—*bringing down Indians*—of whom those who did not submit quietly to slavery were killed, and the others were taken to the market and exposed to sale after being collected in a place of deposit, called a *curral* (pen). In the mean time some hamlets were being formed, but they were for the most part ephemeral.

In 1668 the village which is now the parish of *Santa Elias de Jahu*, was founded. In the following year Francisco da Motta Falcão by order of the governor of the State, built the fortress of *S. José do Rio Negro*, which soon became animated by population and which is now the city of Manáos. Little by little other colonial nuclei rose up on the banks and at the confluents of the tributaries of the Solimões and of the Amazonas. In 1695 the Carmelite friars very much more fortunate in that region, and probably less ambitious than the Jesuits, and not quarrelsome like them, rendered services, by religious teaching, in forming villages of Indians, and in founding populated places, which good deeds, although not ostentatiously put forth, exceeded those of the ostentatious Jesuits.

The tribute of acknowledgment being paid to these humane and apostolic labours of the Carmelites in the Amazonas, it is necessary to say that whatever were the serious disturbances that the priests of the Company of Jesus caused in Pará, as well as in Maranhão, in their contention for their dominion over, or administration of the Indians, whatever might be the abuses which in their turn the Jesuits might, in a wordly or material view of their interests, practise, it is more than certain that their influence, their acts, their system, their real or probable plans of preponderance and of temporal greatness, would merit the blessings of humanity, placed in comparison with the incendiary torches applied to the villages of the savages, with the incredible slaughter, and with the making of slaves of thousands of savages by the associations—*bandeiras* or *descidas* (banners or bringing down) of Indians—effected by the colonists followed fast, and multiplied in those times, at the vain sounds of applause worthy of heroic actions, and which civilization now condemns as hideous crimes. Then a Jesuit with all his sins was a saint in the comparison with the Portuguese Colonist, who assassinated hundreds of Indians for the depraved pleasure of exterminating the savages, and made slaves of their brothers in God from interest and greed of gold. Then, the worst, the most deceitful Jesuit that could be conceived was a thousand times more useful, a thousand times less fatal than for example the incontestably brave Pedro da Costa Favella, who in 1655 set fire to three hundred *malocas* (Indian cabins), killed eight hundred savages, and reduced to slavery four hundred of those unfortunate wretches who could not induce the executioner, as great a savage as themselves, to kill them, nor could they manage to escape from him.

With moderately flattering, and at times adverse fortune the territory of Amazonas went on until the far-seeing

political statesman, the Marquis of Pombal by decree of 11th July 1757 raised in it the captaincy of *S. José do Javary*, or of *Rio Negro*, subaltern to Pará, and having for its first capital the town of *Barcellos*, which up to then had only been the village of *Mariuá*. And let it not be forgotten that that decree followed, four years after the Captain-General Xavier de Mendonça, bound and endeavouring to begin, in the North of Brazil, the marking the boundary in conformity with the determinations of the treaty of Madrid, had experienced pertinacious and vigorous opposition on the part of the Jesuits—the dominators of the Indians of the *Amazonas*, and principally of the Solimões.

In 1791 the capital of Rio Negro da Villa *de Barcellos* was translated to the place of *Barra* (*Nossa Senhora da Conceição de Manáos*) from whence in 1799 it returned to its first seat for four or five years; afterwards it became definitively fixed in *Manáos* or at the *Barra* as it was then always called.

In 1821, Major Manoel Joaquim do Poço being the governor of the captaincy, and he opposing the public opinion (pronunciamento) as to the revolution of Portugal in 1820, men's minds became agitated, and came to an immediate revolt excited thereto by the government of Pará; that governor was deposed, and a provisional Junta substituted him.

Notwithstanding the captaincy of Rio Negro had elected deputies to the cortes of Lisbon in 1822, the constituent assembly of Brazil did not elect them; for not only was Rio Negro ruled by the governing Junta, created on the 3rd June 1822, in conformity with the decree of those cortes of the 29th September 1821; but likewise because the provisional Junta of Pará (the second, living expression of the Portuguese element) intercepted the decree and the instructions of the Imperial Government of Brazil, for the election of the deputies to the Parliament.

It is likely that without that want of representatives and natural advocates, the circumstance of the captaincy of Rio Negro losing its administrative rank, becoming, as it then did, lowered to a simple district of the province of Pará, and for that reason, and other causes, in a state of decadency. The unwillingness with which the district of Rio Negro obeyed Pará was both of long standing and very explicable.

Encouraged by the general shock which the 7th April 1831 had produced, Manáos raised itself in 1832, and on the 22nd June, proclaimed the province of Rio Negro separated as it had been formerly, from Pará: from this latter place, however, forces were sent, which in August of the same year easily smothered the movement.

The tremendous and devastating revolt, or *cabano* war of the savages, which broke out in Pará, invaded the country and ruined towns and villages, and caused much bloodshed, putting the district of Rio Negro to a severe trial,—its capital town was taken one night; it was chiefly owing to a convict named Ambrozio Ayres, who called himself *Bararoá*—because in *Bararoá* he got together and organized a force or valiant expedition of fighting men, against the rascally bands—that the district owed the greatest services, and it was a pity that afterwards when Bararoá, raised to the rank of military commandant, should show himself an arbitrary oppressor where he had practised noble acts.

Finally in 1850, the district of Rio Negro, by law of 5th September, was raised to a province by the title of *Amazonas*, being installed as such on the 1st January 1852 by its first president João Baptista de Figueredo Tenreiro Aranha.

The political importance of this province from the consideration of its boundaries touching some of the American States, and one of the Guyanas which is a European possession, needs not to be demonstrated, its natural elements of future pros-

perity and greatness, burst forth so abundant, rich, and admirable from the soil the greatest part of which is virgin, shew themselves so remarkably in the wealth of its arteries, and hydraulic highways, that they advise a lowering of the dazzling recommendations lest it may appear that we fall into exaggeration of patriotic enthusiasm.

It is sufficient to say that the province of *Amazonas* offers a new world to be discovered, and a new world that wherever one may go, presents already on the banks of its rivers and in the virgin bosoms of its forests, rich harvests before labour is applied, and after labour stupendous and extraordinary remuneration from the soil. In all this astonishing asseveration, we only speak the simple and incontestable truth.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION.

Its northern latitude is 5° 10′ and its southern 10° 20′; the longitude is all west, between 13° 40′ and 32°.

The province extends from north to south for three hundred and sixty leagues, from the source of the Mahu to Javary, and for three hundred from east to west, from the source of the river Cumiary, or of the Enganos to the mouth of the river Tres Barras in the Tapajoz.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by British Guyana, and the republic of Venezuela and New Granada: on the south by the republics of Bolivia, and witht he province of Matto Grosso: on the east by the province of Grão Pará and British Guyana: and on the west by the republics of Peru, and Nova Granada.

These boundaries on the side of Para are the river Nhamundá or Jamundá and the mountain range Parintins, from whence runs a straight line to the left bank of the *Tapajoz*, facing the confluence of the *Tres Barras*: on the

side of Matto Grosso are the river Giparaná or Machado, an affluent of the Madeira, the Tapajoz from the mouth of the Tres Barras to the confluence of the Uruguatas or Ureguatús, affluents of the Tapajoz on the left bank.

## CLIMATE.

Is very warm and very damp in the low and overflown parts, where the rivers *Branco, Negro*, *Japurá*, and *Madeira* have dominion, on this side of the waterfalls; the humidity diminishing progressively on the high and stony grounds in the extreme northern part touching Guyana, in the southern, *Mundurucania* and *Solimões*, and in all the elevated soil which is of very considerable extent. The heat is intense, and it would be greater if the vast forests, the overflowings of the rivers, and the rains from December to June and the strong winds of the summer from July to November did not mitigate it: the heat moderates on the higher lands, and on those where flows the *Rio Branco* above the waterfalls, the climate corresponds with the southern part of Europe in the Atlantic, as the already cited author of the Dictionary of the Amazonas informs us.

In the low lands and in the neighbourhood of the overflown rivers of the Japurá, of the Madeira, and of other rivers already noted, intermittent fevers rage endemically. Save in this respect, the country is healthy. In Manáos there is no predominant sickness. The above cited writer assures us that out of one hundred persons, thirty approximate to the age of one hundred years.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The soil is level throughout a great extent, low and overflown, high and stony in the parts above pointed out; principally to the north where it shews itself to be of great height; secular and magnificent forests cover it.

## OROGRAPHY.

The most considerable mountain ranges are the following:

Those which belong to the mountain range (cordilheira) of Guyana, and which separate the Empire from Dutch Guyana, and from the republic of Venezuela, as *Paraima*, *Pacaraima*, and the others which already remained marked in the proper chapter relative to the limits of Brazil, and whose geographic-political conditions do not now require to be repeated.

*Tacamiaba* which has its skirts bathed by the Jamundá, or Nhamundá, and which they also call *Pellada* (bare), because it is wanting in vegetation.

*Cucuhi* on the river Negro.

*Cristaes* (dos) between the slopes of Tacutú and Sarumú, of great height and at the top of which there is a great and deep lake shaded by the dense forest.

*Rabino* (do), *Cunauarú*, *Curanti*, and others.

*Tunuhi*, between the rivers *Içana* and *Ixié*.

The high hills of *Parintins*, to the right of the Amazonas; *Canaria* on the Solimões, and still not a few others.

These simple, incomplete and badly arranged enumerations of the mountain ranges of the province of Amazonas, shew a want of knowledge which can only be pardoned by the following great truth—this province is, as has already been said, a new world, immense and full of riches, still to be discovered, and made use of.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The plan of this compendious book would be lost, swallowed up in the deluge of waters of the superb and innumerable rivers which intersect the province of *Amazonas* in sundry directions. In the study of the hydrographic system of Brazil the majectic and unequalled bay

of the *Amazonas* has already been considered. It is not permitted to us to go farther in this work.

Of the lakes likewise, the number of those which spread themselves out in the vicinity of the great rivers, and which otherwise lose in a grat measure their considerable proportions, and many even disappear altogether when the waters subside.

## ISLANDS.

Their number is enormous, and they are more or less distant from the banks of the rivers, and form channels in which vessels may navigate to avoid the force of the current in the broad of the stream. The island of *Aramaçá* is notable in the Solimões, extending six leagues from east to west. Araujo and Amazonas consider as islands what are called *Tupinambarana*, or *Maracá*, of fifty leagues extent, below the mouth of the *Madeira*, and separated from the southern margin of the Mundurucania by the *Furo* (channel) of *Tupinambarana:* the territory in which is the parish of *Araretama*, comprised between the *Madeira*, *Canomá*, *Mataurá* and the channel of Tupinambarana, being forty three leagues from north to south; and the territory which lies between the *Amazonas* to the north, *Purus* to the west, *Capaná* to the south, and *Madeira* to the east, being sixty five leagues from north to south, and fifty from east to west.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

As twin sister of Pará, in the immense and magnificent amazonic cradle, this province is so like her in her dazzling natural productions, that it is permitted us to spare all useles and tiresome repetitions, and leave for one sole picture in the immediate study and short general exposition of the fraternal and threefold spontaneous treasures of her nature.

## INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The superabundant harvest of natural productions, the use which may be extracted from some of them, principally that of elastic gum, attracting to it almost all labouring hands, still, however, inefficient cause agriculture to be enfeebled in lands of such productive force, and leave the province backward and deprived of other indispensable industrial occupations. The provincial government lately went so far as to guarantee pecuniary premiums to any one who should establish cattle rearing farms in the neighbourhood of the cities, towns and parishes.

These facts which are to be explained by the thin population and by the exuberance of natural treasures, offer a vivid demonstration of the immense and spontaneous production of the soil, and of the innumerable resources that not only in this, but in the exploration of many sources of industry smile promissingly to any who may come to people so magnificient a part of the Empire.

The works on the *Madeira* and *Mamoré* railroad are commenced upon, and ought to be concluded within two years between Bolivia and the falls of Santo Antonio in the river Madeira; this is a gigantic stride in the path of progress.

The produce exported by the province gives a clear idea of its industrial occupation and respective commerce: it was as follows in the financial year 1869.

Cotton in seed, animal oil, India rubber fine, India rubber middling, India rubber coarse, India rubber surnamby, rosin, cocoa, coffee, beef, mess, beef, jerked, chestnuts, bees wax, bullock's hides salted, bullock's hides dry, sheep skins, deer skins, cloves, tow, mandioc flour, beans, tucum fibre, pirahyba glue, guaraná, maqueiras (hammock nets) middling, maqueiras fine, feathered, maqueiras of mirity, maqueiras of tucum inferior, mixeira, muirá pinima, copa-

hyba oil, eggs of tracejá, earthenware pots, dried fish (pirarucú and others), piassava in cordage, piassava in bulk, pirarucú in pickle, peixury, casting nets, saboarana, salsa entaniçada (sarsaparilla wound round with splitcane), salsa por entaniçar (unwound), tallow, tobacco entaniçado (cylinders of tobacco, bound round with split cane).

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 76,000 inhabitants, of which 75,000 are free and 1000 slaves.

*National* and *provincial* representation: 1 senator, 2 deputies of the general assembly and 20 of the provincial.

The province forms one only electoral district with 120 electors and 6075 citizens qualilified as voters.

*Public force:* the national guard with 1 superior commandant, 2 sections of battalions of artillery, 3 battalions and 6 sections of infantry on active service, and 1 section of a battalion of reserve with 6626 national guards on active service and 814 in reserve: total 7440.

*Provisional corps* (of national guards detached 270 men, effective staff): The province has not yet a police corps.

*Primary and secondary instruction; public primary instruction:* schools for males, 25 frequented by 656 scholars, and 8 for females frequented by 167 scholars: *private primary:* 5 schools for the male sex with 64 scholars and 1 for females, the attendance not ascertained in 1871, *secondary public instruction:* 1 establishment for males with 56 scholars; *secondary private:* 2 establishments for males with 13 scholars, and 1 for females with 15 scholars. It is proper to observe that in all the provinces, the statistics of the private schools of primary instruction still and despite all the efforts of the Government is more or less under the real mark, through want of information which should be afforded by the professors. It is equally proper to

state that besides the public establishment of secondary instruction, which is the provincial lyceum, there is still the episcopal seminary which contains 31 scholars, and the establishment for educating artificers which contains 95.

*Civil, judiciary* and *ecclesiastical divisions:* the province of Amazonas is divided into three districts, which comprise the following municipalities and parishes.

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Manáos | 1. Manáos (city) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Manáos. |
| | | 2. S. Angelo de Tanapessassú. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Graça de Cudajaz. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Carmo de Canumã. |
| | | 5. S. Antonio de Borba. |
| | | 6. N. S. das Dôres de Manicoré. |
| | 2. Barcellos (town) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Barcellos. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario de Thomar. |
| | | 3. S. Gabriel. |
| | | 4. S. José de Marabitanas. |
| | | 5. S. Rita de Moura. |
| | | 6. N. S. do Carmo do Rio Branco. |
| | 3. Serpa (town) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de Serpa. |
| | 4. Silves (town) | 1. S. Anna de Silves. |
| 2. Parintins | 1. Manés (town) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Manés. |
| | 2. Villa Bella da Imperatriz (t.) | 1. N. S. do Carmo da Villa Bella da Imperatriz. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Bom Soccorro de Andirá. |
| 3. Solimões | 1. Teffé (city) | 1. S. Anna de Alvellos. |
| | | 2. S. Thereza de Teffé. |
| | | 3. N. S. de Guadalupe da Fonte Boa. |
| | | 4. S. Paulo de Olivença. |
| | | 5. S. Francisco Xavier de Tabatinga. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Manáos*, anciently *Barra do Rio Negro*, on the left bank of this river, the capital of the province, a city still small without any notable building, and, barely, within a few years, opening the road to its great splendours of infallible riches: it is the queen of the Solimões. *Teffé*, situated on the eastern margin of the bay of its name six

miles above the mouth of the Teffé in the Solimões and three hundred and twenty one above the confluence of the river Negro—the historical, ancient Jesuitic mission—from its situation as the natural entrepôt of Japurá, the probable rival of Manáos, and most opulent in natural productions which its neighbouring and endless forests enrich, and with the resources which its waters offer: cotton is there sown and gathered, coffee and tobacco are planted on a very small scale, because the people prefer the easy fishing of the pirarucú, the industrial trade in turtle and cow-fish butter, and that of preparing stuff for and making nets, and wearing coarse cotton cloths; and still more so inasmuch as they gather and extract from friendly and prodigal Nature salsaparilla, oils, resins, hemp, chestnuts, cocoe and many other precious gifts.

*Tabatinga* above all interesting as being the noble boundary sentinel of the Empire, beautiful from its position, and lately fortified with some care. They also call it, and it is the chief place of the district of the Solimões, *San José de Marabitanas* equal to the preceding by its geographico-political importance.

*Barcellos*, *Serpa*, towns, and some parishes, which like young fledgling eagles, that are at present quiet in their nest, but have their eyes on the sun which does not daze them, and are preparing themselves for the daring flights of the approaching future, which falls to the lot of each one of them, as to the princess of swift rivers and of marvellous territory.

## COLONIZATION AND RELIGIOUS CIVILISATION OF THE INDIANS.

The provincial government has recognized the necessity of obtaining European immigrants; but to promote this they have not sufficient financial means, and uselessly in-

clude in the budget an insufficient amount for that item which barely serves to shew their thirst for immigration: they succeed, at least, in engaging artisans and the workmen for the works of public buildings, and it is positive that the parties engaged do not think of leaving the Brazilian province, where almost without labour, a competency is most certain; so small a thing, however, does not suffice: there it not as yet real immigration to the *Amazonas:* this world, the prototype of the free gifts of God, has not yet been thought of, and much les appreciated by men.

It is the El-Dorado, and more than that, it is what exceeds all imagination of natural riches produced by the soil. Time, and soon the light of experience will show to all the prodigious qualities of the region of the Amazonas.

The civilization of the numerous savages who, more or less timorous and suspicious, keep away from the civilized population, is a work that depends on patience, devotion and exemplary charity: some bearded Italian Friars are charged with the undertaking, and the expense that the Government is put to in this important matter of civilization, and to which it will further be led, will be compensated by the consciousness of the fulfilment of a great humanitary duty and by the material convenience or economy of having numerous and robust hands employed in labour. The civilization of the Indians is, for the province of *Amazonas*, a precious element of progress; for that reason it will be a source of labour, and a productive capital for moral and economical profit.

## CHAPTER II.

## PROVINCE OF GRÃO PARÁ.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

Francisco Caldeira Castello Branco, who under the order of Jeronymo de Albuquerque had come gallantly in 1614, to take part in the war against the French in Maranhão, founded in 1616 by order of Alexandre de Moura, the city of Nossa Senhora de Belem, on the bay of Guajará, and the captaincy of Pará, of which he bore the title of captain-general. It was easy for him to beat the savages who had attacked him, and this rising colony was hopeful in its animation; shortly after, however, in blindly protecting an unfortunate nephew, who had killed an esteemed colonist, he was deposed and imprisoned—this event was the incentive to renewed attacks from the Indians who threatened to destroy the future promising Belem.

Jeronymo Fragoso de Albuquerque was then named captain-general of Pará, and he entrusted with an expedition against the Indians one Bento Maciel Parente, who committed cruel excesses in performing his task, for he made a terrible slaughter of the Indians, advanced from Maranhão to Pará, and leaving such tracks of his exterminating march, and to such extent enslaved and tortured thousands of savages, that in a phrensy for devastation, he got to disobey Fragoso, who in 1619, horrified by his

proceedings, had ordered that the work of vengeance and terrour should no longer be prosecuted.

In 1652 the general goverment of the State of Maranhão was suppressed, the captaincy of Pará remaining with an independent jurisdiction; but in 1655 (according to Berredo) that State was again constituted, under the government of André Vidal de Negreiros, Pará continuing as formerly to have for chiefs of administration captains-general, until the year 1737, when the governour João de Abreu Castello Branco removed his official residence to the city of Nossa Senhora de Belem which example his successors followed. The decree of the 20th August 1772 separated for ever the two captaincies, the goverment of Piauhy declaring itself subject to that of Maranhão and that of Rio Negro to Belem.

In all that time since its foundation, the captaincy of Pará saw itself agitated, at first, by the insubordination of the colonists, and by the ambition of some of the chiefs, and very shortly commenced, as in Maranhão, the struggles with the Jesuits, on account of the slavery of the Indians, and naturally still more hotly than in Maranhão; because on the banks of the *Amazonas* and those of its great confluents there was a much greater number of wandering tribes of savages, a vast and lamentable proportion of whom, horrible human hecatombs, were exterminated, the unfortunate prisoners only who were destined to slavery being spared. It was in consequence of that destructive ferocious system, that the Indians fled by thousands to seek shelter in far off deserts or passed on to territories bordering on the north of Brazil. Being nearer to Portugal, and because its administrative relations bound it to Lisbon, and not to the capital of Bahia, Pará, with a much more numerous population proportionally born in the metropolis, became for some time less addicted to the Brazilian than to the Luzitanian element, which otherwise soon

changed, by its shewing itself energetic in the feeling of national independence.

Pará was the first of the Brazilian captaincies to adhere to the Portuguese revolution of 1820, both Portuguese and Brazilians united in the liberal demonstration; but on the first impulsive efforts in favour of independence in the following year, and at the electric fervour of the cry at Ypiranga, until August 1823; the Luzitanian element strengthened by the troops in garrison victoriously overcame it,—the patriotic sons of Pará suffering a hard persecution, imprisonment and even not a few were sent away to Lisbon. As Lord Cochrane had done in Maranhão, on arriving there in the liner Pedro I., captain Grenfell anchored before the city of Belem in the brig D. Miguel (a prize and already under the name of *Maranhão*), and giving himself out as the diligent emissary of the Brazilian squadron about to arrive, he intimated to the *Provisional Junta* then dominant and anti-Brazilian, that they should make their adhesion to the Independence of Brazil, and to the new Empire: the threat of the squadron, and the moral force, which suddenly animated the oppressed people of Brazil, annihilated on the spur of the moment the firmness of the Junta: a government, also provisional, substituted it, the generals, officers and soldiers of the Portuguese garrison being taken prisoners and sent to Portugal. The state of exaltation and well to be understood reaction, which for a short time made itself felt in the magnificent northern province of the Empire, soon calmed down, and did not even exceed in equal vengeance the pressure and violence recently suffered by the patriots.

In 1835 commenced in Pará a bloody revolt, that on its breaking out and at the commencement had perhaps a certain political character, although at once blackened by the assassinations of the President and the commander in chief of the province. Until 1836 that war which had be-

come a savage one from its terrible and abominable acts, from its cruelties, and by the ruin which spread wherever the armed bands passed, was fatal to the riches, and to the considerable development of Pará, and came to an end through the energetic action, at times arbitrary and violent, but regenerative of peace, of security and order of the government of General Andreas, subsequently Baron of Caçapava, a man of note who had been a president of other provinces also under extraordinary circumstances, and who without adhering scrupulously to the tenets of the law, knew how to shew himself sometimes severe and arbitrary, at others moderate and conciliatory, and even anti-reactionary, according to the degree of civilization, the political situation, the time, the events, and the consequences of all these in the provinces, to whose presidency he was called.

From 1836 forwards, the province of Pará has been getting robust, and grows in progress, and sure of a splendid and magnificent future, which its natural and marvellous opulence infallibly assures, and of which the free navigation of the Amazonas decreed and inaugurated in 1867 was the glorious confirmation—as magnificent as the majesty itself of that sovereign of rivers.

The church of Pará separated itself from that of Maranhão in 1780 by the creation of its bishoprik then subject to the Patriarch of Lisbon.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

It lies between 4° 10′ north latitude, and 8° 40′ south; and between 2° 10′ and 15° 20′ west longitude.

The province from north to south extends two hundred and seventy six leagues from cape *Orange* to the river *Tres Barras*, and from east to west two hundred and fifty six leagues from the mouth of the *Gurupy* to the sources

of the Nhamundu in the mountain range of the *Tumucuraque:* its superfice in square leagues is forty thousands.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by the Atlantic Ocean, by French, Dutch and British Guyana; on the south by the province of Matto Grosso, at the *Gradaús* mountains, the rivers *Fresco* and *Carey*, affluents oft the *Xingú*, and river of *Tres Barras* or *Paranutinga* affluent of the *Tapajoz;* to the east by the provinces of Maranhão and Guyaz, from which the rivers *Gurupy* and *Araguaya* separate it, and on the west by the province of Amazonas as has already been defined.

## CLIMATE.

The province of Pará is more or less under the same conditions of climate as is that of Amazonas. The same influence of the waters of its colossal rivers, and of their periodical overflow: the rains which are almost diurnal, and the east and north-easterly winds temper and render mild the very great heat of the sun: the afternoons are of mild temperature, the nights are cool, and the mornings up to 8 o'clock are deliciously pleasant. In general the climate is hot and damp: intermittent fevers are endemic on the banks of the rivers and lakes, in the places where there is stagnant water: but away from those parts and at stated periods, already noted in the preceding chapter, the country is healthy. Baena, the author of the *Ensaio Corographico sobre a provincia do Pará* (Chorographic Essay on the province of Pará), shews in 1831 in the parochial statements of many cities, towns and parishes, the notable fact of the registry, in all of them, of many cases of longevity.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The soil is in general low and flat, rising slightly towards the interior: endless forests, as it were extend immeasurable, simulating an endless verdure: the produce of the land is astonishing and where the forests fail, plantations grow up and the sowing of grain covers the ground well or roughly prepared, giving each year two and even three harvests. The physical aspect of this province, is the brilliant beacon not of ease, but of opulence with which to repay man's labour.

## OROGRAPHY.

Disputing with the vastest of plains from on this side of the Andes, which in the words of the consciencious and distinguished Sr. Ferreira Penna, author of the precious work—"*A região Occidental da provincia do Pará*" (The western region of the province of Pará) is the likeness of the shores of the Amazonas, mountain ridges and mountains rise up and extend in one part of the district of Gurupá and in Guyana. Not yet well known it is just permitted us to name the principal: they are *Tumucumaque* which run from far to the south-east, and in a direction as it were, to the north cape: the Serra *da Velha*, almost always snow-capped; that of Parú, very high, the frequent attractor or denouncer of thunder storms; others besides those, and sundry mountains not yet embraced in the orographic system elucidated.

To the south the Serra de Gradaús shews itself and some few others which are but little known.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The great basin of the *Amazonas* and the *Oyapock* have already been lightly touched on *in the eighth chapter of the first part* of this book: we must not attempt to pass

the limits of those generalities, for we shall escape from the deficiency of a hundred pages which might be written with the endeavour to make clear the complete picture of the fluvial riches of Pará. Besides the rivers that run to from those two basins, there are still others that take their course independently to the sea; but these are obscured in comparison with the gigantic, magnificent tributaries of the Mediterranean of fresh water in the north of Brazil.

The lakes multiply in the vicinity of or distance from the great rivers; but become smaller, and less deserving of note, or precariously immense, growing large in the time of the floods, or becoming small or disappear altogether on the subsidence of the same.

## ISLANDS.

The principal islands have already been mentioned, and are those which lie in the neighbourhood of the north coast of the province, and at the mouth of the Amazonas: from Marajó up the river, the islands are innumerable sometimes in groups, sometimes separated by distance, besides those which show themselves at the mouth of some of the great confluents, sprinkled over the wealth of waters, of all some are of considerable size.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom*: The want of explorations and of study is felt in the two Amazonian provinces: conjectures are nourished, and vague reports of the existence of the precious minerals are preserved; that is positive that crystals are met with in the lake *Apanigés* on the Tocantins, on the Serras of *Rio Branco*, in that of *Cristal*, and in other parts; purple shells, pumice stone on the beaches of the principal islands of the mouth of the Amazonas, grind stones in many parts of both provinces, as also

emery, flints of various colours, sulphur, the finest of clay of a yellow, red, rose, and white colour, of which earthenware is made and also coloured; curi, or dyeing clay; talk, mineral salt in the Campina of the river *Branco*; gold is said to be found on the skirts of the serras of Tapurá, in the river Içа, in the interior of *Mundurucama*, and in other places; of iron and coal, the conjectures pass into a certainty.

*Vegetable kingdom:* This is unsurpassed and most precious.

Of the vegetables most known, tried and applied, or awaiting very advantageous application, Baena and after him Arauje e Amazonas mention and distinguish them thus: medicinal 64, for dyeing 23, for ship building 30, for cabinet making 13 and among those timbers of an orange, purple and rose colour, as also satin wood: exuding milk there are 12, the Arvoeiro being poisonous, als also the Assacú; oleaginous 7, resinous 5, cotton yielding 6, fibrous 9, poisonous 9, aromatic 18, vegetable esteemed for their fruit grateful to the palate 55, palm trees. — Martius gave a magnificent account to the civilized world of much more numerous species.

The Paricá tree on account of the inebriating quality of its fruit is worthy of special mention (Araujo e Amazonas), and the Ipadú, whose leaves roasted, reduced to powder, and mixed with the ashes of the ambaubeira, give a substance of a green colour which the inhabitants of the woods eat, and which leaves them in a most pleasant state of inaction and produces a delightful half sleepy state.

The perusal of the respective article of the *Ensaio Corographico* of Baena is more than interesting from the simple information of the numerous and most useful purposes to which the poor and ignorant Indians know how to apply in their living, in their family economy and in their

enjoyments, the leaves, the wood and the roots of trees shrubs, herbs and cipos (lianas) of their extraordinary vegetable treasure.

In the midst of such great spontaneous riches of the soil, what is most prominent at present for the interests of man, is the prodigious vegetation which offers the collecting and extracting of cocoa, of India rubber, of sarsaparilla, of the urucú, the guaraná, the oil of copahyba, the cumarí, the clove, vanilla, pepper, chestnuts, pucheri &c., that gift-giving Nature grants without the trouble of sowing and without cultivation.

The *animal kingdom:* is more os less, and with exceptions only of varieties, the same as that of the other provinces of Brazil: the quadrupeds are those which the general study mentions: among the reptiles the alligators are the most prominent, on account of their size and abundance, and the turtles which are sought after as a profitable source of industry; other reptiles abound, some are terribly venomous, and the rattlesnake is not absent from their number; the water-fowls, songsters, gallinaceous, night-birds, birds of prey, and birds of beautiful plumage, exist in countless numbers, from the gigantic eagle which flies down from the Andes. The insects, amongst which the immense number of some species of flies, afflict one from being cruelly and pertinaciously troublesome, and persecute those who navigate the rivers principally at night. The species of appreciable fish which live in the waters of the Amazonas, of its greater and lesser tributaries, of its side channels (igarapés) and of the lakes of the supreme dominion of the king of rivers, are very numerous.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

Much more populated, having in its capital the emporium of the commerce of the whole valley of the Ama-

zonas, receiving the produce of part of the provinces of Goyaz and Matto Grosso, in frequent and developed relations with Europe and America, whose vessels already come and render prominent its important and export commerce, consequetly much more advanced in civilization and material progress than the province of Amazonas, the province of Pará nevertheless suffers the same evil, determined by the same cause observable in the former—the decay of agriculture which had relatively so greatly prospered.

The marvellous riches of Pará is doing harm to her future greatness: the population, the ancient agriculturists under pretext of the want of hands abandon farming which gave energy to and rendered its towns and populated places flourishing, and throw themselves upon harvesting the natural productions, and on extractive industry, principally of India rubber, and it is thus that the capital brightens, and some very few cities and towns grow with a rapid augmentation of commerce; the others however, that exported to Belem coffee, sugar, farinha (mandioc-flour), grain, begin to send and purchase, where they formerly sold those articles. This fact that otherwise manifests the spontaneous opulence of the soil, is a disconsolate one although it does not disanimate, for the cause itself of the evil is the overpowering incentive to immigration, which will make that disappear by the affluence of a great number of people, who will seek divers industrial occupations.

Apart from this consideration of political economy, Pará sees new horizons of commercial splendor opening to it, day by day.

To prove this it is sufficient to call to mind the development and the importance of the navigation companies that it subsidises: Pará reaps the advantages of the following steam navigation companies: that of the *Amazonas* which extends its commercial movement as far as Perú and Bolivia; the *Fluvial Paraense*, having seven lines, which in

1871 made one hundred and eight voyages; the *Costeira do Maranhão e Fluvial do Alto Amazonas*, the denomination of which sufficiently indicates its sufficient use with economic value.

Besides those, that of the *Navegação nos rios Tocantins* and *Araguaya*, of which company Dr. José Vieira de Couto Magalhães is the organiser; still struggling with the difficulties of its noviciate, it announces itself as exceeding the calculations of the provincial interests of Pará, Goyaz and Matto Grosso, and entering into the plans of the high general interests of the Empire, for the inland communication of the two principal basins, those of the Plate, and of the Amazonas, through an extent which far surpasses three thousand miles, is already clear, and shews that it can easily be realized.

Lastly, the probability or almost certainty also presents itself of the communication between the capital of Pará with Cayenne, by means of a prolongation of the line of transatlantic French steamers as far as Pará.

Finishing the information under the last heading, it seems proper to declare that the three chief products of exportation from Pará were, in their order of greater value, the following; *gomma elastica* (India rubber), cocoa, and chestnuts (Pará nuts) of the country.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 320,000 inhabitants, 290,000 being free, and 30,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 1 senator, 3 deputies of the general assembly, and 30 of the provincial.

The province forms one sole electoral district with 13 electoral colleges, 573 electors, and 35,353 citizens who are qualified to vote.

*Primary and secondary instruction:* public primary schools

for boys 80 with 3778 pupils, for females 27 with 882 pupils; *private primary:* 70 with 745 boys and 280 girls.

*Secondary public instruction:* 1 establishment for males with 83 pupils; *private secondary:* 5 establishments for males with 531 pupils, for females, 4 with 270 pupils.

It is necessary to add that in 1870 was instituted in the capital, a normal school for teachers of primary instruction, and that the liberty of teaching is observed in the province by law.

*Public force: national guard:* embracing 9 superior commands, 41 battalions and 6 sections of battalions of infantry, and 2 battalions on active service, and 2 battalions of infantry of reserve with 32,189 national guards on active service and 3985 of reserve, total 36,174.

*Police corps:* with 325 men (effective state).

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Pará is divided and sub-divided into the following districts, municipalities and parishes:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Santa Maria de Belém (city, cap) | 1. Nossa Senhora da Graça da Sé. |
| | | 2. N. S. Sant' Anna da Campina. |
| | | 3. SS. Trindade. |
| | | 4. N. S. de Nazareth do Desterro. |
| | | 5. S. Vicente de Inhangapy. |
| | | 6. Sant' Anna de Bujarú. |
| | | 7. S. Domingos da Boa Vista. |
| | | 8. Sant' Anna do Capim. |
| | | 9. S. Francisco Xavier de Barcarena. |
| | | 10. S. Miguel da Beja. |
| | | 11. N. S. da Conceição do Bomfim. |
| | | 12. N. S. do O' do Mosqueiro. |
| | 2. Mojú (town) | 1. Divino Espirito Santo do Mojú. |
| | | 2. S. José do Acará. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Soledade do Cairy. |
| | 3. Iguaapé-Miry (town) | 1. Sant' Anna de Iguaapé Miry. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição de Abaeté. |
| | 4. Ourem (c.) | 1. Espirito Santo de Ourem. |
| | | 2. S. Miguel de Guamá. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Piedade de Irituia. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 2. Vigia | 1. Vigia (city) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth da Vigia. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario de Collares. |
| | | 3. S. Caetano de Odivellas. |
| | 2. Curuçú (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de Curuçá. |
| | | 2. Bom Intento. |
| | 3. Cintra (t.) | 1. S. Miguel de Cintra. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Socorro das Salinas. |
| | | 3. Santarem Novo. |
| 3. Cametá | 1. Cametá (c.) | 1. S. João Baptista de Cametá. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Carmo de Tocantins. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição de Mocajuba. |
| | 2. Baião (town) | 1. S. Antonio de Baião. |
| | | 2. S. Pedro do Alto Tocantins. |
| 4. Breves | 1. Breves (town) | 1. Sant' Anna de Breves. |
| | | 2. Menino Deus de Anajaz. |
| | 2. Portel (t.) | 1. N. S. da Luz de Portel. |
| | 3. Melgaço (t.) | 1. S. Miguel de Melgaço. |
| | 4. Oeiras (t.) | 1. N. S. de Assumpção de Oeiras. |
| | 5. Curralinho (town) | 1. S. João Baptista de Curralinho. |
| | | 2. S. Sebastião da Boa Vista. |
| 5. Cachoeira | 1. Muaná (t.) | 1. S. Francisco de Paula de Muaná. |
| | 2. Cachoeira (town) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Cachoeira. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição de Ponta de Pedras. |
| | 3. Monsarás (t.) | 1. S. Francisco Xavier de Monsarás. |
| 6. Marajó | 1. Soure (town) | 1. Menino Deus de Soure. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição de Salvaterra. |
| | 2. Chaves (t.) | 1. S. Antonio de Chaves. |
| 7. Bragança | 1. Bragança (city) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de Bragança. |
| | | 2. N. S. de Nazareth do Quatipurú. |
| | 2. Vizeu (t.) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth de Vizeu. |
| 8. Gurupá | 1. Gurupá (town) | 1. S. Antonio de Gurupá. |
| | | 2. Santa Cruz de Villarinho do Monte |
| | | 3. N. S. do Rosario de Arraiollos. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição dè Almeirim. |
| | 2. Porto de Moz (town) | 1. S. Braz de Porto de Moz. |
| | | 2. S. João Baptista de Veiros. |
| | | 3. S. João Baptista de Pombal. |
| | | 4. S. Francisco Xavier de Sauzel. |
| 9. Santarem | 1. Monte-Alegre (town) | 1. S. Francisco de Assis de Monte-Alegre. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Graça da Prainha. |
| | 2. Santarem (city) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Santarem. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Saúde de Alter do Chão. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 9. Santarem | 3. Franca (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção da Villa Franca. |
| | | 2. S. Ignacio de Boim. |
| | 4. Itaituba (town) | 1. Sant' Anna de Itaituba. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição de Aveiro. |
| | 5. Alemquer (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Alemquer. |
| 10. Obidos | 1. Obidos (city) | 1. Sant' Anna de Obidos. |
| | 2. Faro (town) | 1. S. João Baptista de Faro. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Saúde de Juruty. |
| 11. Macapá | 1. Macapá (c.) | 1. S. José de Macapá. |
| | 2. Mazagão (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção de Mazagão. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Belem* (Nossa Senhora de Belem) on the eastern bank of the Guajará, and at 25 geographical miles from the coast, with an immense harbour which is aggrandized by the threefold court paid to it—by the ocean on account of its proximity, and the Amazonas and the Tocantins almost within view.

The works of man pale before the presence of so much natural magnificence, which dazzles the capital of the province and its first commercial city, one of the most important in the Empire. Nevertheless, with 35,000 inhabitants it has sightly palaces, such as that of the Government, of the bishop, and there is now being built a vast edifice destined for the sessions of the provincial assembly, the municipal chamber, the jury, and for transacting the business of all the provincial departments: there are 10 churches, among which is the cathedral, one of the largest and finest temples in the Empire: 35 streets, a part of which are planted with sightly trees, as well as 14 squares, a theatre about being finished, and which will have no rival in the Empire, a great custom house, 2 arsenals, one being naval, and the other military, 3 military barracks, 2 commercial banks, 2 seminaries, a provincial lyceum, a botanical garden,

a library and museum, an iron tramroad which extends for more than 3 miles, a magnificent quay faced with hewn stone, that borders all the commercial part of the city, with beautiful stairs for disembarking, and two warehouses of considerable size belonging to the two principal companies of navigation by steam, which the province possesses.

The church of Nossa Senhora de Nazareth, whose feasts traditionally splendid attract every year devotees and amateurs in pious, joyful and happy multitudes, is subordinate to the capital.

*Obidos* which has a pleasant descent from the brow of a hill to the Amazonas: there is a fort constructed on a kind of promontory that jutting out into the river, gives room on the eastern side for a small bay or calm spot of water which is the port of the city: the latter consists of 151 inhabited dwellings, and which are placed in 2 squares, and 9 streets; the most notable edifice is the church; the urban population exceeds 1000 inhabitants.

*Santarem*, situated on the right bank of the Tapajoz on ground that descends with a slight declivity from south to north at 5 kilometers distance from the junction of this river with the Amazonas. Its height above the level of the sea is 16 metres. The city has 310 houses of sightly appearance, an excellent and fine parish church, an elegant municipal palace, and near upon 1800 inhabitants.

*Cametá*, on the left bank of the Tocantins, about 80 miles to the south-west of the city of Belem, it was one of the most ancient and flourishing towns, and became a city some few years since; it is a commercial and important one, on account of its being a port of call for vessels navigating that great river, which opposite to the port, and as it were to promise it future grandeur, takes a breadth of ten miles, and forms a splendid archipelago.

*Macapá* on the left bank of the Amazonas, and looking on that side towards the northern mouth of that magnificent river: it has a regular and important fortress, a good church, and some other edifices.

*Bragança*, situated on middlingly swelling ground on the western bank of the river Cayté, nine miles above its mouth on the windward coast.

And besides *Gurupá*, the elegant, *Melgaço* the woody, *Franca* the bewitching, that takes a deceptive beautiful appearance by being reflected in the mirror of its waters, and besides many other interesting towns, *Monte Alegre* in Guayana, and on the left and north bank of the river *Curupatuba* must not be forgotten: it has a hamlet at the port, on the border of the river, evidently commercial, although small, and without mentionable importance; from thence to the town there is more than a mile's distance, rising for the greater part on a straight hill, sandy, inconvenient, possessing by way of fountains of lenitive excellent water, until arriving at the top of the plain, where finally Monte Alegre is situated, in the midst of whose square stands out the beautiful building of the parish church, which as Señor Ferreira Penna says, is the only monument of the Amazonas which represents in art what that great river represents in nature.

*Monte Alegre* is close to the southern edge of the high plain, about 300 meters above the common level of the waters. All that there can be of magnificent and beautiful, says the same writer, on the banks and in the vicinity of the Amazonas, is epitomized in the smiling picture which is spread before man's eyes as seen from that esplanade. Above all this *Monte Alegre* recommends itself, still by its temperature less elevated than that of any other place in the Amazonas, for its pure atmosphere, extraordinary salubrity, and the excellence of its native waters.

COLONIZATION, and CIVILIZATION (of the Indians).

The religious instruction and civilization of the numerous savages who fly to the interior, from timidity and suspiciousness of disposition, is confided to the religious bearded Italian monks: the devoted and philantropic co-operation of the contractor of the navigation of the Tocantins and the Araguaya, will probably be of greater advantage in this matter, besides the impulse and means, which will come from the Government, and which are indispensable to that generous sowing of a seed which is both economical and civilizing.

There is not yet any current of immigration for the endless El Dorado of Pará: of a colony from North America established in the neighbourhood of Santarem with a grant of 180 square miles of land, and with the aid of large sums, the laborious and well conducted families remain there, who otherwise full of spirit and hope, count upon a prosperous future: those who were habituated to idleness, as soon as the means of sustenance, and of enjoyment without work was wanting to them, returned to their country, or scattered themselves: at all events, however, the people who possessed good will and noble diligence remained fixed in the colony, who with riches, the fruit of their labour and activity, will afford to other immigrants a proof and example of how much in a short space of time and with easy work, can be obtained and boasted of in the prodigious soil of the valley of the Amazonas.

Besides the precious information and beautiful adornment which disguises the poverty and faults of this and the preceding chapter, the interesting calculation which follows and which has as its trustworthy recommendation the authority of the distinguished post-captain José da Costa Azevedo.

Between what was written in this book, and the calculation of distances which are copied, some explicable contradictions will perhaps, or probably have escaped our notice: for the latter arrived rather late, otherwise received as verified and positive information: at all events the correction of the errors is easy, this last and authorized determination of distances being respected.

## Distance in geographical miles from the places at which the Steam Packets touch in a course of 2510 miles along the Amazonas.

| | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Belém | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 150 | Breves | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 252 | 102 | Gurupá | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 375 | 225 | 123 | Prainha | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 466 | 316 | 214 | 91 | Santarém | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 535 | 385 | 283 | 160 | 69 | Obidos | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 626 | 476 | 374 | 251 | 160 | 91 | Villa-Bella | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 756 | 606 | 504 | 381 | 290 | 221 | 130 | Serpa | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 872 | 722 | 620 | 497 | 406 | 337 | 246 | 116 | Manáos | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 1125 | 975 | 873 | 750 | 659 | 590 | 499 | 369 | 253 | Coary | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 1243 | 1093 | 991 | 868 | 777 | 708 | 617 | 487 | 371 | 118 | Teffé | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 1392 | 1242 | 1140 | 1017 | 926 | 857 | 766 | 636 | 520 | 267 | 149 | Fonte-Boa | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 1526 | 1376 | 1274 | 1151 | 1060 | 991 | 900 | 770 | 654 | 401 | 283 | 134 | Tonantins | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 1621 | 1471 | 1369 | 1246 | 1155 | 1086 | 995 | 865 | 749 | 496 | 378 | 229 | 95 | São-Paulo | | | | | | | | | | | |
| 1728 | 1578 | 1476 | 1353 | 1262 | 1193 | 1102 | 972 | 856 | 603 | 485 | 376 | 202 | 107 | Tabatinga | | | | | | | | | | |
| 1760 | 1610 | 1508 | 1385 | 1294 | 1225 | 1134 | 1004 | 888 | 635 | 517 | 368 | 234 | 139 | 32 | Loreto | | | | | | | | | |
| 1870 | 1720 | 1618 | 1495 | 1404 | 1335 | 1244 | 1114 | 998 | 745 | 627 | 478 | 344 | 249 | 142 | 110 | Maucallaka | | | | | | | | |
| 1906 | 1756 | 1654 | 1531 | 1440 | 1371 | 1280 | 1150 | 1034 | 781 | 663 | 514 | 380 | 285 | 178 | 146 | 36 | Pevas | | | | | | | |
| 2018 | 1868 | 1766 | 1643 | 1552 | 1483 | 1392 | 1262 | 1146 | 893 | 775 | 626 | 492 | 397 | 290 | 258 | 148 | 112 | Iquitos | | | | | | |
| 2107 | 1957 | 1855 | 1732 | 1641 | 1572 | 1481 | 1351 | 1235 | 982 | 864 | 715 | 581 | 486 | 379 | 347 | 237 | 201 | 89 | Nauta | | | | | |
| 2147 | 1997 | 1895 | 1772 | 1681 | 1612 | 1521 | 1391 | 1275 | 1022 | 904 | 755 | 621 | 526 | 419 | 387 | 277 | 241 | 129 | 40 | S.-Regis | | | | |
| 2223 | 2073 | 1971 | 1848 | 1757 | 1688 | 1597 | 1467 | 1351 | 1098 | 980 | 831 | 697 | 602 | 495 | 463 | 353 | 317 | 205 | 116 | 76 | Parinary | | | |
| 2269 | 2119 | 2017 | 1894 | 1803 | 1734 | 1643 | 1513 | 1397 | 1144 | 1026 | 877 | 743 | 648 | 541 | 509 | 399 | 363 | 251 | 162 | 122 | 46 | Bacamarina | | |
| 2335 | 2185 | 2083 | 1960 | 1869 | 1800 | 1709 | 1579 | 1463 | 1210 | 1092 | 943 | 809 | 714 | 607 | 575 | 465 | 429 | 317 | 228 | 188 | 112 | 66 | Urarinas | |
| 2378 | 2228 | 2126 | 2003 | 1912 | 1843 | 1752 | 1622 | 1506 | 1253 | 1135 | 986 | 852 | 757 | 650 | 618 | 508 | 472 | 360 | 271 | 231 | 155 | 109 | 43 | Embouch. de l'Uallaga |
| 2401 | 2251 | 2149 | 2026 | 1935 | 1866 | 1775 | 1645 | 1529 | 1276 | 1158 | 1009 | 875 | 780 | 673 | 641 | 531 | 495 | 383 | 294 | 254 | 178 | 132 | 66 | 23 | Laguna |
| 2449 | 2299 | 2197 | 2074 | 1983 | 1914 | 1823 | 1693 | 1577 | 1324 | 1206 | 1057 | 923 | 828 | 721 | 689 | 579 | 543 | 431 | 342 | 302 | 226 | 180 | 114 | 71 | 48 | Santa-Cruz |
| 2510 | 2360 | 2258 | 2135 | 2044 | 1975 | 1884 | 1754 | 1638 | 1385 | 1267 | 1118 | 984 | 889 | 782 | 750 | 640 | 604 | 492 | 403 | 363 | 287 | 241 | 175 | 132 | 109 | 61 | Jurimaguas |

Observation. — The use of this table to find the distance between any given points is easy; for example: What distance is there between Manáos and Prainha? Taking the vertical line of Prainha, go down that line until the horizontal line Manáos is met, and 497 miles will be found, which is the distance sought.

# CHAPTER III.

## PROVINCE OF MARANHÃO.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

Vicente Yanez Pinçon who in 1500 and before Cabral had arrived at Porto Seguro, discovered Cape *S. Agostinho*, to which he gave the name of *Santa Maria de la Consolacion*, and from thence sailed to beyond the mouth of the Amazonas: he was the first European who trod on the land of Maranhão, disembarking near a river, and losing some of his men in an immediate conflict which he had with the Indians.

In 1534 João de Barros and Fernando Alvarez de Andrade, received grants of hereditary captaincies of great dimensions; that of the former, besides all the territory that extends from the bay of Traição to the extreme northern point of the province of Rio Grande do Norte, embraced, with that of the second, the whole or almost the whole of Maranhão; the two donees took for their partner Ayres da Cunha, who with two sons of Barros, and a delegate of Andrade came in the command of a flotilla of ten vessels, and nearly one thousand colonists, among which number 113 or 130 were mounted, to found a large colony; the whole expedition however, were wrecked on the sand banks of Maranhão barely saving 100 of the wrecked men, and among them the two sons of Barros, who after suffer-

ing many hardships, cast themselves again on the sea and managed to get to the West Indies.

Ten years afterwards Luiz de Mello da Silva, in command of a like undertaking, who also wrecked, and more fortunate than Ayres da Cunha was enabled to return to Lisbon in a caravel, the only one which escaped being wrecked on those said banks.

These disasters caused Maranhão to be in compulsory oblivion by the formers of colonies.

In 1594 Jacques Riffault a privateer of Dieppe arrived with three vessels at the island of Maranhão, and established himself there, seeking the alliance of the Indians; he afterwards returned to France, where by leave of the Government he was enabled to form a company which got up a great expedition, having for its chief Daniel de La Ravardière who left Cancale, and anchored in the harbour of *Jeviré* or of Maranhão in 1612.

Daniel de La Ravardière placed his colony on the plain to the left of the port and gave to the village the name of S. Luiz in honour of Louis XIII. king of France, who had promised him timely assistance.

The already famous Brazilian Jeronymo de Albuquerque was the chief chosen to combat the French; in 1614 he disembarked with 500 soldiers at the place called Guaxinduba, in the same Island of Maranhão, and on the 19th November of that year put to complete rout 200 Frenchmen and more than one thousand five hundred Indians who came to attack him; availing himself of the victory, and prosecuting the war energetically, he obliged La Ravardière to capitulate, the latter giving up at once the fort of *Itapary* or of *S. José*, and engaging to leave for France at the end of five months; but on the 1st November 1615 Alexandre de Moura arrived under the title of Governor of Maranhão, and he insisted, and forced those foreign enemies to retire immediately with Jeronymo Albuquerque.

Alexandre de Moura could not dispute the glory of being a conqueror to Jeronymo de Albuquerque, to whose name was added the glorious surname of *Maranhão*, and to whom fell the well earned honour of governing that captaincy until the 17th February 1618 on which day he died.

By royal decree of the 13th June 1621 the State of Maranhão was instituted, it being composed of the captaincy of that same name, and of those of Pará and Ceará, with its Governor General, and its competent Judge; it should be remarked that permission of entry for the Jesuits into that State was established; but under the express condition that they were not to interfere in protecting the Indians, and preventing the subjection of the same to the colonists.

It must be noticed that the first governor of the State of Maranhão (the captain of Parahyba, Francisco Coelho de Carvalho) was named on the 25th March 1624, and in consequence of the Dutch invasion that year, and of the orders of Government he only went to take possession of his post on the 3rd of September 1626.

Notwithstanding the absolute condition imposed on the Jesuits, they immediately commenced in 1624 to show the pretensions of the dominion of those priests over the Indians, they being otherwise favoured by the government of the metropolis which was a lamentable source of dispute and conflict in the State of Maranhão.

In 1641 the Dutch captain Koen made an easy conquest of the island of Maranhão, by order of Maurice of Nassau, and owing to the scandalous weakness of the captain general Bento Maciel Parente, who had not even the courage to resist. The conquest of Ceará was extended; but in August 1642, Antonio Moniz Barreiros saved the honour of Maranhão, and raised the shout of restoration at the head of his limited cohort of braves; but dying before the end of the war, the major Antonio Teixeira de Mello inherited his glory as a hero, for commanding the patriots

he made a brilliant display by expelling the Dutch in February 1645.

The remainder of the seventeenth century passed over in Maranhão affording a sad and painful testimony to the versatility and harshness of the government of Lisbon, which nourished the agitation and disorders in Pará and in Maranhão between the Jesuits and colonists on the endless subject of the Indians, issuing a multiplicy of Royal letters patent, sometimes favourable to the one side, at others decisive to the pretensions of the other; and for the greater evil, is added to their exacerbating conflict of men's minds, the organization of a monopolizing company, which with the monopoly of all the commerce of importation and exportation, provoked a revolt in 1684, and blackened the vengeance of the law in the following year, by hanging Manuel Beckman and other chiefs of the revolt, who had otherwise given proofs of moderation and mildness in their ephemeral victory over the errors and calamities, which the legal government itself acknowledged, revoking them when the bodies of the victims of the provoking oppression might be said to be still warm.

In 1733 the Governor General of the State of Maranhão changed his residence for the city of *Belem* in *Pará*, Maranhão being governed by captains general until 1754 when it commenced having subordinate governors to the captain general of the State, lastly becoming in 1772 an independent captaincy, until by the independence and foundation of the Empire it entered as it ought by right into the system of the provinces of Brazil.

The church of Maranhão was raised to a bishoprick comprising that of Pará and Piauhy, in 1677 subordinate to the Patriarch of Lisbon, from which it separated itself in 1828.

In 1811 this captaincy received its superior Court of Appeal, the third in Brazil, extending its jurisdiction also to Pará and Piauhy.

In the war of Independence Maranhão was one of the last provinces which freed itself from the Portugueze dominion; Lord Cockrane arriving with the line of battle ship Pedro I. on the 26th Juli 1823, before the city of S. Luiz, laid pretension to the glory of having made the aspect of affairs change, and forced the Provisional Junta to give their adhesion to the new Empire, by managing to make them believe his ship to be the best sailer, and the advanced precursor of an imposing squadron; but it is certain that he there found disposed, in deliberate action, the minds of the patriots, and which otherwise does not take from his useful and electorifying co-operation. But even so mortal struggles took place in the interior of the province, until in the same year 1823 João José da Cunha Fidié capitulated in *Caxias* where he had fortified himself together with the last remnants of armed Luzitanians.

With the exception of ephemeral disturbances in 1823, to be explained by the reaction of the Brazilian spirit, irritated by the obstinate resistance and the foolish oppression of the Portugueze chiefs, and besides also some after movements of the people, wisely dissipated by preventive measures, or immediately suffocated in the beginning by Sir Candido José de Araujo Vianna, the present Marquis of Sapucahy), when in May 1831 the news of the abdication of Dom Pedro I. reached Maranhão, this province enjoyed peace and tranquillity; it was conspicuous from its progress and riches until in 1838 burst forth in the town of Manga da Iguará, a revolt, which extended to a great part of the province, spreading ruin and horror wherever the armed bands appeared or arrived at, as they were composed of people akin to savages, of banditti, and parties of slaves; the rich city of Caxias was barbarously sacked; numerous and great agricultural estates were destroyed; of the number of the victims of this ferocity, the account was lost; nevertheless that abominable revolt lasted for two

years, and had for its chiefs men noted for their brutal audacity alone, and some of them could neither read nor write! To Colonel Luiz Alves de Lima (the present Duke of Caxias) was due the glory of putting an end to that savage war in 1840, by beating in successive combats the rebellious and criminal bands, and finally by seeing the whole of the province of Maranhão pacified, tranquil and subjected to the empire of the law, thanks to the amnesty, with which Senhor Dom Pedro II. one month after the declaration of his majority, invited all Brazilians who were in armed revolt, or suffering from that political crime, to a general conciliation.

Since 1840 the province of Maranhão has developed and makes progress among the most considerable of the Empire, distinguishing itself greatly by cultivating learning, and by the glory of being the cradle of notable and renowned poets, writers, and Brazilian statesmen.

By law of 12th June 1852 the territory comprised between Turyassú and Gurupy which was linked to Pará, was incorporated with Maranhão; and by another decree of 23rd August 1854 the municipality of Carolina, disannexed from Goyaz, was mode to belong to it.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude which is all south, is comprised between 1° 5′ and 10° 40; the east longitude is 1° 45′ and the west is 5° 43′.

The province extends its territory from north to south for 258 leagues, from the island of *Itacupy* to the sources of the river *Parnahyba* in the Serra das *Mangabeiras*; and from east to west for 175 leagues from the mouth of the river *Parnahyba* (*barra das Canarias*) to the place near the *S. Francisco* fronting where the confluence of the rivers *Tocantins* and *Araguaga* takes place. Its superfice is 12,000 square leagues. Its coast is 120 leagues in extent.

## BOUNDARY.

It is bounded on the north by the Atlantic Ocean; on the south by the province of Goyaz at the rivers *Tocantins* and Manoel Alves Grande, and the Serra das *Mangabeiras*; to the east by the province of Piauhy at the river Parnahyba, and on the west by Grão-Pará at the Gurupy (river).

## CLIMATE.

The climate of the province of Maranhão is hot and damp. The rains and thunder storms which mark the winter, commence in the month of December; Ayres Casal informs us that in the southern part they begin in October; these rains however ought not to determine the season, as a rule, for they are very slight; the people call them the *cajus rains*. With the exception of the banks and neighbourhood of the Parnahyba, where intermittent fevers rage, all the province in general enjoys excellent conditions of health.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The face of the country is low and even, and without notable elevations in the vicinity of the sea; in the centre and in the districts of the south, the ground becomes much more uneven crossed by mountain ranges, and divided by many rivers, which water splendid forests and spacious plains, which latter are more or less overflowed in the rainy season, in some parts of the province.

## OROGRAPHY.

It is in its centre and in the south that the *serras* of Maranhão are more pronounced and are the highest, all of them appearing to be ramifications of the Cordillera of the *Espinhaço* that comes from and elongates itself from Goyaz, by the serra of *Mangabeira;* the principal are those of the *Itapicurú* which separate the high descending

slopes from the river of the same name and from those of Parnahyba; of *Machado* and of *Negro*, from which the waters stream that increase the *Mearim; Cinta* which with that of the *Negro* pour forth its waters which cause the Grajahú to become conspicuous; of the *Desordem* and of *Alpercatas*, from whence arise the tributary rivers of the same names, sundry others, and the *Tauatinga* in the southern extremity of the province. The astronomical positions of almost all the mountain ranges are found marked in the Diccionario Historico-Geographico da Provincia do Maranhão of Dr. Cesar Augusto Marques whose lessons have been followed in this rough epitome.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

Besides the basin of the Parnahyba that also belongs to this province and has already had our attention on another place, these are the following principal rivers which discharge themselves into the sea. The *Itapicurú* with a course of 750 miles from north-east to south-west, measuring its turns; its most notable confluents are, on the left, the *Alpercatas*, and on the right the *Corrente;* besides those rivers it further receives eight rivulets; it is navigated by the steamers of the company Fluvial Maranhense for nearly 250 miles; before the confluence of the Alpercatas it has the fall of Santa Anna, and above this fall are others; the *Mearim* which rises in a vast plain, 1841 metres above the level of the sea, between the serras of the *Itapicurú*, of the *Negro*, and of the *Canella:* its breadth is almost at first, barely a little more than a metre; it receives tribute from more than thirty rivers and rivulets up to the confluence of the Pindaré on the left bank, it receives further new tributaries, and enters the sea by two mouths, after a course of about 400 miles, its great confluents, Pindaré nearly 240, and Grajahú 260 miles; the *Gurupy,* whose head waters are scented by the vanille, and the clove, at more than

60 miles to the north of *Carolina Velha* it is winding, broad, deep, of long course, and very opulent on account of the natural richness of the soil it irrigates, which abounds in cinnamon, cacao, clove, vanilla, cumarú, urucú (for dyeing) sarsaparilla, andiroba, abutua, oil of copahiba (capivi) &c., besides precious wood for cabinet making, dyeing, and timber for building purposes; Turyassú, and Turynana of extensive course equally open into the sea like the preceding.

Besides those, there is the *Manoel Alves Grande*, which rises in the serra of the *Mangabeiras*, and still some others of less importance, which taking a different direction discharge themselves into the *Tocantins*, a basin worthy of the former majestic mediterranean.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

The *mineral kingdom*. The productions already known embrace lime stone, copperas, alum, iron, lead and silver, antimony, amiantus, saltpetre, rocksalt, molybdenus, crystals, grind stone, besides mines of gold such as *Turyassú* and *Maracassumé* now being explored by a company; the riches are great, and which foretell much greater in lands and desert places still little known.

*The vegetable kingdom* is an immense spontaneous treasure, and abounds in timber fit for every kind of building purpose and work, and besides those, the trees which afford gum-copal, gum-mastic, gum-benjamin, gum-dragon, those affording oil of copahiba (capivi) and storax; the araribás valued as dyes, the cacao trees &c., the vanilla, abutua, ginger, cahinanna, jalap, ipecacuana also vegetate in great abundance.

Among the palm trees, that of the carnauba distinguishes itself.

Among the trees and shrubs of fruit most appreciated, the attas, cajú, jabuticabas, mangabas, and ambuzás &c. are common.

*Animal kingdom.* The production is similar to that of the preceding provinces, save exceptions which are wanting in importance to the nature of this work.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

From its geographical situation, the fruitfulness of its soil favoured by abundant and well directed natural irrigation, from the number of its navigable rivers, from the graduation of its colonial administration, which afforded it the privilege of being head of the State of its name—the province of Maranhão is among the richest and most civilized of the Empire. More prudent than the two Amazonian provinces, its natural treasures do not cause it to forget agriculture; cotton in the first place, sugar-cane, tobacco, the cereals, and among them the Indian corn, and more than this, rice, which is famously prominent in the prizes for grain, form the basis of its exporting importance, and of its provincial fortune. In the two last years, the crisis produced by the Franco-German war, and since a less recent date, the progressive diminution of slave hands have had a harmful influence upon commerce and agricultural produce; but that war finished in 1871, and the economical evil of the decrease of those hands tending to come to an end completely, it is of indeclinable necessity, in order to pass on to the enjoyment of much greater advantages, that free labour, insures, as the province itself well comprehends, where in 1860 to 1869 the *manumissions* amounted to the number of 5056.

Maranhão already counts the following companies of Steam navigation subsidized by its government; that of *Coast* navigation between itself and Pará and Ceará, the *Fluvial do Itapicurú*, *Mearim*, *Pindaré*, and that of the basin, between S. Luiz (the capital), and the city of *Alcantara*, which run for account of the *Companhia de navegação a vapor do Maranhão;* the *Auxiliar Maranhense* which is

obliged to perform the navigation in those same rivers and basin, and in the river *Munim*, extending the service to the ports of *S. Bento, Pericuman, Guimarães, Cajapis, Cururupú* and *Turyassú;* and besides these two there is the enterprize of the French citizen Jean Etchegoin Portal, also subsidized, which navigates in the *Mearim* from the *Lagem do Curral* as far as the *Pedreiras*, being bound to carry the navigation on as far as *Flores*, nearly 240 miles.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 500,000 inhabitants, being 420,000 free and 80,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 3 senators, 6 deputies to the general assembly, and 30 to the provincial, the province being divided into 2 electoral districts, having, in all, 852 electors and 51,771 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force:* national guard with 18 superior commands, 44 battalions, and 1 section of battalion of infantry, and 13 sections of battalions of reserve with 36,791 national guards on active service and 9656 in reserve; total 46,447.

*Police corps*: 123 men (effective state), *provisional corps* (of national guards detached) 216 men (effective state).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary*: schools for males 73, with 3504 scholars; for females, 45 with 1140 scholars; *private* for males, 11 with 422 scholars; for females 10 with 584 scholars.

*Public secondary:* for males 5 with 545 scholars: *private*, for males 21 with 220 scholars; for females 12 with 85 scholars.

Since the very recent date of this official statistic, two societies and sundry citizens obtained leave to open other schools of primary instruction.

Among the number of the public establishments of secondary instruction there does not enter the establish-

ments of the educandos artifices (artizans school), in which primary instruction, and drawing, geometry, music, and engraving is taught; it contains, besides, the workshops which the title of this useful institution announces.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Maranhão is divided and sub-divided into districts, towns and parishes, as follow.

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. São Luiz (city and cap) | 1. Nossa Senhora da Victoria. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição. |
| | | 3. S. João Baptista. |
| | | 4. S. Joaquim do Bacanga. |
| | | 5. S. João Baptista dos Vinhaes. |
| | | 6. Santa Philomena do Cutim. |
| | 2. Paço do Lumiar (t.) | 1. N. S. da Luz do Paço do Lumiar. |
| | | 2. S. José dos Indios. |
| 2. Alcantara | 1. Alcantara (city) | 1. Apostolo S. Mathias. |
| | | 2. S. João de Côrtes. |
| | | 3. Santo-Antonio e Almas. |
| | 2. S. Vicente Ferrer (t.) | 1. S. Vicente Ferrer de Cajopió. |
| 3. S. Bento dos Perizes | 1. S. Bento (t.) | 1. S. Bento dos Perizes. |
| | | 2. S. Bento de Bacurituba. |
| 4. Guimarães | 1. Guimarães (t.) | 1. S. José de Guimarães. |
| | 2. S. Ignacio do Pinheiro (t.) | 1. S. Ignacio do Pinheiro. |
| | 3. S. Helena (t.) | 1. Santa Helena. |
| 5. Tury-Assú | 1. Tury-Assú (c.) | 1. S. Francisco Xavier de Tury-Assú. |
| | 2. Cururupú (t.) | 1. S. Joaõ de Cururupú. |
| 6. Rosario | 1. Rosario (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Lapa Ipias de S. Miguel. |
| | 2. Icatú (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Icatú. |
| | 3. Miritiba (t.) | 1. S. José do Periá. |
| 7. Vianna | 1. Vianna (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Vianna. |
| | | 2. S. José de Penalva. |
| | 2. Monção (t.) | 1. S. Francisco Xavier de Monção. |
| | 3. Mearim (t.) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth do Baixo Mearim. |
| | 4. Arary (t.) | 1. N. S. da Graça de Arary. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 8. Itapicurú | 1. Itapicurú-Mirim (c.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres de Itapicurú-Mirim. |
| | 2. Anajatuba (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Anajatuba. |
| | 3. Vargem-Grande (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião da Vargem-Grande.<br>2. N. S. das Dôres da Chapadinha. |
| 9. Brejo | 1. Brejo (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Brejo.<br>2. Sant' Anna de Burity. |
| | 2. S. Bernardo (t.) | 1. S. Bernardo do Parnahyba. |
| | 3. Tutoya (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Tutoya.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição dos Arrayozes.<br>3. N. S. das Berreirinhas. |
| 10. Alto-Mearim | 1. Codó (t.) | 1. Santa Rita e Santa Philomena. |
| | 2. Coroatá (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade de Coroatá. |
| | 3. S. Luiz Gonzaga (t.) | 1. S. Luiz Gonzaga. |
| 11. Caxias | 1. Caxias (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição e S. José de Caxias.<br>2. S. Benedicto de Caxias.<br>3. N. S. de Nazareth de Trezidella. |
| | 2. S. José dos Matões (t.) | 1. S. José de Cajazeiras (now S. José dos Matões) |
| 12. Pastos-Bons (now Mirador). | 1. Mirador (t.) | 1. S. Bento dos Pastos-Bons (now Mirador).<br>2. S. Felix de Balsas. |
| | 2. Picos (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião da Passagem Franca. |
| 13. Chapada | 1. S. Francisco (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Manga. |
| | 2. Barra da Corda (t.) | 1. Santa Cruz da Barra da Corda. |
| | 3. Chapada (t.) | 1. N. S. do Bomfim da Chapada. |
| 14. Carolina | 1. Carolina (c.) | 1. S. Pedro de Alcantara da Carolina. |
| | 2. Imperatriz (t.) | 1. S. Thereza do Porto Franco. |
| | 3. Riachão (t.) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth do Riachão. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*São Luiz*, city and capital of the province in the island of Maranhão and on the bay already mentioned; rich and flourishing, and of considerable commercial importance; it has 10 squares, 72 streets, 18 lanes, or passages from one street to the other, containing nearly 3000 houses, includ-

ing 18 general public edifices and 6 provincial; 13 churches and chapels, 3 convents, 3 hospitals and 3 cemeteries, a hospital (Misericordia), the theatre of S. Luiz, 2 banks, the *commercial* for loans, deposits and discounts, and that of *Maranhão*, with emission, for deposits, and discounts, 2 seminaries, the provincial-lyceum, the *foundery* of the company Fluvial, 2 markets and the quay of *Saoragão* bordering the river Anil, and linking to the commercial centre, the quarter of the *Remedios*, where they are erecting the statue of Gonçalves Dias.

*Caxias*, a city (formerly *S. José das Aldeias Altas*) or simply *Aldeias Altas*, on the right bank of the *Itupicurú* at 240 miles to the south-east of the capital; it is the cradle of Gonçalves Dias, the sweetest and tenderest of Brazilian poets; historical and memorable in the war of independence, taken and sacked by the revolted balaios (brooms) in 1839, called the princess city *of the interior*, is notable for its commerce, has its theatre, two well organized bands of music, and relative to other places of the province, an advantageous development of popular instruction.—Alcantara, a city on a beautiful hill, whence it is mirrored in the waters of the bay of S. Marcos, and at 12 miles from S. Luiz which is opposite. It was called in former times *Tapuytapera*. *Vianna* a city situated in the midst of lakes, and on the banks of the river Maracú; it commands a fertile district, but is damp and cloudy; the produce of it lands and of its commerce, gives it life.

## COLONIZATION AND CIVILIZATION OF THE INDIANS.

In the province of Maranhão European colonies are completely wanting as in others, and despite the fruitfulness and great natural richness of its soil; the emigration from the old world has not yet felt inclined to turn its

eyes to the more northernly provinces of Brazil; naturally and easily explained is, and will be for the present, the circumstance of the southern provinces being preferred; they may attract emigration, and that on an increasing scale; they should invite and receive it; but in Maranhão, as to the north of it, as likewise in the centre of the Empire, the Indians could be counted by many thousands, the sons of the soil, and in every way congenital with the conditions of the country, which by civilization might be made available; the problem is difficult of solution; but it has been (in other times) admirably solved by the Jesuits.

It is a question of the able and zealous sowing of the seed of knowledge and gold; of ability and devotion to the work on the part of the missionaries, and of some sacrifice to the public treasury. The expense is well worth the probable harvest, and the rough labour of the missionaries is inculcated by the scriptures, and is moreover the glorification of charity.

# CHAPTER IV.

## PROVINCE OF PIAUHY.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The lands of Piauhy sheltered many hordes of Indians, whom some suppose to be Tupinambás and Potyguares, and who might very well be of other tribes, but at all events they were fugitives from persecution and slavery.

In 1674, or some years before that period, an adventurer, by name Domingos Affonso Mafrense, with some relations and other Portuguese whom he got together, went into the interior in order to make their dwelling in those plains in the north; on the road he met with Domingos Jorge, who at the head of a band of backwoodsmen, was marching in search of the Indians. The Portuguese joined the S. Paulo chief, and both with their respective followers went on attacking the savages, and having made a great number of prisoners whom they destined for slavery, Domingos Jorge returned with them to S. Paulo, while Mafrense, who obtained the name of *Sertão* (Back-woods) conquered in many successive incursions into the backwoods of Piauhy a very extensive space of territory, where were established cattle breeding farms; and so many did he alone possess, that at his death he left *thirty* to the Jesuits priests, his declared heirs, under the condition of their employing the revenues of the same in dowering maidens and soccouring widows and the poor,

and with the surplus to augment the number of farms, without the slightest doubt for that same end.

The Jesuits, thus made conditional heirs, complied strictly with the last article of this will of the testator; for they established three more farms; there is, however, no mention of dowering maidens, nor of succouring widows and the poor, which ought to be known to the public; inasmuch as the benefit of the condition of the legacy willed escaped from the evangelical nature of voluntary and spontaneous alms, which pass stealthily from the right to the left hand.

It is possible, it may even be presumed, that the Jesuit fathers complied religiously and secretly with all the conditions of the legacy which they enjoyed until 1759, the year in which through the confiscation of their property *thirty three* cattle breeding farms in Piauhy passed into the hands of the Crown.

This agglomeration of riches in the hands of one man alone and afterwards into that of a religious, but grasping company, animated by pretentions to influence and power, explain the scanty population of Piauhy until the end of the eighteenth century.

At the beginning, Piauhy belonged to the jurisdiction of Bahia; but passed over to that of Maranhão on the 11th January 1715 by a provision of the Ultramarine Commission. In 1718 it was created a captaincy subject to Maranhão; but it was only in 1758 that it received its first governor named by the king, being afterwards declared an independent captaincy by Royal Charter of 1st October 1811. Its inhabited place called Mocha had its degree of town conferred in 1712, and was raised to a city and to the capital of the captaincy in 1762; it took the name of *Oeiras*, missing being called *Pombal*, for it would have changed its name in honour of the memory of the celebrated Minister of D. José I.; but 30 years after

it had become ennobled by being a province of the Empire, Piauhy by its provincial law of 21st July 1852, transferred its capital of the city of *Oeiras*, to that which in remembrance and love of the name and person of the present virtuous and well beloved Empress was called *Theresina*; it promises much for the future and is situated on the banks of the Parnahyba.

The province of Piauhy forgotten as it were as a fief, had for president a dominator, almost absolute, even after the promulgation of the constitution, and for more than twenty years, Manoel do Souza Martins, later Viscount of Parnahyba, who governed it by oppression, and without at least shewing in his arbitrary dominion an intelligent and civilizing character.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude is all southern, and is comprised within 2° 45′ and 11° 40′; the longitude is 3° 5′ east and 5° 30′ west.

The greatest length of the province is from north to south 210 leagues from the Pontal da Ilha Grande, to the source of the river Parnahyba, and from east to west 78 leagues from the mouth of the river Urussuhy-assú in the Parnahyba, to the Serra dos *Dous Irmãos*, near to the sources of the river *Piauhy*. Its superficial extent in square leagues is 10,500. It has five leagues of sea coast.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by the Atlantic Ocean, on the south by the provinces of Bahia and Goyaz; on the east by Ceará and Pernambuco, and on the west by Maranhão.

The division with Maranhão was marked out: with Ceará it is by the rivulet or Iguarapé (branch channel) *Iguar-assú*, which precipitates itself into the most eastern

branch of the river Parnahyba, and by the *Serra Grande* or *Ipiapaba;* with Goyaz by the Serra do *Duro;* with Bahia and Pernambuco by the *Serra Grande* or *Ipiapaba,* which also takes other names.

## CLIMATE.

It is warm and damp: the rains which ordinarily commence in October, and continue until April, are accompanied by violent thunder storms, and mark the winter; but they are becoming less abundant. Intermittent fevers are endemic on the banks of the Parnahyba, and on those of some other rivers; away from those places the territory of the province is healthy.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The soil consists in the greater part of extensive plains covered with herbage and grass, with palm trees and piassabas, there are nevertheless undulating hills.

The mountains become developed in the extreme south and in the east.

## OROGRAPHY.

The principal Cordilheira is that of *Ipiaba* which goes on to join that of the *Vertentes:* the Serra of *Piauhy* to the west, and those of *Imperatriz* and *Gurgueia* to the south-west are, after the former, the most important.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The Parnahyba represents the only important basin of the province, receiving the *Balsa* or das *Balsas,* and the others of which mention has already been made in the eigth chapter of the first part.

The most notable lake is that of Parnahyba, which is twelve leagues long.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* There are to be found silver, iron, lead, copperas, alum, rock-salt; load-stone, talc, chalk and abundance of lime stone, and much saltpetre.

*Vegetable kingdom.* The woods are relatively few, but they are not wanting in fine timber for building purposes; on the plains near the sea, cocoa-nut trees abound and in sundry districts, carnaubas and piassabas (both species of palm); jalap, ipeacuanha and the cahinanna are not rare; the ambú, jaboticaba, mangaba and other trees bearing fine flavoured fruit, and the attas more than the others, are found in great number; but herbage and grass predominate.

*Animal kingdom.* It is in general the same as that of the preceding provinces; deer are very numerous, as are macaws etc.

The breeding of cattle as one could foresee is the principal, or rather the only considerable industry of the province.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

In agriculture, the cultivation of cotton, tobacco, mandioc, Indian corn, and other grain, and sugar cane is explorated; but barely for the exigencies of the home consumption of the population; it is only cotton and rum that are exported. The outward commerce is made through Parnahyba, where there is a custom house; but Piauhy also receives foreign merchandize through the intermediary commerce with Maranhão and other provinces. The steamers of the *Campanhia Pernambucana de Navegação* purpose extending their voyages monthly to the port of *Amarração* in Piauhy, which will be a great advantage to this province, where another company, that of *Navegação a vapor*

*do Rio Parnahyba*, already subsidized is plying, and whose steamers go twice a month from Parnahyba as far as Manga, 699 kilometers from the bar of Canarias.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 220,000 inhabitants, 200,000 being free, 20,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 1 senator, 3 deputies to the general assembly, and 24 to the provincial.

The province forms one sole electoral district, with 346 electors and 29,777 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard*, with 14 superior commands: 32 battalions of infantry, 6 squadrons and 4 corps of cavalry in active service, and 5 sections of battalions of infantry of reserve; shewing 20,014 national guards on active service and 3863 reserve; total 23,877.

*Police corps:* 143 men (complete number).

It must be mentioned, that in a new statistic of the national guard of the province, are to be found 27,614 national guards on active service, 3886 on reserve, total 31,500.

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary:* 40 schools for boys, with 715 scholars and 22 for females with 344 scholars. *Private primary:* 5 schools all for boys with 100 scholars.

*Public secondary:* 1 establishment for boys with 41 scholars.

*Private secondary:* also 1 for boys, information being wanted as to the number that frequent it.

The establishment of *Public secondary instruction* mentioned in this statistic, is that of the lyceum of the capital of the province, that has a course of the humanities, unfortunately ill attended: but besides this, there are two separate French and Latin schools in Oeiras, and further at the capital the interesting institution of the *educandos*

*artifices* (school for artisans), in which is given primary instruction, and useful teaching in the tailors, shoemakers, tinsmiths, blacksmiths, coopers, carpenters &c. departments.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Piauhy is divided and sub-divided into districts, and parishes as follows.

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Theresina (c. a. capital) | 1. Nossa Senhora do Amparo.<br>2. N. S. das Dôres. |
| 2. Campo-Maior | 1. Campo Maior (t.) | 1. Santo Antonio. |
| | 2. União (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Remedios. |
| 3. Parnahyba | 1. Parnahyba (c.) | 1. N. S. da Graça.<br>2. N. S. dos Remedios. |
| 4. Oeiras | 1. Oeiras (c.) | 1. N. S. da Victoria. |
| 5. São Gonçalo | 1. São Gonçalo (t.) | 1. São Gonçalo. |
| | 2. Manga (t.) | 1. N. S. da Uhica. |
| | 3. Jerumenha (t.) | 1. Santo Antonio. |
| 6. Piracaruca. | 1. Piracaruca (t.) | 1. N. S. do Carmo. |
| | 2. Pedro II (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| 7. Barras | 1. Barras (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| | 2. Batalha (t.) | 1. S. Gonçalo do Amarante. |
| 8. Principe Imperial | 1. Principe Imperial (t.) | 1. Senhor do Bomfim. |
| | 2. Independencia (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna. |
| 9. Valença | 1. Valença (t.) | 1. N. S. do O'. |
| | 2. Marvão (t.) | 1. N. S. do Desterro. |
| 10. Jaicós | 1. Jaicós (t.) | 1. N. S. das Mercês. |
| | 2. Picos (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Remedios. |
| 11. Paranaguá | 1. Paranaguá (t.) | 1. N. S. do Livramento.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição do Corrente.<br>3. Santa Philomena. |
| | 2. Bom Jesus da Gorgueiã (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus. |
| 12. S. Raymundo Nonato | 1. S. Raymundo Nonato (t.) | 1. S. Raymundo Nonato.<br>2. S. João Baptista. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Theresina*, the capital of the province, is on the left bank of the Parnahyba near the mouth of the Poty: it was founded in 1852 by the senator, councellor José Antonio Saraiva, then president of Piauhy, a commercial city; it has become considerably developed.

*Parnahyba*, situated about four leagues above the mouth of the river which gave it its name; it is the first city of the province in commerce and population.

*Oeiras*, a central city on the right bank of the small river, wich after a course of three miles falls into the Canindé; formerly the capital of the province, it lost its importance and is in a state of decadency since 1852.

# CHAPTER V.

## PROVINCE OF CEARÁ.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The territory comprised in the captaincy given to João de Barras, who by adverse fortune had the gift annulled, the province of Ceará owes its name to that of one of the smallest rivers that water it. Its colonization commenced by garrisons; but who founded the first is a doubtful question, and almost, or up to the present, not solved. Ayres Cazal either from supposition, error, or right judgment of others, says that there already were garrisoned forts on the coast of Ceará, when under the general government of Diego Botelho, and by order of the same, Pedro Coelho went on by land in 1603 (A. Cazal says by sea; but by sea went only two caravels, exploring and sounding the coast) with 80 colonists and 800 Indians to conquer Ceará. It is known that the result was disastrous, and the object which Pedro Coelho endeavoured to obtain in the expedition was lost, as also much more muddled and indeed entirely undone was an expedition directed by two Jesuit priests in 1607.

The metropolitan government and the colonial government of Brazil were much concerned at the frequency of the visits of French vessels, and the news of the friendly relations which the French entertained with the Indians of Ceará, and also already with Maranhão. In 1610 Martim

Soares, then lieutenant of Rio Grande, was for that reason sent to erect on the neighbouring shore of the point of Mucuripe a fortified place for a garrison, to which he added a hermitage to which was given the name of Nossa Senhora do Amparo.

In 1613, when Daniel de la Ravardière with his French expeditionary forces occupied the island of Maranhão, Jeronymo de Albuquerque was sent together with some people to found a captaincy, beyond Ceará, in the port of *Camucin;* whether this undertaking had relation to that establishment of hostile foreigners or wheter the Brazilian chief had himself taken his measures, he came to an understanding with Martim Soares, and while the latter went in an unfortunate voyage by sea, in order to reconnoitre the coast to leeward, and the French forces in Maranhão, Jeronymo de Albuquerque, in fulfilling his commission and finding objectionable the situation of the port of *Camucin*, began the foundation of a populated place which he called of Nossa Senhora do Rosario, in the bay of *Tartarugas*, or of *Jericoá-coára*, in the *tupy* tongue.

In 1621 the captaincy of Ceará formed together with those of Pará and Maranhão, the State of this last name, separated from the rest of Brazil. The Dutch war, which also for more than 2 years (from November 1641 until February 1644) was active in Maranhão and Ceará, and after that the irregularity which was often observed in the independence, and in the dependencies of the captaincies, are the cause of great doubts as to the time and occasion in which that last separated itself from the State of Maranhão, passing on to become a sattelite of that of Pernambuco, which from legislative disposition known became dependent in 1799 as per charter of 12th January of that year.

A province of the Empire since the foundation of the same, Ceará is of the number of those, in which political

heat sometimes carried beyond the bounds of law was most felt. The revolutions of 1817 and 1824 extended their movements to this province. In 1831 colonel Pinto Madeira either driven by threatened persecution or by insane daring against the order of ideas and facts inaugurated on the 7th April by the abdication of Dom Pedro I., took up arms with his followers, and soon found himself beaten, and he was later on publicly executed; but in violent offense of the laws.

Ceará would now be one of the foremost and richest provinces of Brazil, if it were not for the great and fatal droughts which periodically lay waste its vast interior. Having at its disposal immense natural resources of admirable fertility after the epoch fortunately distant of this burning and destruction calamity, Ceará will still sail on the wings of incalculable prosperity and progress, as soon as the problem shall be solved of certain hydraulic succour for its long months of drought and trial, for want of water.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

It lies on the meridian of between 2° 45′ and 7° 11′ of north latitude, and 1° 55′ and 6° 25′ east longitude.

The province extends 106 leagues from north to south, from the point of *Jericóa coára* to the Serra *Araripe* in the district of Jardim near to the township of Correntes; and from east to west for 90 leagues from the top of the Serra of Apody to that of Ibiapada near to the sources of the river Ubatuba. Its superfice in square leagues is 2627. Its coast extends 120 leagues.

## BOUNDARY.

It is bounded on the north and north-east by the Atlantic Ocean; on the south by the provinces of Parahyba and Pernambuco; to the east by Rio Grande do Norte; to the west by Piauhy.

## CLIMATE.

Warm and damp on the seaboard, and in its neighbourhood, the climate in the interior is hot and dry and in general salubrious; in the interior as well as on the shores the severity of the summer heat is mitigated by a constant breeze: many parts of the interior are sought after on account of the purity of the air and healthy dwelling places: there are two seasons, the rainy, which is called the winter, and which commences in January or as late as March and lasts till June, and the dry season or summer which lasts till the end of the year; that first season is, however, irregular, as two years and more sometimes elapse without rain falling: the losses then are extraordinary; but from the moment that the first rains fall, vegetation shoots up with such prodigious fertility that the past evil is soon forgotten.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

From the illustrious senator Señor Pompeio de Souza Brazil, we learn the following from his writings:

"The surface of the ground is generally irregular; low and almost a swamp on the coast, it rises gradually up to the Cordillera of Ipiapaba, where it attains the height of 2000 to 3000 feet above the level of the sea; the interior opens out in great spaces of table land and grassy plains, and bristles with rocky points, and stony heights, and with some cool mountain ranges, but of small extent."

The geological construction of the land is altogether volcanic, for the greater part covered by calcareous and alluvial soil. As to its quality it may be divided into three kinds: on the *borders* of the *sea* (fresh and fit for culture); *hilly* (fresh, productive, and covered with woods); *interior* (dry, crossed by plains, rocky hills, and brooks, which only run in the winter season, but productive of rich pasture).

## OROGRAPHY.

The principal cordillera is that of Ibiapaba, which commences at Timonha on the coast, below Granja, and encircles the province from north-east to south-west finally linking itself to the western chain or that of the Vertentes, having before that taken various names; besides the *Ibiapaba*, there are the mountain ranges of *Maranguape*, *Acarape*, *Aratanha*, and *Baturité*, which separated merely by buttresses form an interesting group, and recommend themselves on account of the culture therein animatedly developed, and by their pleasant and healthy climate; *Machado*, *Uruburetama*, *Meruoca*, *Cosmos*, *Santa Rita*, *Bastiões*, *Boa Vista*, *Brejo Grande*, and, there are other modest mountain ranges, which join with small interruption the cordillera of *Ibiapaba*.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

In this and in the preceding article are copied almost textually the respective lessons of geography of senator Thomas Pompeo de Souza Brazil, who, being a distinguished native of Ceará, and well known geographer, had a right to be preferred here.

Three principal basins carry to the ocean the rain water which falls in the province; not one of them, however, is permanent; that of Acaracu which runs from south to north, getting volume from the tribute afforded by the rivers *Jacurutú*, *Grogaras*, *Macacos*, *Jatobá*, *Jaibóra;* that of Curú which runs through the middle of the province, and forms the port of *Parazinho*, and that of *Jaguarbie*, the most important, that advances from the west to the south-west towards the east, for the space of more than 360 miles, and disembogues below the *Aracati*, becoming big with the waters of the *Salgado*, *Banabuia* and *Queixeramubim*. Besides those three principal rivers, there are others, among which ought to be mentioned — *Camucim*, the bar of which

below Granja, gives to Ceará the best of its ports; the *Aracati-assu* which runs through a desert extremely dry and affording saltpetre; the *Mandaú*, *S. Gonçalo*, *Pacoti*, *Choró* and *Pirangi*.

Of the lakes which are few, the most remarkable in the province are the *Aguatú*, *Barro alto* in the *Telha*, that of *Macejana* and the *Encantada* in the *Aquiraz*, *Uruhahi* in the *Cascavel*, *Joguaraçu* in the *Simpé* and *Camorapim* in the *Acaracú*.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* Gold is met with in various places as at *Ipú*, *Baturité* and *Lavras*, silver, plumbago, *lead*, *iron*, *antimony*, amianthus, crystals, chrysolites, alum, saltpetre, white lead, marble, &c.

*Vegetable kingdom.* Building timber abounds, such as tatajuba, ceder, pao d'arco, rosewood, &c. The oiticica is the largest tree, and that which gives the greatest shade in all the interior; precious wood and vegetables are met with for cabinet work and for dyeing purposes; medicinal herbs such as ipecacuanha, gums copal and mastich, and others; at Granja is found in very great number the tree called *arvore de cebo* (tallow tree), the fruit of which affords the substance from which its name is derived; among the palm trees the *carnahuba* is conspicuous as being extraordinarily abundant, for it covers the immense plains, and is of multiplied utility, and of which the whole tree is available, as already has been stated in chapter ninth of the first part. Among the fruit trees and shrubs of most esteemed flavour the attas of Ceará are the best in Brazil, the caju trees, the anana-abacaxi fruit (abacaxi pine apple) and other varieties of the same, the mangabas, araça (guava) and other vegetable productions of equal estimation, are common in the province.

The *animal kingdom* is the same as is met with in the neighbouring provinces, bearing in mind the difference of their hydrographic advantages especially as considering the abundance of aquatic birds, and the no small number of species of these which are wanting in Ceará.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The breeding of cattle especially bovine, and goats, the manufacture of candles, and of cheese in quantities for exportation, of Carnahuba straw hats and mats, of soap and snuff comprise the chief industry of Ceará; but this province has a fund of greater riches in the culture of sugar cane, of cotton, of tobacco, of coffee, the exportation of India rubber, of hides, half hides (tanned) and vegetables; its commerce is carried on direct with foreign countries, from the port of its capital, and with the neighbouring provinces from the ports of Aracati, Acaracú and Granja; steam navigation companies carry on the communication between Ceará and Pernambuco, Maranhão and Pará; the coasting navigation performed by small vessels binds still closer and augments the relations of economy of these four provinces. There is now being constructed a railway, on the *tram road* system, which will extend from the city of *Fortaleza* (capital) to the municipality of *Batarité*, the basis for the construction of a *railway* from the said capital to *Mecejana* are also formed.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 530,000 inhabitants, of whom 510,000 are free and 20,000 slaves.

*National and provincial administration:* 4 senators, 8 deputies of the general assembly, and 32 of the provincial.

The province is divided into 3 electoral districts which present the total of 1261 electors and 66,836 citizens who are qualified to vote.

*Public force:* national guard with 18 superior commands, 52 battalions and 3 sections of battalions of infantry, 8 corps and 2 squadrons of cavalry on active service, and 5 battalions and 14 sections of battalions of reserve, representing 57,089 national guards on active service, and 9231 reserve; total 66,320.

*Police corps*: 308 men (effective force).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary* instruction schools for boys 112 with 5079 scholars; for girls 62 with 2350 scholars. *Secondary public instruction:* 5 establishments all for boys with 100 scholars; *private secondary:* 5 establishments for boys with 166 scholars and 11 for girls with 43 scholars.

The establishment—*a caza dos educandos artifices* (school for artizans) is not included among the above.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Ceará is divided and subdivided into districts, towns, &c. and parishes as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Fortaleza (city a. capital) | 1. S. José de Ribamar de la capitale. |
| | 2. Paracurú (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Remedios de Paracurú. |
| | 3. Maranguape (c.) | 1. N. S. da Penha de Maranguape. |
| | 4. Pacatuba (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Pacatuba. |
| 2. Aquiraz | 1. Aquiraz (t.) | 1. S. José de Ribamar de Aquiraz. |
| | 2. Cascavel (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| 3. Aracaty | 1. Aracaty (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de Aracaty. |
| | 2. S. João de Jaguaribe (t.) | 1. S. João de Jaguaribe. |
| | 3. União (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna da União. |
| 4. Icó | 1. Icó (cidade) | 1. N. S. da Expectação. |
| | 2. Pereiro (t.) | 1. S. Cosme e S. Damião. |
| | 3. Lavras (t.) | 1. S. Vicente.<br>2. S. Raymundo Nonato. |
| 5. Saboeiro | 1. Saboeiro (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario. |
| | 2. S. Matheus (t.) | 1. N. S. do Carmo de S. Matheus. |
| | 3. Telha (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna. |
| | 4. Assaré (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres de Assaré. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 6. Crato | 1. Crato (c.) | 1. N. S. da Penha. |
| | 2. Missão Velha (t.) | 1. S. José da Missão Velha. |
| | 3. Barbalha (t.) | 1. Santo Antonio. |
| 7. Jardim | 1. S. Antonio do Jardim (t.) | 1. Santo Antonio do Jardim. |
| | 2. Milagres (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Milagres. |
| 8. Inhamuns | 1. S. João do Principe (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de S. João do Principe. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Carmo de Flores. |
| | 2. Arneiroz (t.) | 1. N. S. da Paz de Arneiroz. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Cococy. |
| | 3. Martim Pereira (t.) | 1. N. S. da Gloria. |
| 9. Quixeramobim | 1. Quixeramobim (c.) | 1. S. Antonio de Quixeramobim. |
| | | 2. Jesus Maria José de Quixadá. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Boa Viagem. |
| | 2. Riachuelo (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Riacho de Sangue. |
| | | 2. Bom Jesus Apparecido. |
| | 3. Jaguaribe Mirim (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Boa Vista. |
| 10. Baturité | 1. Baturité (c.) | 1. N. S. da Palma. |
| | 2. Canindé (t.) | 1. S. Francisco das Chagas. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição da Barra. |
| | 3. Acarápe (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Acarápe. |
| 11. Imperatriz | 1. Imperatriz (t.) | 1. N. S. das Mercês. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio de Aracaty assú. |
| | 2. S. Francisco de Uruburetama (t.) | 1. S. Francisco. |
| 12. Sobral | 1. Sobral (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| | 2. S. Quiteria (t.) | 1. S. Quiteria. |
| 13. Acaracú | 1. Acaracú (b.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Barra do Acaracú. |
| | 2. Sant' Anna (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna. |
| 14. Ipú | 1. Ipú (t.) | 1. S. Gonçalo do Ipú. |
| | 2. Tamboril (t.) | 1. S. Anastacia do Tamboril. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 15. Granja | 1. Granja (c.) | 1. S. José. |
| | | 2. Santo-Antonio do Imboassú. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Piedade da Varzea-Grande. |
| | 2. Viçosa (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção. |
| 16. S. Bernardo das Russas | 1. S. Bernardo das Russas (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Fortaleza*, a city and the capital of the province with 20,000 inhabitants, situated on the coast at 3 miles to the south of the point of Mucuripe and almost 6 from the bar of the river Ceará; it is on an even plain and is well built; it has 7 squares, that of Dom Pedro II. being planted with shady trees, the streets are wide, straight and well paved; besides 900 regularly built houses, many of which are storied, there are out of the line (of streets) more than a thousand covered with straw, inhabited by families of small means; the parish church is a majestic temple, three other churches, the President's palace, the Misericordia hospital, the barracks of the first line regiment, and that of the police, the building for the education of artizans, the municipal chamber, and still some few more are its most notable edifices; it further counts two small bridges, and a fountain: its port is formed by a natural rocky reef, and is not convenient for disembarcation. It has a lyceum which nourishes a precious course of study of the humanities, and which was comprised in the number of public establishments of secondary instruction in the competent article of the statistics; finally the light house on the point of Mucuripe is seen from the city being 3 miles distant.

*Aracaty*, a city at 8 miles distance from the mouth of the Jaguaribe and on the eastern bank of this river, is the most important after the capital, on account of its commerce and industrial trade, and it is a still greater exporter

than the capital, on account of its being the entrepot of the whole valley of the Jaguaribe; it manufactures and exports a great quantity of carnauba (vegetable tallow) candles, prepares glue, straw hats and mats; it possesses 5 churches, storied houses, and is proud of the spirit and activity of its inhabitants; it is 90 miles distant from the capital.

*Içó*, a central city, 150 miles distant from Aracaty, is on the river *Salgado;* the streets are good, it has four churches, that of Bomfim being conspicuous; it receives the produce of the more central districts, and sends it on to Aracaty, which city pays for them in foreign merchandize. In the summer it suffers from great heat.

*Sobral* on the left bank of the Acaracú at 60 miles from the sea, is a commercial town with elegant buildings, a distinguished temple which is its parish church, and 3 beautiful chapels; the port of Acaracú is its commercial port.

*Crato* is a populous and considerable city, owing to its fertility and the natural richness of the lands of its municipality; it is 240 miles distant from the sea.

*Granja*, a city on the *Camocim*, and having the best port in the province; and has a monthly communication by steam, besides the vessels employed in its active commerce.

*Quixeramobim*, a city in the very heart of the interior, is one of the most healthy places in the province; it counts more than 400 houses, and a fine church dedicated to S. Antonio; its municipality is rich in cattle. It was formerly called *Campo maior de Quixeramobim* (Largest Field of Quixeramobim).

*Maranguape*, a city near the serra of the same name, and nearly 11 miles from the capital; it is both great and rich from its production of coffee and sugar cane, which are cultivated with the greatest results in its municipality.

*Batarité*, a city of recent date, of promising development, which is being carried out with spirit; it is close to the serra of its own name, and at little less than 50 miles from the capital; the cultivation of coffee, of sugar cane, of cereals and vegetables is becoming active and begins to enrich its commerce: the railroad which soon will bring it nearer to Fortaleza shows its importance, which will augment by the easier and cheaper carriage of its agricultural produce, besides the immense advantage of the exploration of its mines of gold, and that of other treasures of the mineral kingdom, which its territory offer.

## COLONIZATION OF THE INDIANS AND CIVILIZATION.

The civilizing efforts have been almost null in their result, as might be expected by seeing the insufficiency of the means employed; colonization equally null, is wanting in the province of Ceará, which otherwise, almost free from that antipathetical slave element, and its ostensible condemner, for, equally with some other provinces, it goes on extirpating annually, by means of freeing, to which end an item of its budget is destined, and other philanthropic endeavours are made, it had a right to deserve for that reason, and from the fruitfulness of its soil, a great amount of European immigration. In Ceará doubtless are to be feared great losses in the periodical droughts, happily occurring only at intervals of many years space; but immediately after comes an extraordinarily productive abundance with equal certainty, both prompt and marvellous, which enriches those who had been impoverished, and besides this, both, art and science, have already shewn the means

of saving and preserving the surplus waters of the rainy season, and which are wanted in the great drought.

Doubtless the lesson taught by such experience will give thousands of Portuguese immigrants an inclination for Ceará; for there awaits them besides the abundance and riches the fraternity of religion, of language, customs, and even climate of which they will complain much less than the European from the north.

# CHAPTER VI.

## PROVINCE OF RIO GRANDE DO NORTE.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The territory of this province ought to form a part of the captaincy granted to the historian and esteemed author of the *Decadas*, the constantly read and studied classical writer João de Barros, the unfortunate donee who lost all the fruit of his pains, and miscalculated in the association he made for the establishment of the colony in his immense—not so named but real—fief.

Expelled from Parahyba, the French privateers continued obstinately to explore and to carry off all that they could take from the neighbouring coast; the orders from the court of Spain, and consequently those from the Governor General of Brazil, Dom Francisco de Souza, determined the conquest and caused to be initiated the colonization of Rio Grande do Norte.

In 1597 Manoel Mascarenhas, a captain of Pernambuco, set out with about one thousand colonists, Indians and slaves, to possess himself of those lands, where at half a league's distance from the bar of Rio Grande he founded the hamlet of *Natal*, and to defend the entrance of the river, he constructed in 1599 on the reef on the southern side, the port which he called the *Tres reis Magos*. From these two dates is to be seen that two years and some months of labour and fighting were spent in this conquest

strongly disputed by the *Potyguares*, the lords of both banks of that river, which they called *Potingy*. The aid furnished from Parahyba by Feliciano Coelho, a most important alliance with the Indian Sorobabé, morubixaba (chief) of one of the hordes of the Potyguares, and above all the decisive help of the brave Jeronymo de Albuquerque, the Brazilian natural son of the Portuguese chief of the same name, decided the victory, and established the colony, which had for its first nucleus that populated site, called *Natal*, having inaugurated its parish church on the 25th December 1599.

Well timed for the safety of the rising colony, was chosen, for the first captain of Rio Grande, which later was styled *do Norte*, to distinguish it,—the intrepid and energetic Jeronymo de Albuquerque.

In December of 1631 the Dutch commanded by Calenfels were driven back from Rio Grande do Norte; but in December 1633 another expedition headed by Ceulen and directed by the famous Calabar, who in 1632 had deserted from the Pernambucan camp and went over to the Dutch, took the fortress of the *Tres reis Magos*, to which was given the name of Ceulen; then began the foreign dominion of the captaincy, which ceased in fact in 1645, the Dutch being routed and put to flight towards Parahyba by the valiant and daring Philippe Camarão.

In 1654 Dom João IV. gave a part of the captaincy of Rio Grande do Norte to Manoel Jordão, who was shipwrecked and drowned when about to disembark. The grant became null from that cause.

After Lopo Furtado de Mendonça had in 1589 the title of county conferred on it, Rio Grande do Norte under the administration of captains general, and governors, continued as before to be a captaincy dependent now on Pernambuco, and regularly on the general government of Bahia, but remained subject in 1701 to Pernambuco, until

in 1817 in the convulsions and disorders of the republican revolution of that year, its governor José Ignacio Borges emancipated de facto the captaincy from that legal dependence, binding the same to the capital in all its political and administrative relations; this abuse of power forgotten in the heat of the immediate and extraordinary events, was at once sanctioned by the title and grade of Province, with which Rio Grande do Norte entered into the number of the nineteen which in 1822 formed the Empire of Brazil.

The progress and development of this province during the colonial dominion, and still after this terminated in 1808, were left so depressed and forgotten, that barely in 1818 was it separated from the only district that it formed with Parahyba. From 1822 forward it began to flourish; still, however, modestly, so that, nothwithstanding it was much more prosperous, in comparison, than in the past time, it continues to await a more careful exploration of its natural resources, and a better and easier communication with the neighbouring provinces, not only coastwise, but with the interior.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude all north is between 4° 54′ and 6° 28′. The longitude all east of the meridian adopted, between 5° 22′ and 8° 18′. Its greatest extent from north to south is forty leagues from the point of *Redondinha* to the left bank of the river Crumatuhú, and from east to west fifty six leagues from the Marcos to the serra of Camará. Its superfice in square leagues is 2000.

The province has a measurement of seventy leagues of coast, more or less.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north and east by the Atlantic Ocean; on the south it is separated from the province of

Parahyba by the river *Guajá* and the Serra of *Luiz Gomes;* to the west and north-west by the province of Ceará near the bar of the river *Apody* called *Mossoró*, as far as two leagues above, and by the serras of *Apody* and *Camará.*

## CLIMATE.

Is warm and healthy: the winter or rainy season commences in March or April and continues till June or July.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface is uneven: sandy and low to the north, and adjoining the coast: in the interior it is cut across by small serras and arid mounts, and to a great extent covered with dry scrub; the woods are met with in the eastern parts and in the serras.

## OROGRAPHY.

The predominant cordillèra is that of the *Borborema* or the *Cayriris Novos*, that advance from the east to the west and branching to the south and to the north by serras in general small, and which take sundry names. The serras of *Apody* and of *Camará* and that of *Luiz Gomes* have a boundary importance in their position already marked.

Besides those, the *Estrella*, *S. Cosme*, *S. Domingos*, *S. José*, that of the *Camelo*, of *Paunaty*, at the head waters of the Pinhancó, of *Bonito*, of *Pattu*, and the bare *Cabello não tem*, of *Porto Alegre*, of *Campo Grande*, of *Martins*, and some others may still be counted as the principal, but they are in general of short extent.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

It has no considerable basin; the most winding river is that of the *Piranhas*. most abundant in fish, and which disembogues by five mouths; *Rio Grande* or *Potingy* which comes from the centre of the province, and making a fine

appearance, discharges itself into the sea at twelve miles from the cape of S. Roque; both being navigable by small craft much beyond the mouth: the *Apody*, the *Aguamaré*, the *Gunepabú*, the *Cunhahú*, the *Guagehy*, to a certain extent navigable, and favoured by confluents, still more modest than itself, preside over the irrigation of the province, which not owing to them any great amount of navigation is still indebted to them for a notable degree of fertility.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* It is already represented by gold, silver and iron, amiantus, calcareous stone, crystals &c.

*Vegetable kingdom.* In the neighbourhood of the coast, and even in the interior, palm trees abound, as does excellent timber in the woods, some resinous trees of value, and also the cupahiba: the cajú, mangaba, jaboticaba, ambusa, araçaza, and other fruit trees and shrubs, the fruit of which is so much esteemed, are found in countless number. The carnauba abounds.

*Animal kingdom.* It is always the same, considered generally: the jucurutús and the macaubans which kill the snakes are much prised and esteemed. In the desert of Seridó cochineal is found in great abundance.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

Sugar and cotton represent in the export commerce the principal produce that the agriculture of the province brings thereto. Cereals and the mandioc plant from which Farinha is extracted, are consumed by the population and are alimental of the inward commerce. The industry of cattle and horse breeding, and that of extracting salt and carnahuba, are merely helps to the two first agricultural productions in export forming with them the most precious articles of provincial revenue.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 240,000 inhabitants, of which 20,000 are slaves.

*National representation*: 1 senator, 2 deputies of the general assembly, and 22 of the provincial, the province forming one electoral district, with 476 electors, and 29,812 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force:* national guard with 6 superior commands, 23 battalions of infantry, and 1 squadron of cavalry on active service, and 1 battalion and section of battalion of reserve, with 14,843 national guards on duty and 2112 in reserve; total 16,950.

*Police corps:* with 159 men (effectual force).

*Primary and secondary instruction: Primary public:* schools 62, of which 41 for boys with 1887 scholars, 21 for girls with 735 scholars. *Private primary*: 3 schools, 1 for boys, with 25 scholars, 2 for girls with 41 scholars.

*Secondary public:* 5 establishments, all of which for boys with 117 scholars

It is not officially known whether there are in the province private schools of secondary instruction.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Rio Grande do Norte is divided and subdivided into the following districts, municipalities and parishes.

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Natal (city and capital) | 1. N. S. da Apresentação do Natal. |
| | | 2. S. Gonçalo. |
| | 2. Ceará Mirim (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Prazeres e S. Miguel. |
| | 3. Touros (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus dos Navegantes do Porto de Touros. |
| 2. S. José de Mipibú | 1. S. José de Mipibú (c.) | 1. S. Anna de S. José de Mipibú. |
| | 2. Papary (t.) | 1. N. S. do O' de Papary. |
| | 3. Nova Cruz (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Nova Cruz. |
| | | 2. S. Rita da Cachoeira. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 3. Canguaretama | 1. Canguaretama (t.) | 1. N. S. da Penha de Canguaretama. |
| | 2. Goianinha (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Prazeres de Goianinha. |
| 4. Assú. | 1. Assú (c.) | 1. S. João Baptista do Assú. |
| | 2. Sant' Anna dos Matos (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna dos Matos. |
| 5. Mossoró | 1. S. Luzia de Mossoró (t.) | 1. S. Luzia de Mossoró. |
| | 2. Triumpho (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna do Triumpho. |
| | 3. Apody (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista do Apody. |
| | 4. Caraúbas (t.) | 1. S. Salvador de Caraúbas. |
| 6. Maioridade | 1. Imperatriz (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna da Imperatriz.<br>2. N. S. das Dôres do Patú. |
| | 2. Páo de Ferro (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Páo de Ferro. |
| | 3. Porto Alegre (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista do Porto Alegre. |
| 7. Macáo | 1. Macáo (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Macáo. |
| | 2. Angicos (t.) | 1. S. José dos Angicos. |
| 8. Seridó | 1. Principe (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna da Villa do Principe. |
| | 2. Acary (t.) | 1. N. S. da Guia do Acary. |
| | 3. Jardim (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Arvoredo do Jardim. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

The following are the principal cities of the province of Rio Grande do Norte. *Natal* the capital, at a league's distance from the coast almost at the mouth of the Potingy, still small, and which is latterly falling off somewhat in its commercial importance: it has for its distinguished buildings four churches, a hospital of charity, the palace of the assembly (of deputies) and the provincial treasury, and the fort of the *Reis Magos* which defends the bar, and calls to mind notable and glorious deeds in the country's history. *Mipibú*, the port of the capital, *Imperatriz* in the serra of Martins are becoming wealthy, as being in centre of the agriculture of the country. *Assú* on the left bank of the

river *Piranhas*, and about 20 miles above the mouth of this, flourishes in the western part of the province, and *Macáo*, offering welcome at the mouth of the same river, is of moment from the maritime importance of its port and its salt works, receiving in the former more than a hundred vessels annually to load salt. The ports of Guarapes and Macahiba are becoming great from the commerce which shuns the capital, and goes to them.

# CHAPTER VII.

## PROVINCE OF PARAHYBA.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

This province comprises the greater part of the thirty leagues of the northern part of the captaincy of the donee Pero Lopes de Souza, and which under the name of the captaincy of *Itamaracá* extended from the *river flowing round the island of Itamaracá, to which river I formerly gave the name of Santa Cruz*—as far as Bahia da Traição; its first inhabitants might therefore consider themselves as the factory founded by Christovão Jacques in that island, if the boundary mark had still existed, and Pernambuco would not have taken in the land to the south, which extends as far as *Abiahi*, and which therefore cannot be considered as belonging to Parahyba, whose colonial and administrative life began fifty years after the mentioned deed of gift.

In 1581, by order of the Governor General Lourenço da Veiga, João Tavares made a feeble effort to found a village in the island *Camboa* in the river Parahyba: it is to be supposed that this weakly establishment had been destroyed by the French privateers who infested the coast, and who were on friendly terms with the Indians: inasmuch as Fructuoso Barboza, a rich landowner of Pernambuco, having offered in Lisbon to colonize Parahyba with the condition of being its captain general, and that its revenues for ten years should belong to him, and having obtained that favour (which annulled the privilege of the

donee), after much trouble and vexation sent on by land from Pernambuco to Parahyba in 1582 Simão Rodriguez Cardoso accompanied by 200 men, he conducting by sea a force doubtlessly not small, for at the bar of that river, he captured and burned *five* out of *eight* French vessels which he there met with, which renders the tolerance of the insignificant village of *Camboa* by the French and the Indians, who were the enemies of the Portuguese.

Fructuoso Barboza fortified himself in a village on the north side of the river in front of Cabedêlo; but losing a son who together with forty men fell into an ambush of the savages, led by the French, became low spirited and disgusted with the place and retreated, carrying back all his people.

In 1584 the Governour General Manoel Telles Barreto, availing himself of the squadron of the spanish general Diego Flores Valdez which had entered Bahia, concerted measures with the latter that he should come to Parahyba with nine vessels, while Dom Philippe de Moura and Fructuoso Barbosa should march overland from Pernambuco with about 1000 men. Valdez looked with contempt on the situation of Cabedêlo, and ordered the raising of a fort at a league's distance, to which he gave the name of S. Philippe (which was the king's name) on the left bank of the Parahyba; a Spaniard, Francisco Castejon, remained as magistrate and the director of the works.

The choice of the Spaniard as chief, and the valour of the Indians, almost inutilized the conquest made by the aid of such powerful resources: the savages warmly disputed the dominion of those lands, and the auxiliary forces from Pernambuco went into the interior despising the authority of Castejon, and returned beaten and pursued by the savages, wo laid siege to the fort. Opportune aid brought to them by Pedro Lopes from Itamaracá, and fresh auxiliaries from that island and from Pernambuco,

who successively aided Costejon, barely put off for a time a second or third victory by the indomitable savages. In June 1585 the Spanish chief and Pedro Lopes burned the fort and retired confessedly vanquished.

But immediately the *morubixada* (chief of a tribe) Pirajyba who had come from his hamlet to aid his brothers of Parahyba, becoming furious at the ungrateful accusation they brought against him of cowardice, declared himself to be on the side of Portuguese, and assuaged his thirst of vengeance in combating his own race; the colonists of Pernambuco hasten to help, and form an alliance with Pirajyba; the inimical savages were overthrown and put to disorderly flight, and the conquest and colonization of Parahyba were firmly and permanently effected in 1586, the new fort and nucleus of colonization rising up on the right bank of the river of that name, and of which Francisco de Morales, arriving from Europe in April of the same year, took possession and government, who gave it the forgotten name of *Philippea.*

Following the destinies or fortune of Pernambuco, Parahyba was conquered by the Dutch; the latter fraternized with the former in the heroic war commenced in 1645, and suffered as an accomplice in the political convulsions of 1817 and 1824; not being but pretending to be adverse to that of 1848.

In 1684 it was raised to an independent captaincy, in 1755 again subordinate to Pernambuco from which it emancipated itself re-assuming its grade of a sister equal in legal rights of administration by royal charter of 17th January 1799: in 1822 it entered as one of the stars, or as a province in the system of the principal division of the Empire.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

Latitude north betwen 6° 15′, and 7° 50′ longitude east between 5° 5′ and 8° 25′.

From north to south the extent of this province is thirty leagues, from the Serra de Cuité to the slopes of the Serra of the Cayriris velhos, between the provinces of Rio Grande do Norte and of Perambuco, and from east to west for seventy leagues, from Cape Branco to the frontier of Ceará at the sources of the *Piranhas*. Superfice in square leagues three thousand five hundred. Its coast measures twenty eight to thirty leagues in extent.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by the province of Rio Grande do Norte, the river Guajá, and Serra of Luiz Gomes; to the south by the province of Pernambuco at the mouth of the Capiberibe Mirim, or by Guayana and the Serra of the Cayris Velhos; to the west by the province of Ceará, at the Serras of *Araripe*, *Pajehú* or *Piedade*, which separate the waters of the *Salgado* and *Piranhas*, and to the east by the Atlantic Ocean.

## CLIMATE.

It is hot and dry, but mitigated by the sea breezes; the winter (or rainy season) extends from the equinox of March to July, and is not severe; on the contrary the province suffers from drought which from time to time diminishes its agricultural produce; this contrariety is compensated by rich harvests in regular seasons, and by the fortunate conditions of salubrity which in general the whole territory enjoys.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface of the country is very uneven; Ayres Cazal says, perhaps with some exaggeration, that over more than two thirds of it there are only to be found scrub and sandy places, worthless for agricultural purposes; the land is most certainly very dry, and deficient

of natural irrigation; it serves well, however, for rearing cattle, for it abounds in an extraordinary manner with macambira, a herb that gives them sustenance, and which from its aqueous properties affords them relief for a long time from thirst: the third part of the country comprises zones and parts of strong soil, giving sustenance, and is most fertile, covered with extensive and rich forests, which are principally found in the highest serras and in the neighbourhood of some of the rivers.

## OROGRAPHY.

The *Borborema* is the predominant mountain range; all the mountains and serras, which are elsewhere met with under various names, are branches and buttresses of the same: it traverses the province coming from north to south, and divides it into two parts, the eastern and western: it extends to the south separating Parahyba do Norte from Perambuco under the name of *Serra dos Cayriris Velhos*, which ends in that of *Imburanas*, near the sea: that same serra of the Cayriris, with which it forms an angle and merges into the serra of Pajehu, which goes on in a western divisional line, which separates the province from Ceará: on the north line, advances immediately from west to east, the Serra of Luiz Gomes, much less extensive; in the interior, the Serra of *Bacamarte*, a little to the south, and that of *Raiz* a little to the north, rise up and stretch out in the eastern part of the province: and in the western part the Serra of *Teixeira* to the south, and that of *Espinharas* more to the North, both being evidently branches which shoot out from *Borborema:* after those follows that of *Catolé*, and still beyond that the three small and successive serras running from the south to the north, of *Commissario*, *Branca* and *Negra*.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The province of Parahyba do Norte completely closed in by chains of mountains on the south and west, and by the immense wall of *Borborema* raised from north to south, to divide it into two parts already determined, sees the course of its rivers impelled necessarily in its eastern part to the Atlantic Ocean, and in its western seeking an exit to the sea through the boundary river of Rio Grande do Norte, which offers to it, between the Serra of Luis Gomes and that commanding wide space of land in which its waters run.

The basins on the eastern side have been studied in the chapter on general hydrography: it is sufficient then to mention other rivers otherwise of very secondary importance which discharge themselves in the ocean: taking a departure from the north, they are: after the bay dos Marcos, the *Pitanga*, which comes from Rio Grande do Norte, and to which is joined the *Camaratuba;* after the important *Mamanguape*, already brought under consideration, the *Miriry* and the *Camaçari*, and besides the principal *Parahyba do Norte*, the *Jaguaribe*, the *Curugy*, *Tabatinga*, *Graú*, *Catú*, *Abiahy*.

In the western part the Patu, the Piranhas, which traverse the province from south to north, leave it, these have their source in the Serra dos Cayairis, and after a course of more than sixty miles, they receive the river Peixe which comes from the north, fifty miles, and has its source in the serra of *Luis Gomes*, and twenty miles lower, on the right bank, the Piancó which is little inferior, and its brother owing to its source in the *Cayriris*, the limpid *Espinharas*, that joins the Piranhas, a little before leaving the territory of Parahyba: the Seridó and beyond the central wall of *Borborema* the *Cunhaú*, which also escapes and disembogues in the Atlantic at the extreme

southern dominion of the coast of the province of Rio Grande do Norte.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* The want of scientific study, and what may be said to be investigation on the minerals of this province, have already been written in the proper chapter of the first part of this work.

*Vegetable kingdom.* Timber abounds for various building purposes, as also for the cabinet maker and dyer: there are in great quantity paó Brazil, the copahiba tree, the gum mastic and the fruit trees of fruit prized in the adjoining provinces: the *catulez* palm tree gives a fruit which feeds cattle: the almond of the *piki* is eaten when roasted and from it is extracted an oil fit for cooking purposes.

*Animal kingdom.* It is the same as that of the other provinces.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The chief fonts of the agricultural riches of the province are cotton and sugar which are exported in quantities relatively considerable.

Of the cereals and farinha little or nothing is made beyond the quantity for home consumption of the population itself. The industry of bovine and other cattle rearing is not developed, as it ought or could be: the export of salted hides is very small.

Commerce is comparative with the limited number of the kinds of agricultural produce, and with the want of hands for labour.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 300,000 inhabitants, of which 270,000 are free and 30,000 slaves.

*National representation:* 2 senators, 5 deputies of the general assembly, and 30 of the provincial, having a total of 781 electors and 52,015 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force*: *national guard*, with 11 superior commands, 30 battalions and 2 sections of battalions on active service, and 2 battalions, 2 sections, 6 companies and 6 sections of reserve companies with 30,797 national guards on active and 4546 on reserve: total 35,343.

*Police corps:* 194 men (effective force).

*Primary and secondary instruction: primary public:* 79 schools for males with 2341 scholars and 24 for females, with 583 scholars. *Primary private:* schools for males 7 with 409 scholars and 2 for females with 67 scholars. *Secondary public:* 5 establishments for males, with 114 scholars. *Secondary private:* 1 school for males with 45 scholars.

The secondary public instruction is given in schools for Latin, established in some of the principal cities and in the provincial lyceum, which has 7 professorships, constituting a preparatory course of study. In this statistic is not comprised the interesting institution for educating artizans, who besides being taught in the workshops, receive primary instruction, and have schools of secondary instruction where discipline is applied by practical teaching.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Parahyba is divided and sub-divided into the following districts, municipalities and parishes:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Parahyba (city a. cap.) | 1. N. S. das Neves da Cidade do Parahyba. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Livramento. |
| | | 3. S. Rita. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição de Jacoca. |
| | 2. Alhandra | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção de Alhandra. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Penha de França de Taquara. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 2. Mamanguape | 1. Mamanguape (c.) | 1. S. Pedro e S. Paulo de Mamanguape. |
| | | 2. S. Miguel da Bahia da Traição. |
| | 2. Independencia (t.) | 1. N. S. da Luz da Independencia |
| 3. Bananeiras | 1. Bananeiras (t.) | 1. N. S. do Livramento de Bananeiras. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição da Araruana. |
| | 2. Cuité (t.) | 1. N. S. das Mercês de Cuité. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Luz da Pedra Lavrada. |
| 4. Arêa | 1. Arêa (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Arêa. |
| | 2. Alagôa Grande (t.) | 1. N. S. da Boa Viagem da Alagôa Grande. |
| | 3. Alagôa Nova (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna da Alagôa Nova. |
| 5. Campina Grande | 1. Campina Grande (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Campina Grande. |
| | 2. Ingá (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Ingá. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario de Natuba. |
| 6. Pilar | 1. Pilar (t.) | 1. N. S. do Pilar. |
| | 2. Pedras de Fogo (t.) | 1. N. S. Rainha dos Anjos de Taypú. |
| 7. S. João | 1. Cabaceiras (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Cabaceiras. |
| | 2. S. João (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Milagres de S. João. |
| | | 2. N. S. das Dôres da Alagôa do Monteiro. |
| 8. Teixeira | 1. Teixeira (t.) | 1. S. Maria Magdalena da Serra do Teixeira. |
| | 2. Patos | 1. N. S. da Guia dos Patos. |
| | | 2. Santa Luzia. |
| 9. Pombal | 1. Pombal (c.) | 1. N. S. do Bom Successo do Pombal. |
| | 2. Catolé da Rocha (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Remedios do Catolé da Rocha. |
| 10. Piancó | 1. Piancó (t.) | 1. S. Antonio do Piancó. |
| | 2. Misericordia (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Misericordia. |
| 11. Souza | 1. Souza (c.) | 1. N. S. dos Remedios de Souza. |
| | | 2. S. João de Souza. |
| | 2. Cajazeiras (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade de Cajazeiras. |
| | | 2. S. José das Pizanhas. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

The following are the principal cities: *Parahyba*, the capital of the province, at 9 miles distance from the mouth of the river which gave its name to it; it is commercial, rich and flourishing, divided into the *upper* city (cidade *alta*) which is the ancient one, and in which there is less life, and in the lower *(baixa)* or *voradouro* of greater activity of commerce, with better and more elegant edifices: a hospital of mercy (Misericordia), eight temples, three convents, the government palace; residence of the president, treasury, a good prison of recent construction, the military barrack, and a great wooden bridge, give the place beauty and importance: its port already mentioned, is defended by the fort of Cabedêlo, which has a glorious place in the reminiscence of history.

*Mamanguape*, near the capital, and that capital's rival in commercial matters. *Area* is prominent as the centre of its agricultural riches. *Souza* on the river *Peixe*, commands in the interior, the extensive territory in which cattle is reared.

*Pombal* and *Campina grande*, the first on the Pianco (Pinhanco of Ayres Cazal) in the interior, is one of the most ancient in Brazil, and recommends itself, among other things, for its healthy and most pleasant climate, the second situated in the serra of *Bacamarte*, attests its importance by its increase, notwithstanding the dearth of water, which is its torment in times of great drought.

# CHAPTER VIII.

## PROVINCE OF PERNAMBUCO.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The first Portuguese establishment on the Pernambuco shores was a factory which Christovão Jacques founded in 1526 on the bank of the Iguarassú river, but already, at that time, French privateers frequented the coast of that part of Brazil. According to some writers Pero Lopes de Souza in 1523, beat off seventy of those foreign vessels of traffic, who had seized on that factory: in the opinion of others it was Duarte Coelho Pereira who in 1530 expelled the French from thence, and at once commenced developing that nucleus of a colony, and immediately afterwards another on the beautiful site which the *Cahetés* called *Marim*, and where Duarte Coelho on arriving exclaimed: — "*Oh linda* situação para uma cidade!" (Oh beautiful site for a city), which caused the inhabited place so created to be called *Olinda*.

The name Perambuco is derived from *Perá-nabuco* which signified a stone bored through, a word composed of the dialect of the *Cahetes*, which seems to indicate fully the circumstance of the extensive reef at the point near to Olinda.

Some also say that Pernambuco was the Indian name of the Island of Itamaraca, and that the most salient point of the Chart below the populated place, which four years subsequently became the capital, was called Percaauri.

It is certain that in 1554 Duarte Coelho Pereira, a notable and estimable nobleman, received as a gift the hereditary captaincy of fifty leagues in extent, from the mouth of the river of S. Francisco, in the south, to the river Iguarussú in the north; it must, however, be remembered, that the captaincy of Pernambuco very early extended its territory and its administration to a good part of the northern portion of the gift made to Pero Lopes de Souza, and that it was called the captaincy of Itamaracá. Duarte Coelho was either in the lands which passed under his dominion, or came with his wife, many relations, and a great number of colonists, founding as the head of the gift which he enjoyed, the already existing or then nascent Olinda. More skilful than all the other donees, after having conquered and put to flight the terrible *Cahetés*, and leaguing himself with the *Tabayrés* or Tabayarés, which as his auxiliaries went against the former, exceeded all the chiefs and lords of the captaincies, in the order, and well combined system of administration with which he governed his own: he established an inventorial book of the lands, and another of the registry of the colonists; he promoted the marriage of these with Indian women, and gave a lively impulse to agriculture, so that Pernambuco soon distinguished herself by her prosperity and the development of the colony.

Causes for vexation were not wanting to the donee, one of the chief of which, and of which he complained in writing to the king, was the sending out of transported convicts, he being no less disgusted with the *moral quality* of the women who where sent to him from the kingdom; but even so, he conducted himself in such a manner, that in 1549, when the general government was organized in Brazil, the privileges of which the other donees were deprived, were exceptionally maintained to him.

Not even at the death of Duarte Coelho in 1554 did the captaincy fall off: his widow, in the absence of the son and heir who was studying in Portugal, governed in his stead; but Jeronymo de Albuquerque, brother of that lady, and barely twenty years of age, had inherited the energy of his brother in law, and being brave, routed the *Cahetés*, who again made active and threatening war.

The captaincy of Pernambuco flourishing and stout-hearted, co-operated very efficaciously towards the conquest and colonization of Parahyba, and Rio Grande do Norte; conspicuous in the latter was the first or most ancient Brazilian hero, Jeronymo de Albuquerque, natural son of the first mentioned of same name, by an Indian woman, a hero who a few years afterwards, overcoming the French in Maranhão, took, as the conquering roman generals did, the name of the country in which he had supplanted them, and made the invading foreigners capitulate.

In 1530 commenced the trial, the epic poem, the heroic history of Pernambuco: it was the time of invasion of war, of conquest, of the reaction, and of the expulsion of the Dutch at the end of twenty four years. Mathias de Albuquerque, nephew to the heir of the donee, Vidal de Negreiros, a Brazilian, Camarão, an Indian, Henrique Dias, a negro, Fernandez Vieira, Barreto de Menezes, Dias Cardozo, and above these Telles da Silva, governor general, Portuguese—are homeric figures in those patriotic campaigns of Alcides, in which the paltry help of the Government is eclipsed by the miracles effected by the civic and catholic spirit of the people.

At the regeneration of Pernambuco, this captaincy reverted to the crown by the pact which the charter of 10th January 1716 definitively concluded, abolishing the rights of the heirs of the donee by indemnification made to the count of Vimioso.

But the people of Pernambuco, boastful of nobility, proud of their valour, accustomed to face death, haughty and jealous, afforded the first example, early in the eighteenth century of a serious and obstinate civil war in what was called the war of the *Pedlars* (the name then given to the Portuguese), who on account of disputes respecting the new towns of Recife, and of its disputed boundary, aggravated the jealousy, and lighted up an antagonism of hatred between the sons of the metropolis and those born in the colony.

The dutch dominion had not been altogether baleful, the government of Maurice of Nassau had been one of considerable progress and enrichment for Pernambuco. The city of Olinda burned down in 1631, rose from its ashes more beautiful and resplendent, that of Recife poor, full of rough warehouses, had become developed and had proclaimed itself a rich Brazilian Venice, civilization and industry broke forth animated by elements widely diffused, and the Dutch dominion under the Prince of Nassau — a most able administrator, and statesman, incontestably caused the Portuguese system of colonization, which was timid, contracted and deficient throughout Brazil, to pale and become confounded.

It is more than probable that the evident superiority of the advantages of the Dutch dominion would have maintained and progressively advanced the conquests of that nation, if the contagious enthusiasm of the revolution of Portugal in 1640, and the flame of catholicism still more ardent from the maddening oppression of the Dutch, had not inspired and electrified the population which in 1645 came to the rescue, and rose up at the voice and at the call of their heroic war captains, in the name of God and of their country.

Made great under the Dutch domination, Pernambuco although smarting under the affronts to her pride, and

to the damage done to a certain autonomy of character, already somewhat national in the last and lamentable consequences of the war of the *Pedlars*, continued to progress, making vassals, in her superior orbit of the captaincies of Parahyba and of Rio Grande do Norte, and even that of Ceará, which obeyed her commercial, political, important ties of family influence and finally of dependence of government as her subordinates as they were, although in this point there might be more or less irregularity in the system of administration; one thing is certain, that after having been raised to independent captaincies, all three of them together with that of Alagôas, which was still a district of the former, created in 1817, continued in a sympathetic and explicable moral sequence to Pernambuco.

Through that influence the dominant impulse of the captaincy dragged those three, and that of Alagôas, which was still a district of the former, into a republican revolution in 1817, and subjected them to the consequences of that movement which entailed on them the harshest, most exaggerated and cruel punishment: in 1821 the generous contagion of the declaration (pronunciamento) of liberty of 1820 in the kingdom beyond the sea; since the following year, 1822, she gave an example of energy, and of force against the domination of Portugal, by expelling from her bosom the Luzitanian troops in garrison, and the captain general Luiz do Rego, the odious man of 1817, and in 1824 again in a fiery state of exaltation on account of the dissolution of the Brazilian chambers, the province rose up armed proclaiming the federation of the Equator, and again compromises her satellites, which do not equal her in daring, but, in proportion, fraternize with her in the adverse fortune of the conquered, and in suffering punishment.

Pernambuco having now remained quiet for seven years, on the announcement of the abdication of the first Emperor, convulsed by riots, and serious disorder, her soldiers un-

bridled, and without discipline, in partial revolt, under the rude, harsh, and fearful shock of the armed declaration (pronunciamento) of the people of the interior, to which was given the name of the revolt of the *Cottagers*, becomes tranquil, but again becomes restless, always feverish, at each change in the politics of the government of the State —until 1848 in which year she again takes up arms, and leaves in repeated combats, and in tributes of blood, the memory of which is called the revolt of the *Pairymen* in which were killed among hundreds of other Brazilians of the two parties, those of the law, and the rebels, the ex-deputy and courageous tribune José Nunes Machado.

After the victory obtained by the government troops, followed trials, sentences, condemnations, of the revolutionary chief to years of imprisonment, persecution, and the re-action induced by the conquering party; no gallow, however, was raised, nor were any shot as in 1817, and in 1824; and a very few years afterwards, in 1853 all the condemned chiefs and prisoners had obtained pardon. From that time to this, and twenty years have since expired— Pernambuco has existed and flourished in peace.

The lesson eloquently demonstrates the fruitlessness of the gibbet, of military executions, and of the horror of bloodshed to annihilate the revolutionary spirit of a people.

The amnesty in the reign of the second Emperor, gained a thousandfold more than the military commissions, the sanguinary prerogative, the executions, the executioners of an angry vengeance, which were outrageously attempted in 1817, during the reign of Dom João VI., and which were carried to an extreme in 1824 in the reign of Dom Pedro I.

Considering this feverisch and inflammable existence, that little interrupted and naturally apprehensive series of perturbation of order, and movement of revolt in Pernambuco, what is most to be wondered that is the developed progress, and the riches of this province; what makes most

impression on the lucubrations of the mind is the power and the opulence to which she would have arrived, if more pacific, and less impatient, giving a guarantee for her quietude and tranquillity, she had exclusively opposed the moral controversy of her ideas to constitutional struggles and campaigns, to the fortress of the parliamentary tribune, and failing this to that tardy but omnipotent conqueror, the universal tribune which is called the press, the heroic energy and the richest of the sentiments of her people.

Pernambuco saw her church raised to a bishoprick in the year 1676, and had a tribunal of appeal created by charter of 6th February 1821.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude all southern of this province encloses it within 7° and 10° 40′, and the longitude, all east, always from the meridian of Rio de Janeiro, shews to be within 1° and 8° 25′.

Its greatest extent from north to south is thirty leagues from the base of the mountain range Araripe, on the left bank of the river S. Francisco, and from east to west one hundred and fifty five leagues, from cape Agostinho to the mountain range of Dous Irmãos, and to the boundary of the province of Bahia.

The coast is circumscribed to 7° 30′ to 8° 55′ and is calculated at forty leagues in extent or a little more with the bends which it makes.

## BOUNDARY.

It confines to the north with the provinces of Parahyba and Ceará; to the south with those of Alagôas and Bahia, and to the west with Piauhy and Bahia.

These limits which with the exception of those of Alagôas and Bahia have been already pointed out, require to be marked afresh in order to be made clear, and which will free them from all dispute.

In treating further on of those two provinces, the dividing points which are here wanting, shall be mentioned.

## CLIMATE.

The unequalness, so very marked in the soil, would make known the climate which is warm, and most in the neighbourhood of the sea, and throughout the whole extent of the lower part of the province, that is from thirty to fifty miles from the capital, the land being covered with woods, well watered, and very fertile: from thence forward the ground undulates and rises, and water is less abundant as far as the interior, crossed by mountain ranges and high hills, and stony plains: in the two last zones the climate is warm and dry, and generally very healthy. The rainy season lasts from March to July, and the other months of the year are summer months.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface of the soil is unequal: one zone of from ten to fifteen leagues from the coast is low, well watered, fertile, covered with extensive woods; after this another succeeds to it; undulating, scrubby, more or less dry, where nevertheless the cotton plant flourishes, and finally comes the interior piled up with mountain ranges, and mountains, and steppes, dry and barren, where nevertheless there is abundance of pasture which is much availed of for the rearing of cattle.

## OROGRAPHY.

The mountain ranges which traverse the province of Pernambuco, are numerous; but excepting some which appear to isolate themselves, and the mountains which stand out by themselves, all the others shew themselves to be dependent on the *Vertentes* in the interior, and to the north-west, and of the eastern or cordillera of the sea those of

the south and the west. The great mountain range of the Borborema which with that of Ibiapaba really forms a chain apart, and which separates to the north this and the preceding provinces, dominates the mountain ranges of the north-west, which through the said mountain range become vassals to the western chain, as already stated: *Sellada*, *Russas*, *Ororobá*, *Verde*, *Cachorro*, *Tacaratú*, *Negra*, *Piriquito*, *Talhada*, *Garanhuns*, *Jussara*, and besides these, that of *Pará*, of *Pratiado*, of *Letras*, *Ranita*, and more than fifty others, are the mountain ranges of Pernambuco. It is pleasing and a duty to make distinct mention of the mountains of *Guararapés*, at nine miles distance from the city of Recife; they are little more than a mile high at their highest point; but they ought not to be forgotten; for among them were fought in 1648 and 1649 the two memorable battles which broke up entirely the Dutch dominion in a great part of the north of Brazil, and prepared the way for the capitulation of Taborda in 1554. Those mountains are now called of the *Prazeres*.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The rivers of Pernambuco are not notable for their long course, nor do any of them form a basin which has any sensible importance: they obey two natural directions: some precipitate themselves into the sea, others into the great *S. Francisco*, which bounds a great part of the interior of the province. Of those which water the eastern territory, and disembogue in the ocean, the chiefs are the *Capiberibe* which has a course of one hundred and fifty miles, terminates by two mouths, one in the city of Recife, the other three miles to the south in the parish of Affogados: the *Ipojuca* which runs into the sea between cape S. Agostinho, and the island of S. Aléixo, in front of which also disembogues the *Serenhen*, or *Serenhaem*, a considerable river and which receives a little higher up than its mouth the *Ceribó:* the

*Una* with a course of one hundred and twenty miles, having for its best tributary the *Jacuipé*; it enters the sea at about twenty miles to the south-west of that island: the Goyanna goes forth both beautiful and wide, nine miles to the north of Itamaraca: the Iguarussú which forms a bar about eighteen miles north of Olinde. Of those which are tributaries to the river *S. Francisco*, the chiefs are, although dwindled in the dry season, the *Moxotó*, which they say has a course of more than two hundred miles, and the *Pajehú* almost equal, and which has fifteen tributaries of name, dwindles when the winter rains are late in falling.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* Gold, amianthus, and others, scientific investigation being still wanting, in order to place, above conjecture, its mineral treasures. In the general description was mentioned all that was evident in this matter.

*Vegetable kingdom.* Rich in timber for all kinds of construction, and for cabinet and joiner work; still rich in *Brazil wood*, which is now cut far from the coast, in canafistula, and in carahyba, the flowers of which attract the deer: there is great abundance of fruit, to wit, of ambus, caju, jabuticaba, araças, mandopussá, muricis, cambuis, abacaxi, mangoe, of which those of Itamaracá are the finest in the whole of Brazil; cocoa-nut, copahyba trees, the benjamin gum, the storax, &c.

*Animal kingdom.* The quadrupeds are the same as in the other provinces: the numerous species of aquatic birds of the north notably fail to be found here: but other species abound in the plains: the partridges or enapupés, pigeons of many varieties, parrots, the bird called nightingale, very different from that of Europe, and many other singing birds, which should be heard to be appreciated; the jacurutú which kills the largest snakes, is found to an extraordinary number.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The cultivation of the sugar cane, and of the cotton plant is very profitable, and there is an abundance of grain and of Farinha (mandioc flour). Industry develops itself as it does in the capitals of the first order, and scarcely less than in the capital of the Empire. Commerce is most extensive, and of the greatest importance with foreign countries. The geographical position of the province is a fortunate one owing to the advantages which vessels in general on long voyages afford to it. Although less than formerly Pernambuco is still the commercial intermediary of some of the northern provinces. The railways from Recife to the S. Francisco, and from Recife to Carangá are already looked upon as elements of prosperity: the railroads of Jaboatão and of Limoeiro are already contracted for.

The Pernambucana Steam Navigation Company is another great source of commercial riches.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 1,250,000 inhabitants being composed of 1,000,000 of free people and 250,000 slaves.

*National representation:* 6 senators, 13 deputies to the general assembly, and 39 provincial members, the province being divided into 5 electoral divisions, in which there is a total of 2019 electors and 104,781 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force*: national guard having 20 superior officers in command, 58 battalions of infantry, 2 of artillery, 4 corps, 13 squadrons and 2 companies of cavalry in active service, and 11 battalions, 12 sections of battalions and 3 companies of reserve, with 55,863 national guards on ative service and 8800 in reserve, total 64,663.

The *police force* consists of 770 men (effective), 2 battalions of infantry, 2 companies of cavalry of the first line, besides 1 company of military artificers, making a total force of 1005 men.

*Primary* and *secondary instruction. Public primary* schools, 158 being for boys, containing 6811 pupils, and 116 for girls containing 3636 pupils. *Private preparatory*, 53 schools for boys containing 1238 pupils, and 65 for girls containing 709 pupils. *Public secondary* instruction: 6 establishments for boys containing 147 pupils; *secondary private schools*: 14 establishments for the male sex containing 792 pupils, and 7 of the female containing 110 pupils.

It is necessary to mention, that since the publishing of this official statistic the number both of the public as well as the private schools of primary instruction have increased, and that among the schools of secondary instruction is pre-eminent the provincial gymnasium, an establishment of the first order having seventeen masters of the humanities and one of rudiments and music.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Pernambuco is divided and sub-divided into districts, municipalities, and parishes, as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Recife (city and cap.) | 1. S. Frei Pedro Gonçalves.<br>2. S. Antonio do Recife.<br>3. S. José do Recife.<br>4. SS. Sacramento da Boa Vista.<br>5. N. S. da Paz de Affogados.<br>6. N. S. da Saúde do Poço da Panella<br>7. N. S. do Rosario da Varzea.<br>8. S. Lourenço da Matta.<br>9. S. Antonio de Jaboatão.<br>10. N. S. do Rosario de Muribeca. |
| 2. Páo d'Alho | 1. Páo d'Alho (c.) | 1. Espirito Santo.<br>2. N. S. da Gloria de Goitá.<br>3. N. S. da Luz. |
| 3. Nazareth | 1. Nazareth (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição.<br>2. S. Antonio de Tracunhaem. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 4. Goanga. | 1. Goanga (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario.<br>2. N. S. do O'.<br>3. S. Lourenço de Tijucupapo.<br>4. N. S. do Desterro de Itambé.<br>5. S. Vicente (formerly Rosario de Cruangy). |
| 5. Olinda. | 1. Olinda (c.) | 1. S. Salvador da Sé.<br>2. S. Pedro Martyr.<br>3. N. S. dos Prazeres de Maranguape |
| | 2. Iguarassú (t.) | 1. S. Cosme e S. Damião.<br>2. N. S. de Itamaracá. |
| 6. Limoeiro | 1. Limoeiro (t.) | 1. N. S. da Apresentação.<br>2. S. Amaro de Taquaretinga. |
| | 2. Bom Jardim (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna do Bom Jardim. |
| | 3. Triumpho (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição das Aguas Bellas. |
| 7. Cabo | 1. Cabo (t.) | 1. S. Antonio do Cabo. |
| | 2. Ipojuca (t.) | 1. S. Miguel de Ipojuca. |
| 8. Santo-Antão. | 1. Victoria (c.) | 1. S. Antão. |
| | 2. Escada (t.) | 1. N. S. da Escada. |
| 9. Rio Formoso | 1. Rio Formosa (c.) | 1. S. José da cidade do Rio-Formoso.<br>2. N. S. da Purificação e S. Gonçalo de Una. |
| | 2. Serinhaem (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Serinhaem.<br>2. N. S. da Penha da Gamelleira. |
| 10. Caruarú | 1. Caruarú (c.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres de Caruarú.<br>2. S. Caetano da Raposa.<br>3. N. S. do O' do Altinho.<br>4. S. Bom Jesus de Panellas.<br>5. N. S. da Conceição de Quipapá. |
| 11. Palmares | 1. Barreiros (t.) | 1. S. Miguel de Barreiros. |
| | 2. Agua Preta (t.) | 1. S. José d'Agua Preta.<br>2. N. S. dos Montes. |
| 12. Bonito | 1. Bonito (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Bonito. |
| | 2. Bezerros (t.) | 1. S. José do Bezerros.<br>2. Sant' Anna de Gravatá. |
| 13. Garanhuns | 1. Garanhuns (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Villa. |
| | 2. S. Bento (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus dos Afflictos. |
| | 3. Bom Conselho (t.) | 1. Jesus, Maria, José de Papacaça. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 14. Buique | 1. Buique (t.) | 1. S. Felix de Buique.<br>2. N. S. da Conceião da Pedra. |
| 15. Flôres | 1. Flôres (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Pajeú de Flôres.<br>2. N. S. das Dôres. |
| | 2. Villa Bella (t.) | 1. N. S. da Penha. |
| | 3. Ingazeira (t.) | 1. S. José de Ingazeira. |
| 16. Brejo da Madre de Deus | 1. Brejo (t.) | 1. N. S. do Brejo da Madre de Deus.<br>2. S. Agueda da Pesqueira. |
| | 2. Cimbres (t.) | 1. N. S. das Montanhas de Cimbres.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição da Alagôa de Baixo. |
| 17. Boa Vista | 1. Boa Vista (t.) | 1. S. Maria da Boa Vista.<br>2. S. Maria Rainha dos Anjos. |
| | 2. Ouricury (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião de Ouricury. |
| 18. Tacaratú | 1. Tacaratú (t.) | 1. N. S. da Saúde de Tacaratú. |
| | 2. Floresta (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus dos Afflictos da Fazenda Grande. |
| 19. Cabrobó | 1. Cabrobó (t.) | 1. N. S. da Assumpção de Cabrobó.<br>2. S. Anna do Sacco. |
| | 2. Exú (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus do Exú. |
| | 3. Salgueiro (t.) | 1. S. Antonio de Salgueiro. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Recife*, the capital of the province, commercial, opulent, and populous, which occupies the third, and contends for the second place among the capital cities, and is moreover of singular beauty: it is on the sea-side and is situated at the confluence of the two rivers Capiberibe and Biberibe which divide it into three quarters connected together by four bridges, that of Recife at the entrance of the bar, that of S. Antonio, which is an island, and that of Boa-Vista which in comparison with the others might be called the continental quarter.

The observatory, arsenals, the palace of the president, and that of the bishop, the custom-house, the theatre, eighteen catholic churches, and one protestant place of worship, the houses of assembly and of the municipality, convents, fountains, elegant and beautiful private dwellings

give to this capital with its commerce, and lively movement, and stations, and service of its railroads the aspect of a rich European city.

The forts of *Cinco Pontas*, *Buraco*, and *Brum* defend it, and make it vainglorious through the memories of their homeric combats. Gas illuminates it: the Pernambuco *Street Railway Company* gave iron rails to the streets of its three quarters, and extended lines which go to some of its suburbs. Among its associations which are numerous there are savings-banks, beneficent, mutual aid, philanthropical, recreative, peculiar to artists, reading societies, and historical institute. In the commercial quarter are banking establishments, charity has hospitals and orphans asylums, &c.

*Olinda*, the ancient capital and built on a high and most beautiful site at three miles distance to the north of Recife, was by this latter stripped of her political power and administrative rank, and finally of its law school, is in a decadent state and dying away in the midst of its convents and monumental temples, and dwindles before its rich rival, after the latter had been burnt, and a more beautiful phœnix, regenerated under the power of the Dutch.

*Goyana*, populous, commercial, and enriched by its commerce in sugar, is fifteen leagues distant from the capital of the province, and is full of pride owing to its having been the birth-place of the botanist Dr. Arruda, of Salter, the Viscount Azurara, and of Nunes Machado.

*Rio Formoso* at eighteen leagues to the south of Recife, another centre of agricultural riches, and another source of pride to the national glory in history.

*Nazareth* and *Coruarú*, rich; *Pedra de Fogo*, notable for its considerable cattle fair, and other cities and towns recommend themselves by their great, or sensible progress, they attest to the development of agriculture, industry, the

breeding of cattle—which is less actively followed than it might be, and to the flourishing commerce of Pernambuco.

## IMMIGRATION AND CIVILIZATION OF THE INDIANS.

An "auxiliary association of immigration" was founded, 730 shares of 100$000 each having been promptly subscribed for. The project of its statutes was subjected to the approval of the Imperial Government. As to the religious instruction and civilization of the aborigines (catechese), there are missions of Italian friars, who have not been able to do anything useful or fruitful towards propagating the catholic religion in the interior; they have been baffled in their endeavours to gain over the minds of the savages, and to make them obedient.

# CHAPTER IX.

## PROVINCE OF ALAGOAS.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

Comprised in the lands of the captaincy granted by Dom João III. to Duarte Coelho Pereira, the territory of this province belonged up to the present century to Pernambuco and shared less of its flourishing condition than of its adversities. Its name was derived from several lakes which it possesses, and which communicate one with the other, and also with rivers which discharge themselves into the sea. In the Dutch war it was the theatre of obstinate struggles; the temporary asylum of the first emigrants from Pernambuco, headed by Mathias de Albuquerque; it was the glorious battle field of Henrique Dias, of Camarão and his wife, Dona Clara, and of others heroes; the doubtful birthplace, but sad place of execution and burial of Calabar; and it was the follower of Pernambuco in its vertiginous state, and in its revolts, as likewise the principal point of the famous villages of run-away slaves, in which took place, at the end of the seventeenth century, the slave war to which romantic tradition gives immense proportions, with a social organization, and political to a certain extent, with episodes, and with a magnificent catastrophe, which require an historical investigation.

On the 16th of September 1817 a royal decree of Dom João VI. raised the district of the Alagoas to an indepen-

dent captaincy, which subsequently passed into a province of the Empire, after the declaration of the independence of the same.

The seat of the district, and later, the head place of the captaincy and of the province, the town, subsequently the city of Alagôas, built on the site, which its name indicates—lost by the provincial law of 9th December 1839, the grade of capital, which was transferred to *Maceió*, then rising and situated close to the port of Jaraguá, this transfer being signalized by an unpleasant popular pronunciamento, which barely stopped at attaining the grave character of an armed revolt.

Independent of Pernambuco, the province of Alagôas feels, and does not hold itself aloof from political influence, which is to be accounted for by the close bonds of relationship among its families, and to its commerce with its ancient territorial possessors; in 1824 and 1849 she did not hold herself aloof from the republican revolution of the "Federação do Equador" (federation of the equator) and did not shew herself alien, nor could she conceal her being the protectress of the last obstinate chief of the Praieira revolt, captain Pedro Ivo.

Alagôas, like Parahyba, and Rio Grando do Norte, belongs not so much now as formerly, but still considerably, to the orbit of the great Brazilian planet, which is called Pernambuco.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude all southern confines this province between 8° 4′ and 10° 32′. The longitude is eastern, and places it within 5° 7′ and 7° 58′.

Its greatest extent from north to south from the right bank of the rivulet *Persinunga*, to the river *S. Francisco* is forty short leagues; and from east to west, from the

*Ponta Verde* to the bank of the river Moxotô—fifty eight leagues. Its coast comprising curves extends fifty eight leagues.

## BOUNDARY.

Is is bounded on the north and west with Pernambuco; on the south by Sergipe and Bahia, and on the east by the Atlantic. It is separated from Pernambuco by the rivulet *Persinunga*, and from its source in a straight line it meets the river Jacuipe, above its mouth in the river *Una*, and proceeding afterwards, along the mountain ranges *Pilada* and *Garanhuns* and others as far as the place *Genipapa* on the river *Panema*, and from thence by another straight line to the Moxotó, to its mouth in the river S. Francisco. The frontier lines with Sergipe and Bahia are not market out and are the subjects of dispute, as to the right to the islands on the S. Francisco river, which separates the provinces.

## CLIMATE.

It is both hot and too moist in the neighbourhood of the coast, dry and healthy in the interior, being high and mountainous, and again taking its former condition of heat and humidity on the banks of the river S. Francisco.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The soil is low and sandy, and there are many lakes on and near the coast; it rises towards the interior, being covered by extensive and valuable woods, having to the north-west some mountain ranges.

## OROGRAPHY.

The predominant mountain range is that which is called the *General* or *do Mar* (of the sea) which traverses the Francisco, forms the famous water fall of *Paulo Affonso*, and

afterwards ramifies in the centre of the province of Alagôas into numerous and middling sized mountains; to name them separately would be a gratuitous and uninstructive task; but to the north-west and at sixty miles from the sea, the mountain range of *Barriga* which history recalls to our minds, is prominent; for in it were formed, and according to some writers were organized to a certain extent, the famous dwellings of run-away slaves, &c. called *Palmares*, peopled by some thousand slaves and deserters, during and after the war with the Dutch, and only overcome and destroyed some years after the expulsion of those foreign conquerors.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The Hydrographic conditions of the province of Alagaôs favour extraordinarily the fruitfulness and magnificent vegetable production of its soil; but they do not afford an equally glorious result as to communication with the ocean. The majestic S. Francisco comes to it from the south-west to the north, and bathes the villages, towns and city of *Piranhas*, *Armazem*, *Pão d'Assucar*, *Portode Falha*, *Penedo* (city) and *Piassabú*.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* This like the animal kingdom, is in a like position to that of Pernambuco: in the latter, there is only to be remarked the extraordinary abundance of fish.

*Vegetable kingdom.* Is rich in the superb forests of Brazil wood, and of all the best wood, and of all the varied vegetable wealth of the neighbouring provinces.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The sugar cane, cotton and tobacco, are the sources or inexhaustible mines of agricultural gold, which are explored in the most fertile Alagôan soil: grain and mandioc

abound: the very droughts respect the productive force of an extensive privileged zone. Industry is feebly developed; that of cattle, and sheep farming supplies the market with food, and for exporting wool, hides, both salted and dry, half hides, tanned skins and bullock's horns; sweetmeats and cajú wine are made in small quantities: yellow bees-wax also is already exported on a very small scale; the weaving manufactory of *Fernão Velho* requires an impulse; it is however an important establishment which is a sign of an essay of fabrical industry; in 1871 the factory wove 6381 pieces of cloth, which is little, but is much; little in comparison to what a factory can and ought to produce; but much for the infancy of that industrial establishment of the modest province. Commerce has its principal exchanges in the capital and in the cities and towns of *Penedo*, *Pilar*, *S. Miguel*, *Camaragipe*, and *Porto Calvo;* but the direct commerce of exportation to foreign countries is still wanting to the province of Alagôas, limiting herself to do this through the medium of Pernambuco, and Bahia. The *Pernambuco Steam Navigation Company* is a great maritime auxiliary; the *central* railway, between *Jaraguá*, *Maceió*, and *Trapiche da Barra* is a considerable element of prosperity, and the *Caixa Commercial* a bold establishment of credit, all which greatly tend to the progress of this province, which in the fertility of its lands, has so many and such admirable assuring elements of a flourishing condition and of becoming opulent.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 300,000 inhabitants, being 2,500,000 free, and 50,000 slaves.

*National representation:* 2 senators, 5 deputies of the general assembly, and 30 of the provincial, the province being divided into two electoral districts with a total of 1356 electors and 61,388 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force:* national guard: 10 superior commanders, 23 battalions of infantry, 1 of artillery, 2 corps and 1 squadron of cavalry, and 2 battalions and 2 sections of battalions of reserve troops; consisting of 16,572 national guards on active service, and 2300 on reserve; total 18,872.

*Police corps:* 250 men; provisional corps 269 men.

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary* 69 schools for boys, in which are 3555 pupils, and 47 for females in which are 2003 pupils. *Private primary:* 29 schools for males with 275 pupils, and 32 for females with 193 pupils. *Secondary public:* 6 schools for boys of which there are 65; und *private secondary:* 3 for boys and 2 for girls, with a total of 220 pupils of both sexes.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Alagôas is divided and sub-divided into districts, municipalities and parishes as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Maceió | 1. Maceió (c. a. capital) | 1. N. S. dos Prazeres de Maceió. |
| | | 2. N. S. Mãe do Povo de Jaraguá. |
| | | 3. N. S. do O' e S. Antonio do Mirim de Pioca. |
| | 2. S. Luzia do Norte (t.) | 1. S. Luzia do Norte. |
| 2. Porto Calvo | 1. Porto Calvo (t.) | 1. S. Bento de Porto Calvo. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Apresentação de Porto Calvo. |
| 3. Camaragibe | 1. Passo de Camaragibe (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Paço. |
| | 2. Porto de Pedras (t.) | 1. N. S. da Gloria do Porto de Pedras. |
| 4. Alagôas | 1. Alagôas (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição das Alagôas. |
| | 2. S. Miguel (c.) | 1. N. S. do O' do Rio de S. Miguel. |
| 5. Atalaia | 1. Atalaia (t.) | 1. N. S. das Brotas de S. Amaro da Atalaia. |
| | 2. Pilar (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario do Pilar. |
| | 3. Assembléa (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus do Bomfim da Assembléa. |
| | | 2. S. Bom Jesus dos Pobres de Quebrangulo. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 6. Imperatriz | 1. Imperatriz (t.) | 1. S. Maria Magdalena da Imperatriz.<br>2. N. S. da Graça do Muric. |
| 7. Anadia | 1. Anadia (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade de Anadia.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição do Limoeiro. |
| | 2. Palmeira dos Indios (t.) | 1. N. S. do Amparo da Palmeira dos Indios. |
| | 3. Cururipe (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Cururipe. |
| 8. Penedo | 1. Penedo (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario do Penedo.<br>2. S. Francisco de Borja do Piassabussú.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição do Collegio. |
| | 2. Traipú (t.) | 1. N. S. do O' de Traipú.<br>2. Sant' Anna do Panema. |
| 9. Paulo Affonso | 1. Paulo Affonso (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Matta Grande.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição da Agua Branca. |
| | 2. Pão d'Assucar (t.) | 1. SS. Conceição de Jesus do Pão d'Assucar. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

The principal cities of this province are the following: *Maceió*, the capital, situated at the port of Jaraguá, flourishing and with a lively trade: it has a light-house at the bar, and within the city the provincial lyceum, the archæological and geographical institutions, hospital of charity, and some buildings which are remarkable, the parish church, the palace of the provincial assembly. *Alagóas*, an ancient city, situated on the lake, which gives it its name. *Penedo* at 7 leagues from the mouth of the S. Francisco, *Atalaia*, both important for their commerce, the towns already in another article, and commendable for the like above condition, and *Porto Calvo*, a city which is developing itself and becoming rich in the midst of large and numerous sugar estates, and which records famous struggles, the glory of Dona Clara Camarão, the place of execution of Calabar, the prowess of the Indian Dom Felippe Camarão, husband of the heroine above mentioned of, Henrique Dias, and of others in the Dutch wars.

# CHAPTER X.

## PROVINCE OF SERGIPE.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

Already counting some population more or less isolated, the territory which this province possesses at this present time was regularly colonized in 1590 during the temporary government which was organized on the death of the Governor General, Manoel Telles Barreto. One of its members, the Provider general Christôvão de Barros, went with a sufficient force, not only to chase the savages of the rivers *Real* and *Itapicurú*, and repel the French cruisers who frequented the coast, in search of Brazil wood, as likewise to found a colonial establishment, in conformity with the orders of Philipp II. Carrying out his commission, that chief pacified the distrist, and near the river Serigy formed a village with a fort, which received the name of *S. Christovão.*

Subject to Bahia, of whose captaincy it was a part, in a somewhat flourishing state of agriculture, the district of Sergipe was invaded and greatly devastated in 1637 by the Dutch commanded by Sigismund von Schkoppe, who on the 25th December of that year, caused the village of S. Christovão to be burnt, being in 1641 all conquered by Maurice of Nassau who extended Dutch Brazil to the south as far as the river Real. Those conquerors being finally expelled, Sergipe saw her people divided by dissension

and dragged on a life of strife and anxious contingencies from the attacks of the savages, and from the want of administration and justice, escaping from that malign situation in 1696, when the king D. Pedro II. sent troops there, who roughly handled the Indians, and an Ouvidor (Judge) who represented the empire of the law, and the element of order.

A simple district of the captaincy of Bahia, Sergipe progressed modestly until in July 1851 it raised to an independent captaincy under the name of Sergipe d'El-Rei, and subsequently became a province of the Empire, having for its capital the town of *S. Christovão*, erected into a city by decree of 8th April 1823.

A provincial law dated March 1855 transferred the seat of the town of *Soccorro* to the hamlet of *Aracaja*, situated at the bar of the Cotinguiba and *Aracajú*, raised to a city, enjoyed the pleasure of another advantageous advancement, being to that of the capital of the province, which was thus lost to the old town of *S. Christovão*, which for that reason has fallen into a state of greater decadence.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

Latitude, south 9° 5′ to 11° 28′: Longitude, east 5° 3′ to 6° 53′.

In its greatest extent from north to south, from the bar of the Xingó in the river of *S. Francisco* to the head waters of the river Real, this province measures about thirty eight leagues, and from east to west of the Island of *Arambipe*, to the right margin of the *Xingó*, forty three leagues, having a sea board, embracing the curves, of thirty six to thirty eight leagues. Superficie in square leagues, one thousand, three hundred and sixty.

## BOUNDARY.

It borders to the north, on the province of Alagôas, by the river *S. Francisco;* to the south on that of Bahia by the river *Real;* to the east with the Atlantic, and to the west still with Bahia by the rivulet of Xingó, and by a straight line, which from the head waters of the said rivulet goes to the source of the *Real.*

In the boundary from the north and from the west disputes and doubts arise which may otherwise be very easily dissipated.

## CLIMATE.

It is similar to Pernambuco, warm and damp in the neighbourhood of the sea, warm and dry in the interior, and in the desert parts. On the banks of some rivers which overflow most in the winter, intermittent fevers rage at well defined periods.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface of the province is unequal and in a great part low: notwithstanding its being cut by sundry rivers of some importance, it differs not a little in its condition of fertility , which so to say, divides it into three zones, more or less very distinct, from the east to the west: the first, facing the sea, is sandy and of poor vegetation; at least, however, narrow, barely forming a border of from four to six miles in breadth; the second which exceeds fifty miles into the interior, is, as it separates itself from the sea board, more and more notable for its fertility: the third and last very much more mountainous and arid, is in general much less fertile; but it affords great advantages for breeding cattle.

In this division into zones the rule is not absolute, in reference to the producing force which the soil possesses,

for even on the sea board there are recommendatory exceptions.

Senator Pompeo counts four zones separating into two what we pointed out in this as the second; Ayres Cazal considers the province as divided into an eastern and western part.

## OROGRAPHY.

There are no *Cordilheiras;* among the mountains there are the following: of *Itabayana* which advances from south to north, and terminates at a little more than twenty miles distance from the sea, having long before thrown out a buttress in an easterly direction. To the north-west lies the mountain range of *Tabanga*; it has its base bathed by the river *S. Francisco:* to the west the *Serra Negra* shews itself.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The basin of S. Francisco has already been studied: in it are poured, as was shewn, the rivers of the province, which run to the north. The others discharge their waters in theoce an through the small basins of the following rivers: *Cotindiba*, or *Cotinguyba*, which rises to the north of the mountains of Itabayana, receives sundry rivulets and the river *Poxim*, which comes from a far distance; six miles above its mouth, the *Sergipe* joins it, coming from the west, and which is deeper and stronger in current: to the two united, lower down, the *Poranga* brings its waters: it is navigable for smacks for twenty miles above its mouth, and the Sergipe for a still greater space. The *Vaza-barris* (the *Irapirang* of the Aborigines) has its source in the mountain range of *Itiuba*, crosses the province from west to east, receiving numerous rivulets, and is navigable for smacks with the aid of the tide for about twenty miles, and discharges itself in the bay of its own name.

*Real* which separates this province from Bahia, its boundary on the south, runs from the west to the east, for about one hundred and twenty miles; it descends from mountains and passes over falls, to the last of which the tide comes up about thirty miles above its mouth from the sea: from that fall forward its channel is wide, deep, and sandy, and besides the small tributaries, already received, it takes in others which encrease its body.

On account of its being smaller than the preceding the *Japaratuba* remained to be last mentioned; this river enters the sea more than twenty miles to the north of the *Codindiba*, and although much favoured by the tide only admits canoe navigation.

In the neighbourhood of the river *S. Franeisco*, various lakes, abounding in fish, and still more so in aquatic birds, spread themselves out.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*The mineral kingdom.* Gold in the mountains of Itabayana; flint, tabatinga (a kind of whitening), grind-stones, iron, crystals, borax, &c.—give promise of riches badly explored.

*The animal kingdom* is the same which is observed in the neighbouring provinces. Deer abound; partridges are numberless; wild beasts are rare in the eastern part of the province; but good sport is far from becoming exhausted. There is a great variety of bees.

*The vegetable kingdom.* The abundance of timber for all descriptions of construction, is great, as is also that for cabinet making, and dyewoods are plentiful: among others may be named the sucupira, the iron-wood, cedro, supucaia, jequitibá, aruçuca, batinga (white and red), condurú, garauna, and many others appear, filling the forests, among medicinal plants, the ipecacuenha and liquorice, paroba, china of the country, canafistula, and many others

are common: vanilla has spread and multiplied itself spontaneously: among the trees and shrubs, whose fruit the best tables avail themselves of already, the misnamed apple-tree is distinguished, bearing on the same tree apples of various shapes, and of which excellent preserves are made.

## INDUSTRY, AGRICULTURE AND COMMERCE.

Industrial occupation, properly so called, is almost null, if the breeding of cattle be excepted, and which is carried on in the eastern part of the province. Agriculture has for its wealth-giving base, the cultivation of the cotton plant and sugar cane, and the fabrication of sugar and rum: grain and mandioc farinha pay the labour of the husbandman in giving exuberant harvest; the agricultural farms exceed eight hundred; those of cattle are very productive: commerce is active and flourishing, and is carried on with Bahia, Rio de Janeiro and Pernambuco; the principal articles of exportation consist of the following: *sugar*, *raw cotton*, *rum*, *salt*, *salted hides*, *dry hides*, *half hides*, *ticum* (a kind of hemp) *in a raw state*, *cocoa nuts*.

The *steam navigation companies*, *Bahiana* and *Pernambucana*, extend their lines to several ports of Sergipe; the *Associação Sergipense* enjoys the privilege of towing the vessels that frequent the port of Aracajú: besides this enterprise, there is that of the *steam navigation between the rivers* of Pamonga, Japaratuba and Sergipe.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 280,000 inhabitants of which 230,000 are free and 50,000 slaves.

*National representation:* 2 senators, 4 deputies of the general assembly, and 24 of the provincial, and it is divided into 2 electoral districts with a total of 696 electors and 28,115 citizens, who are qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guards* 10 superior commanders, 26 battalions of infantry, and 1 squadron of cavalry, with 18,312 national guards on active service, and 2 battalions of reserve with 2581, total 20,893.

*Police corps:* with 207 men (effective state of force).

*Public* and *private instruction. Primary instruction*: public schools 126, 75 for males, with 2591 scholars; 51 for females with 1480 scholars. Private schools 26, of which 17 for males, with 337 scholars, 9 for females with 165 scholars. *Secondary instruction*: public establishments, 186 scholars: private establishments 5 with 55 scholars among whom are 4 girls.

*Civil, administrative and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Sergipe is divided and sub-divided into the following districts, municipalities and parishes.

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Aracajú (city and cap.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Aracajú. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Soccorro da Cotinguiba. |
| | 2. S. Christovão (c.) | 1. N. S. da Victoria de S. Christovão. |
| | 3. Itaporanga (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Ajuda do Itaporanga. |
| 2. Laranjeiras | 1. Laranjeiras (c.) | 1. SS. Coração de Jesus das Laranjeiras. |
| | 2. Divina Pastora (t.) | 1. N. S. da Divina Pastora. |
| | | 2. Jesus, Maria, José do Pé do Banco. |
| 3. Maroim | 1. Maroim (c.) | 1. S. dos Passos de Maroim. |
| | 2. S. Amaro de Brotas (t.) | 1. S. Amaro de Brotas. |
| | 3. N. S. do Rosario do Cattete (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario do Cattete. |
| 4. Villa Nova | 1. Propriá (c.) | 1. S. Amaro do Urubú de Propriá. |
| | 2. Porto da Folha (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Porto da Folha. |
| | 3. Villa Nova (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Villa Nova. |
| | | 2. S. Felix da Pacatuba. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 5. Capella | 1. N. S. da Purificação da Capella (t.) | 1. N. S. da Purificação da Capella. |
| | 2. Missão de Japaratuba (t.) | 1. N. S. da Saúde de Japaratuba. |
| | 3. N. S. das Dôres (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres. |
| 6. Itabaiana | 1. Itabaiana (t.) | 1. S. Antonio e Almas de Itabaiana. |
| | | 2. N. S. dos Campos do Brito. |
| | 2. Simão Dias (t.) | 1. Senhora Sant' Anna de Simão Dias. |
| 7. Lagarto | 1. Lagarto (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade do Lagarto. |
| | 2. N. S. da Conceição da Itabaianinha (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Itabaianinha. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Soccorro do Jerú. |
| | 3. Campos do Rio Real (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Campos do Rio Real. |
| | 4. Riachão (t.) | 1. N. S. do Amparo do Riachão. |
| 8. Estancia | 1. Estancia (c.) | 1. N. S. da Guadalupe da Estancia. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Parida. |
| | 2. S. Luzia (t.) | 1. S. Luzia. |
| | 3. Espirito Santo (t.) | 1. Espirito Santo. |
| | 4. Lagôa Vermelha (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna da Lagôa Vermelha. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Aracajú*, city and capital, founded barely within the last 17 years at the bar of the *Cotinguiba*, as situation appropriate for commerce; leaving its cradle it moves forward to the horizon of progress and prosperity full of animation. *Sarangeiras*, a city, on the *Cotindiba*, of importance and very commercial, but disadvantageously situated. *Estancia*, a city, on the left bank of the *Piauhy*, a tributary of the *Real;* it is fifteen miles from the sea, its commerce is comparatively considerable, the smacks anchor in front of the city; it has two fine churches, a bridge over the river, and most excellent water abounds throughout it. *S. Christovão*, a city fifteen miles distant from Aracajú, is on the

decline. *Maroim*, a city rich in its exports of sugar, lying on an arm of the river Sergipe.

In the western part *Itabayana*, a town near the mountain of its own name; its extensive territory shews advantageously on account of its grass fields, and the industrial occupation followed of rearing cattle. *Propriú*, a city advantageously situated on the river of its own name, or rather on the right bank of the S. Francisco.

# CHAPTER XI.

## PROVINCE OF BAHIA.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

After the second exploratory expedition of the coast of Brazil, under the direction and command of Christovão Jacques, had discovered in 1503 the great bay which was called Todos os Santos (All Saints), the history of the respective captaincy otherwise founded 35 years afterwards, commences by a romantic tradition, in which the principal fact investigated and positively ascertained is mixed up with fabulous episodes.

In 1510 a Portuguese ship which was probably on her way to India, became wrecked on the coast of Itaparica, and the shipwrecked men who were enabled to save themselves fell into the hands of the *Tupinambás*, lords of the islands, and of the neighbouring continent, and cannibals like the other Indians, who went on eating up those prisoners in successive feasts, according to their custom, until only the last was left, by name Diogo Alvarez, who using a musket which he managed to bring away from the ship, fired at a bird; at the unexpected report, the savages shouted out in astonishment "caramurú!" which according to some, means "*man of fire*", and to others, *dragon or monster emerged from the sea.* Diogo Alvarez owed his life, his freedom, and his great influence to his firing of that musket; he became the guiding spirit of the victories gained by the

Tupinambás, took to wife *Paraguassú*, the daughter of the chief, had an opportunity of getting to France, where he had her baptized. Catharine de Medicis, being at that time either the Dauphine or Queen, led the savage to the baptismal font.

Of this tradition which has been greatly more poetized, the voyage to France is absolutely false; the barbarous sacrifice of all the companions of Diogo Alvarez is incredible, nor can it be believed that he with death staring him in the face should wish to amuse himself by firing at a bird, or only that being the sole surviving man out of all the shipwrecked crew saved from the sea, he should so late think of trying the effect of the report of a musket on the Indians. What admits no doubt whatever is his Indian name of *Caramurú*, his union and subsequent marriage with *Paraguassú*, and finally his moral authority over the Tupinambás of the island, and of the neighbourhood on the continent: that which finally, without being quite clearly demonstrated, seems to be almost certain is, that not only he, but some others, and perhaps all the shipwrecked men who got to land, were not the victims but the guests of those savages, who were among the others considered least cruel.

Diogo Alvarez never absented himself from Bahia whilst he lived: he died on the 5th October 1557, and certainly lived happily and contentedly there, for the line of battle ship Bretoa (Portuguese), French and Spanish vessels, and in 1528 the small squadron commanded by Christovão Jaques (the same mentioned in 1503) put into Bahia, and he did not avail himself of a single one of so many opportunities to return to Europe.

In 1531 it fell to the good fortune of Caramurú to receive Martin Affonso de Souza, who left him *2 men and sundry seeds of useful plants*, which proves that Diogo Alvarez

had the direction of a colonial nucleus, in which it is not likely that he was the only European or Portuguese.

In 1537 or 1538 Francisco Pereira Coutinho who in 1534 had had a grant of a captaincy of 50 leagues in extent, from the bar of Bahia to the mouth of the river S. Francisco, arrived with a great number of adventurers, and aided by Caramurú, and *other Portuguese* joined to him, who received him (Francisco Pereira Coutinho), he laid the foundation of his colony in the same place on the continent as that inhabited by the former.

At the beginning every thing ran smoothly and peaceably, merrily and with animation; but shortly afterwards, and from causes which have not been ascertained, and of which it is useless to recall the simple suppositions, the flames of revolt and war were raised, the old and unserviceable donee finished by retiring to the captaincy of the Ilheos: after a short time, at the urgent request of Caramurú, and of other Portuguese, the unfortunate Coutinho embarked and returned to his captaincy: but being wrecked on the island *Itaparica*, he was together with some of his people, the victim of the Tupinambás, who satiated their vengeance on them through their ferocious cannibal instincts in 1547.

Two years later, Dom João III. having reformed the system of colonization of Brazil, by independent captaincies, and without a centralizing bond, Thomé de Souza came to form the general government of the great colony, and to found it in Bahia de Todos os Santos, whose captaincy with a trifling compensation made to the heirs of the donee, reverted to the Crown: the capital city which was called S. Salvador, and which by the devoted aid of the influential and service rendering Diogo Alvarez was placed on a hill as far from the beach, as was the (old) establishment.

With the Governor General, also arrived the first expedition of Jesuit missionaries, headed by father Nobrega,

called *the Apostle of the New World:* in 1551, the martyr Pero Fernandez Sardinha inaugurated the Bishoprick of Brazil, otherwise created in the preceding year.

The rank and influence of the capital, and the great natural resources of a soil highly favoured by Providence, the energetic action of the Government, the powerful and admirable influence of the Jesuits gave to the head city of the colony, and to its captaincy an impulse and increase that excited the covetousness of the foreign enemy; in 1624 the Dutch at war with Spain the dominator of Portugal and of her colonies since 1580, attacked and took the city of Salvador, and who were conquered and lost it one year afterwards; but nevertheless, war, danger, and the abnormal situation did not end: attacks in the bay, the conquest and campaigns of Pernambuco, Parahyba, and Rio Grande, her northern neighbours, the island of Itaparica taken and ensanguined by its brave struggles, the territory invaded as far as the river Real, the capital itself threatened, and intrepidly driving back the assailants headed by the able and famous Maurice of Nassau, caused the inhabitants of S. Salvador and Bahia to endure a life for thirty years of fear, misfortune, adversity, war, and moreover full of vexations, in which they shewed constancy, underwent sacrifices, and gave proofs of heroism, which formed one of its brightest claims to high nobility. In Bahia the Governor General, Telles da Silva was the soul of Pernambucan regeneration, of the glorious and triumphant war of independence, which overcame and expelled from Brazil the Dutch power, which was so extensively developed as to seem to have taken root.

With the beneficence of peace became conspicuous the moral and material prosperity of Bahia, for which reason the capital of all the colony was situated in its lap, excepting the state of Maranhão; it enjoyed favours and institutions worthy of being explained which gave to it in Brazil

the leadership of the civilization, and a much greater development of enlightened ideas.

The boundaries of this captaincy extended to the south with the incorporation of those of *Porto Seguro*, and of the *Ilheos*, which reverted to the *Crown*, the former in 1759, the latter two years subsequently.

The captaincy of Porto Seguro comprised fifty leagues which commenced at the river Mucury: Pero de Campos Tourinho, its donee, came with many of his relations, and a numerous body of immigrants in 1535, to establish it on the same site as that at which Cabral had landed in 1500.

The traffic in Brazil wood, agriculture, and especially the cultivation of sugar cane and making of sugar, caused the colony to flourish after the *Tupiniquins*, who lorded over the neighbouring country, had been vanquished in war, and had been attracted by friendly treatment. By the death of the donee, the decadency of the captaincy announced itself in the rule of his son Fernando de Campos Tourinho, and it became still worse when he died, his sister and heiress passing it over by contract of sale to the Duke of Aveiro, in 1566, who after a short period of serviceable care of it, allowed it to go on weakening principally from the attacks of the indomitable *Aymoris*.

From the captaincy of the *Ilheos*, from which another fifty leagues were marked out, to begin from whence the preceding had left off, and to terminate in the north at the bar of the bay of Todos os Santos, the donee was Jorge de Figueiredo Correa, scrivener of the Royal Treasury, who by his official duties ordered Francisco Romero, a Spaniard, to found his colony, which in 1534 he established in the island of Tinharé, on the S. Paulo hill; but immediately removed it to the port of Ilheos: the idea of giving to Portuguese colonists a Spaniard as their chief, was an unfortunate one; notwithstanding the proofs he gave of his bravery in the war against the Indians, Romero, after much

strife and riot had taken place, was seized and sent to Figueiredo, who again replaced him in his, not so called, but real fief: from thence followed the feeling of offence, and ill-will of the colonists: to this great evil was added the obstinate and terrible assaults of the *Aymorés;* it was as much as this captaincy could do to resist, and repel an aggression of the Dutch in 1637; but neither the fertility of its soil, nor the labour of its dwindled inhabitants could avail to get them out of their miserable state, and raise them to that degree of importance, which the character of a captaincy and subsequently that of a province of Brazil would maintain for them.

Enlarged by the incorporation of the territories of *Porto Seguro*, and of the *Ilheos*, Bahia, immediately after, in the year 1763 saw itself deprived of its grade of capital of the great colony, which the city of Rio de Janeiro took from it, and again in 1821 it lost all the territory that extended from the river Real to that of S. Francisco, raised to the captaincy, and almost immediately after to the province of Sergipe.

In compensation, was, by decree of 15th October 1827, the district of *S. Francisco*, comprising the towns of the same name, made over to it, and those of *Pilão Arcado*, *Campo Largo*, and *Carinhaha*, dismembered from the interior of Pernambuco, by charter of 3rd June 1820, and which in 1824 had been annexed to the province of Minas Geraes.

Replete with territory the first born land of Thomé de Souza, or if you will, of Cabral, in losing its superior grade of capital of Brazil, did not lose its nobility: in 1821 it was the second to repeat on this side of the Atlantic the cry of freedom raised in Portugal in the year 1820, and for its greater glory, it maintained gallantly in its bosom the chief, or truly speaking, the only war of independence, from February 1822 till the blessed 2nd of July 1823, in which the Portuguese general Madeira, overcome

or incapable of further resistance, evacuated the city of San Salvador, and embarked with his troops for Portugal having been obliged to beat a retreat.

Together with these heroic memories, Bahia proudly preserves her ecclesiastical pre-eminence in Brazil, for its Bishoprick which was the first and only one in the Luso-Brazilian Colony in 1551, and was raised to the Archbishoprick in 1676.

In the heat and whirl of the political life of the Empire, putting on one side the movement of generous contagion in 1821 and the honour giving and praiseworthy war of the independence, Bahia, once, and once only revolted, took arms, and declared itself revolutionary, aspiring to independence, and to a Republic in 1837 barely dominant for a short space of time, in the city of S. Salvador, soon surrounded, brought to an engagement and beaten by the spirit and the material force of all the province.

In the point of view of its political and commercial importance Bahia maintains itself registered among the first and most considerable order of the 20 provinces of the Empire: having lost the territorial extent of the province of Sergipe, the former always keeps the latter as a satellite in its political influence and on account of its commercial connexion and power over it.

And let not its last, recent, and splendid act of patriotism be forgotten. In the Paraguayan War, and to the civil and splendid appeal of the Imperial Government, it was Bahia that was the first before all the other provinces of the Empire, to raise and send the first battalion of *voluntarios da patria*, the first and magnificent levée of those noble crusaders of the national honour, who never without scandalous ingratitude, without crime of the State, and without reprehensible and revolting forgetfulness of the country's history can be lost to recollection, or spoken of without the acme of praise.

In Brazil, Bahia is as the elder child of the colonizing Government, and the first mother of the colonization of progress, and of the future.

Bahia was the bosom that nourished, the head that directed, the powerful arm that defended almost all the captaincies which now form the Empire of Brazil.

To that province pertains the right of veneration, the gratitude of the present provinces, which were in other times nourished by her, directed, protected, and defended. She is an ennobled mother, and has the "prestige" of the filial blessings of past generations.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

Its latitude is all south, comprised in the space between 9° 55′ and 13° 15′; the longitude is 5° 30′ east, and 3° 30′ west, which others reduce to 2°.

The greatest distance from north to south is 165 leagues, from the *falls of Paulo Affonso*, on the right bank of the *S. Francisco*, to the left bank of the *Mucury;* and from east to west, 140 leagues from the bridge of *Itapuan* to the serra *Tabatinga* or Tauatinga. Its superficie is 14,836 square leagues. Its sea coast is about 180 leagues in extent.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by the provinces of Sergipe, Alagôas and Pernambuco; on the south by those of Espirito Santo, and Minas Geraes, by the rivers *Mucury*, *Verde Grande*, *Verde Pequeno*, and *Carunhanha* near the ford of the *Paranan*, and the serras of *Almas* and *Crundiúba*, *Vullo fundo*, and from this point in a straight line to the bar of the river *Mosquito*, an affluent of the *Pardo*, and from this point in another strait line, to the *Salto Grande* of the river *Jequitinhonha:* on the east by the Atlantic Ocean, and province of Sergipe: on the west by the province of

Pernambuco, Piauhy, Goyaz, and Minas Geraes, by the river *S. Francisco*, the serras *Dous Irmãos*, of *Piauhy*, *Gurgueia*, *Duro*, *Tabatinga*, or *Tauatinga*, *Paranan*, and *Aymorés*. These last lines of boundary are the subject of much dispute.

## CLIMATE.

On the coast and in the neighbourhood of the sea, the climate in general is hot and damp; it is chiefly so in the part called the Reconcavo, and which extends as far as 30 leagues, and where the rains are frequent; in the interior it is dry and hot, in many places elevated and fresh and agreeable, with the exception of the banks of the S. Francisco, where at certain seasons, the intermittent fevers rage; all the territory of Bahia is more or less healthy.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface of the country, in the extensive and wide border of the coast is generally low, with an abundant natural irrigation, and covered with rich woods; it boasts of fertility and is in the highest degree productive: nevertheless it is not wanting in elevated ground and in mountains, which, however, rise up much more in the interior, and chiefly towards Minas and Goyaz: in the interior the part called "sertão" (backwoods) throws out spacious "plateaux" which are dry and sterile, going towards the boundaries of Pernambuco, and which subject to droughts, are in a like condition to the others which are to be seen in the neighbouring provinces of the north, and where like in those the ground is ungrateful to the tiller, serves nevertheless to breed numbers of cattle.

## OROGRAPHY.

No studies have yet been made towards the enlightenment of the system of orography of this province, particularly as to its distinct relation with the general orographic

system; but it seems probable, and it is very likely that its mountain ranges and mountains belong, according to the positions and directions which they indicate, to the two Cordilleras, the eastern and central. Going round the province, the boundary serras have already been designated in the proper article, and it is not necessary to point them out again; but besides those serras, those of *Itaraca* which come from Minas, and advance from the south; those of the *Chapada* and of *Sincora* in the interior so famed for its mines of gold and brilliants, and which are evidently two ramifications of the mountain range which from Minas Geraes is prolonged; serra of *Timba*, which notwithstanding its being distinct, appears to carry on the direction of the *Chapada*, going forward to the north, and inclining to the north-east: those of *Orobó* and *Preta*, which still shew themselves in the interior rising from east to west, that of *Riachinho* which is rather a western branch of the *Sincorá*, that of the *Pambú*, and that of *Borracha* or *Muribéca* in the north of the province.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The province of Bahia is rich in rivers whose course is of long extent, which can still make a noble figure after the great basins of the Amazonas and the Plata, for it participates to a great extent in that internal mediterranean of the S. Francisco, and possesses secondary basins of high importance; but for that reason they were taken into account in the general hydrographic study which will be met with in the *first part* of this book: besides what was there written, it would be easy to fill many pages with the mention of rivers, which afford navigation to canoes, and which are more or less estimable tributaries of the principal already pointed out; for that much, however, the limits of the humblest corographic notice thus then, and as an exception there shall be pointed out merely the

*Vasa-barris*, which takes its rise in the mountain range of the Itiúba, and runs to Sergipe, through which it did not pass forgotten, and the *Sergi-Mirim* navigable for large canoes, and which discharges its waters in the bay of Todos os Santos.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* The diamond mines of *Sincorá*, and *Leoncões* and those of gold at *Sincorá*, of *Chapada*, of *Gentio*, and others which continue to be discovered, are rich; the belief is traditional in the existence notwithstanding its not being yet verified, of magnificent mines of silver, the existence of which in the sixteenth century Roberio Dias, a descendant of the celebrated Caramurú, offered to shew, and which secret, either real, or imaginary he carried with him to the grave, because the metropolitan government did not consent to give him the title of the marquis of Minas, which he asked for; iron, copper, coals, marble &c., the thermal waters of Sipó, and other mineral product already mentioned in the ninth chapter of the first part, raises the riches which the province of Bahia possesses in this kingdom of nature.

*Vegetable kingdom.* It is rich in timber for all building purposes, and for cabinet making, and for dyəing: brazil wood is abundant, the same vegetable productions found in the other provinces, are met with here, and the cocoa-nut trees are so numerous, as to take the name of the province.

*Animal kingdom:* is the same as that in all Brazil.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY, AND COMMERCE.

The agricultural produce of Bahia is great, and less circumscribed than in other provinces, the chief produce which it offers for export are sugar and rum, which the extensive cultivation of sugar cane offers: tobacco, cotton,

coffee, and cacao, and in much smaller proportion, cloves; cereals and mandioca abound.

In industrial development, this province vies with that of Pernambuco, if it does not exceed it: it has 6 factories for weaving cotton, 12 for soap, 4 founderies, 2 snuff manufactories, 1 brewery, 4 castor oil manufactories, 3 of gaseous liquids, 3 of vinegar, 6 refineries, 1 hat manufactory, 2 for making ice, a great many for cigars, and cigarettes, many for the extraction of palm oil, and a great number of others of a commoner nature; the occupation of cattle breeding already permits the entry into the market of a considerable quantity of dry and salted hides, among the chief produce for exportation.

The commerce with foreign and interprovincial ports places Bahia in a honourable position among provinces of the first order: as will be seen in the respective customs, general and provincial revenues, and from the movement of the shipping. The commercial exchange of Bahia is one of the principal in the Empire: the richness and importance of the province, the actual resources of their commerce, and what this and the agricultural and manufacturing industry ought to hope for in the future are shewn in the following official information: of banking and credit establishments, there are—the *Banco da Bahia*, the *London and Brazilian Bank, limited*, *Caixa de Economias*, *Caixa Economica*, *Sociedade Commercio*, *Caixa Reserva Mercantil*, *Caixa Hypothecaria*, and further, the insurance companies thus denominated: *Interesse Publico*, *Alliança*, *Fidelidade*, the branch agency of the company established in Lisbon, *Garantia*, branch agency of the company established in Oporto, *Northern Insurance Company*, established in London with a capital of £ 2,000,000, *Commercial Union Insurance Company*, agency of that formed in London, *Liverpool and London Globe Insurance Company*, agency of that formed in Liverpool, *Queen Insurance Company* of Liverpool, with

an agency in Bahia, *British and Foreign Insurance Company* of Liverpool, and with an agency, *Imperial Fire Insurance Company* of London and with general agencies in London and Liverpool, and branch in Bahia. City street railroad companies: *Trilhos centraes*, *Trilhos urbanos*, *Vehiculos economicos*, *Tramroad* de Nazareth, *Tramroad de Santo Amaro*, are all either in active work, or construction, and the last only projected, but the contract is celebrated. Railroads: that of *Paraguassú*, to be realised, that from the *city of Bahia* to the *river S. Francisco*, in active service, are important means of communication, the economical and civilizing influence of which does not require to be shewn. Navigation: *Companhia de Navegação a vapor Bahiana* to the interior, north and south of the province has in its name the best of recommendations, for queen of the interior it is also a conqueror of commercial intercourse and interests of the provinces which lie to the north, and the neighbouring one to the south.

The navigation by steam by the *Jequitinhonha*, as far as the *Cachoeirinha*, has already commenced, amid the expansive smiles of gladness of the inhabitants of the fertile banks of that river, enriched by nature, but until now difficult to be communicated with on account of their distance from the commercial centres.

The trial trip up the waters of the S. Francisco by the steam boat *Dantas* which has already been hailed in *Chique-Chique*, and as if going to seek the *Saldanha Marinho* which from Minas Geraes had preceded it, descending the same river, announced before hand the effective and permanent exploration of the magnificent element, of the progress and the riches of the vast interior of Brazil, vaunting majestically in the magnificent S. Francisco, that it is not chained but fraternally linked with the iron lines of the railroad of Dom Pedro II. which starts from the capital of the Empire, and those of Bahia, and of the Recife on the banks of the

same river, besides those which will shortly strengthen other bonds coming from the north.

## STATISTICS.

*Population*: 1,400,000 of which 1,140,000 free, and 260,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 7 senators, 14 deputies of the general assembly, and 42 of the provincial, the province being divided into 5 electoral districts, with a total of 3776 electors, and 195,672 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard*, with 36 superior commands, 127 battalions, and 4 sections of battalions of infantry, 1 of artillery, 1 corps, and 20 squadrons of cavalry on active service, 14 battalions, and 14 sections of battalions of reserve, making together 94,154 national guards in active service, and 13,746 of reserve, total 109,800.

*Police corps:* 762 men (effective force).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary*: 207 schools for males, with 9,732 scholars, and 61 for females with 2680 scholars; *private primary*: 7 for males with 363 scholars, and 5 for females with 166 scholars. *Public secondary instruction:* 16 establishments for males with 229 scholars. *Private secondary*: 24 establishments with 390 scholars.

It was clear, and already beginning to be demonstrated officially, that there was a mistake in the scrupulous official reproduction of this statistic. The last report of the president of Bahia states the existence of a *great number* of private schools of primary instruction, calculating that the number of male and female scholars attending the same *vie* with the public schools; only in 16 who gave an account of themselves, the attendance amounted to 518 males, and 355 females. The statistics are only now beginning to overcome difficulties and impediments of sundry kinds

and the results gathered officially with a praiseworthy certainty of foundation, are still far from corresponding to the reality of the facts.

What is observed in Bahia relative to private instruction, is more or less to be seen and felt in all the other provinces of the Empire. It must still be observed that among the public primary schools are not included in the number one in the house of correction, and hard labour, and 26 night-schools for adults, with an attendance of 881 scholars, but it is probable that those were created after the last official statistic was made.

It should also be mentioned that there are besides, in Bahia, two *normal schools*, destined separately to those who aspire to become teachers of each sex; that of the men counted 36 pupils in 1872, and that of the women 28.

The public secondary instruction of the province is worthily represented by the respective and important lyceum, which in 1872 brought together 229 pupils. Of the private schools of secondary instruction *barely* 5 sent to the provincial government the lists which they are obliged to furnish, and only in those 5, the attendance amounted to 520 pupils, a *much lower number than is found in the schools established*, according to what is to be found written in the cited report of 1872.

The *school of medicine* does not enter into this exposition, because it pertains to the higher category of the general government, it being one of two established in the Empire, and which has its site, with a very numerous attendance in the city of S. Salvador, the capital of the province.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Bahia is divided and sub-divided into districts, towns and parishes, as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. S. Salvador (city and cap.) | 1. S. Salvador.<br>2. S. Pedro.<br>3. SS. Sacramento de Sant' Anna.<br>4. N. S. da Conceição da Praia.<br>5. N. S. da Victoria.<br>6. N. S. do Sacramento da Rua do Paço.<br>7. N. S. do Sacramento do Pilar.<br>8. S. Antonio alem do Carmo.<br>9. N. S. das Brotas.<br>10. N. S. dos Mares.<br>11. N. S. da Penha de Itapagipe.<br>12. N. S. da Conceição de Itapoana.<br>13. S. Bartholomeu de Pirajá.<br>14. S. Miguel de Cotegipe.<br>15. S. Thomé de Paripe.<br>16. N. S. da Piedade de Mattuim.<br>17. Sant' Anna de Maré.<br>18. N. S. da Encarnação de Passé. |
| 2. Conde | 1. Conde (t.) | 1. N. S. do Monte. |
| | 2. Abbadia (t.) | 1. N. S. da Abbadia. |
| 3. Abrantes | 1. Abrantes (t.) | 1. Espirito Santo de Abrantes.<br>2. S. Bento do Monte Gordo.<br>3. S. Pedro do Assú da Torre. |
| | 2. Matta de S. João da Villa (t.) | 1. S. do Bomfim. |
| 4. Cachoeira | 1. Cachoeira (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição da Nova Feira.<br>3. S. Pedro de Muritiba.<br>4. N. S. do Bom Successo e Cruz das Almas.<br>5. S. Thiago de Iguape.<br>6. S. Estevão de Jacuipe.<br>7. N. S. do Desterro do Outeiro Redondo.<br>8. Deus Menino de S. Feliz.<br>9. S. Gonçalo dos Campos.<br>10. N. S. do Resgate das Umburanas. |
| | 2. Maragogipe (c.) | 1. S. Bartholomeu.<br>2. S. Felippe das Roças. |
| | 3. Tapera (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição.<br>2. N. S. dos Bons Conselhos da Amargosa.<br>3. N.S. de Nazareth da Pedra Branca. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 5. S. Amaro. | 1. S. Amaro (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario.<br>2. N. S. da Purificação.<br>3. S. Pedro do Rio Fundo.<br>4. N. S. da Oliveira dos Campinhos.<br>5. N. S. d'Ajuda do Bom Jardim.<br>6. S. Domingues de Saubara. |
| | 2. S. Francisco (t.) | 1. S. Gonçalo.<br>2. Sant' Anna do Catú.<br>3. N. S. do Monte.<br>4. Madre de Deus do Boqueirão.<br>5. São Sebastião.<br>6. N. S. do Soccorro. |
| 6. Nazareth | 1. Nazareth (c.) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth.<br>2. Sant' Anna d'Aldeia.<br>3. N. S. das Dôres da Nova Lage.<br>4. S. Antonio de Jesus. |
| | 2. Jaguaripe (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Ajuda.<br>2. N. S. da Madre de Deos de Pirajuhya.<br>3. S. Gonçalo do S. Bomfim da Estiva. |
| | 3. Itaparica (t.) | 1. SS. Sacramento.<br>2. S. Bom Jesus da Vera-Cruz.<br>3. S. Amaro do Catú. |
| 7. Feira de Sant'Anna | 1. Feira de S. Anna (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição do Ribeirão Jacuipe.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição do Coité.<br>4. N. S. dos Remedios.<br>5. S. Barbara.<br>6. S. do Bomfim.<br>7. N. S. dos Humildes.<br>8. S. José de Itapororócas. |
| | 2. Camisão (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna do Camisão.<br>2. N. S. do Rosario do Orobó.<br>3. N. S. do Bom Conselho da Serra Preta. |
| 8. Valença | 1. Valença (c.) | 1. N. S. do Coração de Jesus.<br>2. Sant' Anna de Serapuhy.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição de Querém. |
| | 2. Jequiriçá (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição dos Cairiris.<br>2. S. Vicente Ferrer de Arêa. |
| | 3. Santarem (t.) | 1. S. André. |
| | 4. Cayrú (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario.<br>2. Espirito Santo da Velha Boipeba. |
| | 5. Taperoá (t.) | 1. S. Braz de Taperoá. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 9. Ilhéos | 1. Ilhéos (t.) | 1. S. Jorge. |
| | 2. Olivença (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Barra de Una. |
| 10. Camamú | 1. Camamú (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Camamú. |
| | | 2. N. S. das Dôres de Igrapiuna. |
| | 2. Barcellos (t.) | 1. N. S. das Candêas. |
| | 3. Barra do Rio de Contas (t.) | 1. S. Miguel. |
| | 4. Marahú (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião. |
| 11. Porto Seguro | 1. Porto Seguro (t.) | 1. N. S. da Pena. |
| | 2. S. Cruz (t.) | 1. S. Cruz. |
| | 3. Villa Verde (t.) | 1. Espirito Santo. |
| | 4. Trancoso (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista. |
| | 5. Canavieiras(t.) | 1. S. Boaventura do Poxim. |
| | 6. Belmonte (t.) | 1. N. S. do Carmo. |
| 12. Caravellas | 1. Caravellas (c.) | 1. S. Antonio. |
| | 2. Prado (t.) | 1. N. S. da Purificação. |
| | 3. Alcobaça (t.) | 1. S. Bernardo. |
| | 4. Viçosa (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| | 5. Porto Alegre (t.) | 1. S. José. |
| 13. Itapicurú | 1. Itapicurú (t.) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Livramento do Barracão. |
| | 2. Soure (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| | 3. Pombal (t.) | 1. S. Thereza. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Amparo da Ribeira do Páu Grande. |
| | 4. Tucano (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna. |
| 14. Inhambupe | 1. Inhambupe (t.) | 1. Espirito Santo. |
| | | 2. N. S. dos Prazeres. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição do Aporá. |
| | 2. Purificação (t.) | 1. N. S. da Purificação dos Campos. |
| | | 2. SS. Coração de Maria. |
| | | 3. SS. Coração de Jesus de Pedrão. |
| | | 4. Sant' Anna da Serrinha. |
| | | 5. S. João de Oriçangas. |
| | 3. Alagoinhas (t.) | 1. Jesus, Maria e José. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 15. Monte Santo | 1. Monte Santo (t.) | 1. S. S. Coração de Jesus. |
| | 2. Geremuabo (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio da Gloria. |
| | | 3. N. S. do Bom Conselho dos Montes do Boqueirão. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Patrocinio do Coité. |
| 16. Joazeiro | 1. Joazeiro (t.) | 1. N. S. das Grotas. |
| | 2. Santa Sé (t.) | 1. S. João da Barra. |
| | 3. Capim Grosso (t.) | 1. S. Antonio de Pambú. |
| 17. Rio de Contas | 1. Minas do Rio de Contas (t.) | 1. N. S. do Livramento. |
| | | 2. SS. Sacramento. |
| | | 3. S. Bom Jesus. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Carmo do Morro do Fogo. |
| | 2. Brejo Grande (t.) | 1. N. S. do Alivio. |
| 18. Jacobina | 1. Jacobina (t.) | 1. S. Antonio. |
| | | 2. SS. Coração de Jesus do Riachão. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Saúde. |
| | 2. Monte Alegre (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Gavião. |
| | 3. Villa Nova da Rainha (t.) | 1. S. do Bomfim. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio da Freguezia Velha. |
| | | 3. S. Antonio das Queimadas. |
| | 4. Morro do Chapéo (t.) | 1. N. S. da Gloria. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Mundo Novo. |
| 19. Lavras Diamantinas. | 1. Lençóes (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição dos Lencóes. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Campestre. |
| | 2. S. Isabel do Paraguassú (t.) | 1. S. João de Paraguassú. |
| | | 2. S. Sebastião de Sincorá. |
| 20. Maracás | 1. Maracás (t.) | 1. N. S. da Graça. |
| | 2. Victoria (t.) | 1. N. S. da Victoria da Conquista. |
| 21. Caeteté | 1. Caeteté (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna. |
| | | 2. S. Bom Jesus dos Meiras. |
| | | 3. N. S. do Rosario do Gentio. |
| | 2. S. Antonio da Barra (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Barra. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Boa Viagem e Almas. |
| 22. Chique-Chique | 1. Chique-Chique (t.) | 1. S. do Bomfim e Bom Jesus. |
| | 2. Pilão Arcado (t. | 1. S. Antonio. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 23. Urubú | 1. Urubú (t.) | 1. S. Antonio. |
| | 2. Macaúbas (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| | | 2. N. S. das Brotas. |
| 24. Monte Alto | 1. Monte Alto (t.) | 1. N. S. Mãi dos Homens. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario do Riacho de Sant' Anna. |
| | 2. Carinhanha (t.) | 1. S. José. |
| | 3. Rio das Eguas (t.) | 1. N. S. da Gloria. |
| | | 2. S. Anna dos Brejos. |
| 25. Rio S. Francisco | 1. Barra do Rio Grande (t.) | 1. S. Francisco das Chagas. |
| | 2. S. Rita do Rio Preto (t.) | 1. S. Rita. |
| | 3. Campo Largo | 1. Sant' Anna do Campo Largo. |
| | | 2. Sant' Anna do Angical. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

S. Salvador, city and capital of the province, and capital of the Brazilian colony until the year 1763, founded in 1549 by Thomé de Souza, the first governour general; it is a great place and with a population estimated at 200,000 inhabitants; a commercial city of the first order; it is divided into the lower and upper town; in the former commerce prevails, and there is found the commercial or exchange room; the banking establishments, the custom house, a vast edifice having an extensive iron bridge, the marine arsenal, near the custom house, and the war arsenal, situated to the north of the city, a sationhouse for the railway from Bahia to S. Francisco, near the commercial exchange, the gas manufactory, &c. Its most notable edifices are: the church of Conceiçao constructed of marble; that of Trindade which is magnificent, and to the north the majestic and richly gifted church of Bom Fim, very much venerated and erected on a beautiful eminence, and other churches besides. Near that eminence is to be seen the establishment of the *Vehiculos Economicos* with a

vast workshop for the building of those carriages popularly called *bonds*: at this point the cars which have been driven from the city by mules on iron rails, are further driven by steam locomotives as far as the Ribeira da Itapagipe. In all the squares of the city there are drinking fountains, and the number of elegant, and large houses is very striking. In the *upper* town which has a much greater extent of view on its magnificent hill, there are fine squares, the government palace, the municipal chamber, the ancient and spacious college of the Jesuits whose church is now the cathedral, and in whose dependencies and continuations are the School of medicine, and the misericordial hospital, and the public library with about 18,000 volumes. The private houses are conspicuous for more elegance and luxury, and the notable edifices are the Sé or old cathedral, the convent and church of the third order of S. Francisco, the monastery of S. Bento, the ancient convent of Palma, where are established the lyceum and the museum; many churches, of which the most conspicuous is that of the Piedade and of the Misericordia; besides these edifices the theatre of S. João must not be forgotten.

The public garden or promenade is magnificently situated. In the city of S. Salvador, or Bahia, many literary, philanthropic and patriotic societies recommend themselves, a developed love of letters, many printing offices, and a lively daily and periodical press. This important city, lastly, has 6 cemeteries, 4 catholic, and 2 protestant, all away from the centre of the population of the town.

*Santo Amaro*, a flourishing city which supports itself in the bosom of agriculture; it has a fine parish church, a hospital of mercy, the *Recolhimento dos Humildes*, which is an establishment for the education of girls, &c., in its municipality the *Instituto Bahiano de Agricultura* is to be founded, for which purpose large sums have been expended.

*Nazareth*, a city on the Jaguaripe, breathed on by agricultural good fortune, has for its chief buildings its parish church, and the municipal chamber; they expect a magnificent work in their *Estação do Tram road*, which is about to be finished.

*Cachoeira*, a city of historical name on the *Paraguassú*; it is rich, populous, and commercial; its churches are sumptuous, it has houses worthy of it, and many manufactories of cigars, &c.

*Valença*, a city on the Una having for its best buildings the parish church, and the municipal chamber: it boasts of its cotton weaving factory—*Todos os Santos*—which vies in the perfection of its products with the best in the Empire.

And besides those, the cities of *Maragogipe*, on the left bank of the Guahy, *Caravellas*, maritime, and *Lençóes*, central and auriferous, progressing and developing the produce of its agriculture notably favoured by the fruitfulness of the soil, and by its industry that vivifies and its commerce that accompanies and aids these two fountains that feed it.

## COLONIZATION.

European immigration does not know, does not value, and therefore does not yet seek out the province of Bahia, which offers to it such great advantages; there are in the province, however, the colonies of *Commandatuba* and of *Cachoeira*. That of Commandatuba counts 500 individuals or colonists who are employed in the rearing of cattle; it has 19 factories for making farinha, and a pottery; they make roads, and in six months they had to lament the loss of 1 woman, and 1 child only. That of *Cachoeira* is still

more encouraging; 11 families consisting of 60 persons with fixed dwellings are engaged together in opening extensive roads; there is an abundance of mandioc, rice, and feijão (beans), a spacious run of ground, excellent for cultivating cacao, coffee, sugar cane, and what is more, unsurpassingly healthy, and so much so that in 1871 *not a single one of the colonists died, not one.*

# CHAPTER XII.

## PROVINCE OF SPIRITO SANTO.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

Vasco Fernandez Coutinho, a Portugueze nobleman, who had made himself illustrious in the war in India, received in 1534 a royal patent of gift of a captaincy of fifty leagues in extent, counting from the river *Itapemirim* to the river *Mucury*, and having by the sale of all he possessed in Portugal, by the exchange of a pension which he received from the State, for a vessel and sundry goods which the government of the king gave him, and finally by borrowing money, got together all he could in the way of men and materials, he crossed the Atlantic in the following year, and founded the hamlet of *Espirito Santo*, a name which became that of the captaincy. The savages called the first colonial establishment *Alboah*, which signifies *Village of the people who wear shoes*, or simply *shod*.

Vasco Fernandez was attacked by the aborigines, and after he had conquered them, he bound them to him by kindness and presents, and succeeded in getting a "murubixada" (chief) to come with his horde, and form a village which was under his eye and his protection; he saw his captaincy, or rather *his town* breathing some years of prosperity; but soon, certain noblemen who had been condemned to banishment brought to it the elements of disorder; and further an other nobleman, Duarte de Lemos, receiving

as a reward for his services the Island then called S. Antonio (which took the name of its donee), and still further favours, declared himself adverse to his benefactor, who denied him the right of creating a *town*, and thence arose the most hurtful dissensions.

The rising and hopeful colony became disheartened and weakened: the savages renewed hostilities; Vasco Fernandez, old, poor, and a cripple, living upon charity, renounced the crown of the captaincy, when in 1560 the Governor General, Mem de Sá arrived there on a visit, and finally died in such miserable poverty that the very cloth which shrouded his remains was the gift of charity.

Mem de Sá had left Belxior de Azevedo as Captain General of the captaincy of Espirito Santo, whose capital had already been transferred to the village, subsequently city of *Victoria*, in the Island of *S. Antonio* or *Duarte de Lemos*, and both before and after that act, he had already driven out and again drove out, and in subsequent struggles put to the rout the *Goytacazes*, and the *Aymorés*, losing in one of the combats with them, his son, the valiant and intrepid youth Fernando de Sá.

Thenceforth less molested by the aborigines, the inhabitants of the captaincy of Espirito Santo passed a very quiet and uneventful life; in 1592 they repelled with noble energy an attack made by Robert Morgan, the lieutenant of the audacious pirate Cavendish; in 1625 fortunately and opportunely strengthened by the expedition which under the command of Salvador Correia de Sá was going to the assistance fo the city of Salvador, conquered by the Dutch, routed 300 soldiers of the brave enemy Pieter Heyn, who assaulted the capital. Besides these honourable although humble historical reminiscences, her lot was that of being a simple satellite of the captaincy of Rio de Janeiro, with which she shared in a small and relative degree the antagonism of the colonists and the Jesuits and the underhand

struggles of the secular clergy with the ecclesiastical administrator of the city of S. Sebastião. Let not a funeral although generous reminiscence be forgotten: there remained in the bosom and in the heart of the captaincy of Espirito Santo the mortal remains of the glorious and apostolic missionary, the Jesuit priest José de Anchieta, whose funeral cortege, formed of poor and rich, making a long journey with his corpse, while bathed in tears, and consecrated by their blessings the popular canonization took place of the priest whose life, words, actions and triumphs were those of a true apostle of Christ. It was very appropriate that in the east of Espirito Santo should be opened the grave for the sepulture of Anchieta, and that his soul should take its flight from thence to heaven, which is the country of the just.

The captaincy of Espirito Santo, which at first only embraced the territory granted by D. João III. to Vasco Fernandez Coutinho, afterwards took in within its limits (administrative), a good and great part of the captaincy of *Parahyba*, or that of Pero de Goes, so that it had dominion over all the ancient and extensive, and now subdivided municipality of *Campos de Goytacazes*, and so important was it, that this had a decesive influence in the choice of the respective deputy to the cortes of Lisbon in 1821, and even in the election of deputies in the reign of the first Emperor of Brazil; but in 1832 the boundary of the province of Rio de Janeiro to the north, and that of Espirito Santo to the south underwent considerable alteration, all that rich and most important municipality of Campos passing to the former province, which although subsequently sub-divided still preserves the grade of the most considerable and richest of the province of Rio de Janeiro.

Not even holding a second place by the exploration of its natural resources, and by its weight in the political

scale of the Empire, the province of Espirito Santo has in its bosom the elements of a brilliant future, and of great wealth; in its rivers *Doce* and *Mucury* it has arteries of most assured riches, even close to the sea it abounds in treasures of immensely powerful vegetation; its lands are most fertile; and its quarries of marble vie with its aureferous soil, which lie forgotten, because others easier to be worked on account of their being better known or richer elsewhere condemn them to be forgotten—which circumstance cannot continue for long.

The province of Espirito Santo, although adjoining to that of the capital of the Empire, destined by nature to be on the coast, the emporium and the exporting province of the produce of the interesting part of Minas Geraes, lies still imperfectly known, little appreciated, and as it were a country still to be recovered, and which offers and ensures to European emigration, more than calculations, and contingent hopes, a certainty in abundance of crops in a most fertile soil, and of great gain and advantage to enterprise and industrial undertakings, which may be boldly and prudently conducted; it is a golden fleece awaiting the argonauts.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIVISION.

The latitude, all south, is between 18° 5′ and 21° 28, the longitude all east is between 1° 40′ and 3° 22′.

This province is in its greatest extent from north to south 73 leagues long from the right bank of the river *Mucury* to the left bank of the *Itabapoana;* and from east to west 25 leagues from the islands of Guarapary to the right bank of the streamlet *Jiquitiba:* its superfice is 1561 square leagues; its coast is about 80 leagues, including the curves, in extent.

## BOUNDARIES.

It has the province of Bahia on its northern confine separated from it by the *Mucury* river, and to the south, Rio de Janeiro, from which the *Itabapoana* separates it; on the east it has the Atlantic, and on the west, Minas Geraes, from which it is separated by the river *Preto*, an affluent of the *Itabapoana*, rivulet *Jiquitiba*, small river *José Pedro* and mountain ranges *Souza* and *Aymorés*.

## CLIMATE.

It is both warm and damp in the neighbourhood of the coast, but without exaggeration, mild and agreeable in the interior, and generally salubrious.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The face of the country is unequal and mountainous; the level spots are comparatively few; and in all parts, generally, extensive forests spread over it.

## OROGRAPHY.

To the south extend the *Puris* mountains; to the west follow from south to north, those of the *Pedra Menina*, *Negra*, *Souza* and the *Aymorés*; from west to east advance those of *Chibuta*, *Campo* and *Malha*, which appear to continue. The mountain ranges of *Castello* and *Batatal*, go one after the other from the south to the north-west as far as that of *Campo*, and from the point from which the two stand out, that of the *Pero Cão*, which is to the north of that of Guarapari, which rises between the river of that name and the Benevente, goes to the east.

The *Mestre Alvaro* at 3 leagues from the beach, the *Monte Morena* at the entrance of the bay of Espirito Santo are all notable mountains.

The mountain range of the *Aymorés* which appears to be the predominant one is a branch of the eastern chain or *do Mar*.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The following rivers from the north to the south, in order, discharge themselves into the sea.

*Mucury*, *Guaxindiba*, *S. Matheus*, and beyond the river *Doce*, the *Santa Cruz*, *dos reis Magos*, *Juca*, *Jacarahipe*, *Una*, *Guarapari*, *Benevente*, *Piuma*, *Itapemirim* and *Itabapoana*. All these rivers are navigable for canoes, and the Mucury, Guarapari, S. Matheus, &c. for smacks, to a greater or smaller extent of leagues. In the eighth chapter of the first part will be found more extended information, which would find a place here if they had not already been given there.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* Besides what is mentioned in the respective general memorandum on Brazil, the richness of the fine marbles is conspicuous, and there are reports, and conjectures, not yet verified by exploration, of rich mines of gold, diamonds, &c. which is otherwise shewn to be probable by the geological relations which exist between this province and Minas Geraes.

*Vegetable kingdom.* Is most rich on every point of view, the province has forests which rival those of the Amazonas in richness and majesty, and it is splendid and admirable, considered phytologically.

*Animal kingdom.* It does not differ from that of the other provinces.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

Agricultural industry does not correspond with the astonishing fertility of the blessed soil of the province; plant and you will reap with a most encouraging result for your labour: hands, however, are wanted, and direct commerce, to raise the province of Espirito Santo to the degree of importance to which she has a right; and still

more are wanting means of communication with the most fertile interior of the province, where navigable rivers abound, and there is an immense sea board of a mild character. Coffee and cane which gives both sugar and rum, cotton, mandioca, grain, are planted and harvested in extraordinary abundance; in far off places, however, that abundance is lost, or becomes useless on account of the difficulty of exporting it; and even on the coast, all commerce is in absolute despendence on the city of Rio de Janeiro, to which place the agricultural community forward their goods direct.

The chief and almost only industrial occupation, consists on the cutting down and exporting timber, for the arsenals and capital of the Empire. The commerce is, as already shewn, paltry, simply tributary and consequently without vivifying influence.

And nevertheless, the province of Espirito Santo has within itself natural and powerful elements of prosperity and greatness, and possesses so favourable a climate that it only awaits a current of immigration to give it extraordinary advantages, and to rise in a few years to a state of dazzling splendour.

Besides its most fertile soil, the sea on its coasts is most extraordinarily abundant in the best kind of fish, and the respective industrial occupation would work a mine of gold, by preparing and exporting a considerable quantity of salted fish.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 70,597 inhabitants of which 51,825 free, 18,772 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 1 senator, 2 deputies to the general assembly, and 20 belonging to the provincial, the province forming one sole electoral district,

with 4 colleges (for voting) and with a total of 147 electors and 6972 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard* having 3 superior commanders, and 6 battalions; 1 section of a battalion of infantry, and 1 squadron of cavalry on active duty, and one battalion of infantry of reserve, in all 2484 national guards on active duty and 1022 in the reserve corps, total 3506.

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary:* schools for boys 50 with 1107 scholars, and 14 for girls, with 124 scholars. *Private primary:* there were only 2 for boys, and 1 for girls known to official authority in 1871; there was in the same year granted the opening of 2 more for boys. *Secondary public instruction:* the college of Nossa Senhora da Victoria, with schools for elementary mathematics, geography, history, French, English and Latin: there were 51 students, besides a school for music in which there were 23.

*Civil judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Espirito Santo is divided and sub-divided into districts, municipalities and parishes as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Victoria (capitel) | 1. Victoria (city and cap.) | 1. N. S. da Victoria. |
| | | 2. S. José do Queimado. |
| | | 3. S. João de Caraicica. |
| | | 4. S. João de Carapina. |
| | | 5. S. Leopoldina. |
| | 2. Vianna (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Vianna. |
| | | 2. S. Isabel. |
| | 3. EspiritoSanto (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario do Espirito Santo |
| 2. S. Matheus | 1. S. Matheus (c.) | 1. S. Matheus. |
| | 2. Barra de S. Matheus (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Barra de S. Matheus. |
| | | 2. S. Sebastião dos Itaúnas. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 3. Itapemirim | 1. Itapemirim (t.) | 1. N. S. do Amparo do Itapemirim. |
| | 2. Benevente (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção de Benevente. |
| | 3. Guarapary (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Guarapary. |
| | 4. Cachoeira de Itapemirim (t.) | 1. S. Pedro do Cachaeiro.<br>2. S. Pedro d'Alcantara do Rio Pardo.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição do Alegre.<br>4. S. Miguel do Veado.<br>5. S. Pedro de Itabapoana. |
| 4. Reis Magos | 1. Serra (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Serra. |
| | 2. Nova Almeida (t.) | 1. S. Reis Magos da Nova Almeida. |
| | 3. S. Cruz (t.) | 1. N. S. da Penha de S. Cruz.<br>2. S. Benedicto do Riacho. |
| | 4. Linhares (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Linhares do Rio-Doce. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Nossa Senhora da Victoria*, city and capital, situated in an amphitheatre on the west side of the island of Espirito Santo, primitively called Santo Antonio; its more notable buildings are the following: a good parish church, a hospital, a monastery of Franciscan friars, and one of Carmelites (wearing shoes), and besides some chapels, the former college of the Jesuits, a magnificent house which is the residence of the president (Palacio do Governo); there is to the east, and a little to the south in the same bay of Espirito Santo, the ancient capital, afterwards called the *Villa Velha* which, although in decadence, is proud of its monastery of Franciscans, and church of Our Lady of Penha, on the high mountain which in the form of a sugar loaf rises up on the southern shore of the bay, about the third of a league to the west of Monte Moreno. That monastery is seen by vessels at a distance of 15 miles.

*S. Matheus*, city on the border of the river of the same name, and at 4 leagues distance from the sea, a commercial and prosperous place, exporting much farinha

made from mandioc, sugar and grain, and is the capital of a territory of extraordinary fertility. *Cuarapary,* town situated on a hillock close to the mouth of the river and on the bay of its own name; it is also commercial, cotton and cereals are advantageously cultivated there, and the balsam called peruvian, and a great quantity of timber is exported therefrom. Itapemirim, town, on the southern bank of the river of said name, and half a league distant from the sea, notable for an exporting place of sugar and timber, and also harvesting cotton and cereals in abundance.

## COLONIZATION.

If the *Rio Doce* Company had not been a failure, and that of *Mucury* had advanced in development, and taken the proportions planned by its well deserving directors, the province of Espirito Santo, one of those in the Empire which offer the greatest advantages to European immigration on account of the fortunate mildness of its healthy climate, its numerous navigable rivers, and extraordinary fertility of its lands, would have shewn itself by this time greatly advanced, and progressing boldly; it, however, wants population of immigrants; a family here and there quite isolated is barely to be counted, and these by agricultural labour live by exporting rich harvests of the principal articles of produce, and lamenting the measureless surplus of other things, the cheap price of which is not worth pains, as it does not pay the cost of exportation, but which at least ensure to them the fortune of abundance always to be had in their homes.—Thus then, it is a fact that no colonization has hitherto been organized, nor has a nucleus of European immigration been formed in this province, so propitious to health, to abundance and to the wealth of immigrants from either the south or the north of Europe.

## CIVILIZATION AND RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION OF THE INDIANS.

The Indians who have already entered into fraternal relations with the civilized population are very numerous; as are also those who approach them, appearing to be quiet and wishing to trade; the wild Indians, however, superabound, to the civilization of whom a capuchin friar attends, who is endeavouring, as yet with little or no result, to give life and a future to the village horde of Mutum.—The little encouraging fact, cannot counsel the abandonment of the civilizing undertaking, for it is known *officially* that in *S. Matheus*, and in other parts of the province, the Indians are *labouring well* and *adapting themselves to the way of life equal with the other labourers.*

Added to this, in the unknown interior which extends between the river *Doce* and *S. Matheus*, the savage hordes still war, one with the other, disputing concerning their deserts, and those wars which result in conquerors and conquered, persecutors and persecuted, can easily be made to favour the interests of the civilizing element, or the civilizing domination of the savage, as was so often observed in the 16th and 17th centuries, in the conquests and foundings of sundry captaincies.

# CHAPTER XIII.

## PROVINCE OF RIO DE JANEIRO.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The city of S. Sebastião of Rio de Janeiro, and its municipality, from the fact of the capital of the Empire being therein established, and continued, became since the year 1834, in which was promulgated the additional act which so determined it, unconnected with the peculiar government and administration of the province of Rio de Janeiro, of which it formed a part and was the head; but if that separation of character exclusively political, obliges, and even facilitates the distinct study of both, of the province, and of the municipality of the court, there is one point, beyond the close geographical relations in which the distinction shews itself impossible, it is that of their history; it is therefore imperative that it should become joined in this slight sketch, up to that epoch of 1834.

Immediately after the discovery of Brazil by Pedro Alvares Cabral, the immense, magnificent, and serene bay of Rio de Janeiro, which also appeared to Agassiz more like a vast lake surrounded by mountains, than a resting place of the ocean, began to be visited and frequented. Gonçalo Coelho and Americo Vespucio in 1502, and perhaps, or almost certainly, on the 1st day of January, João Dias de Solis in 1515, Magalhães, and Ruy Falleiro on the 13th December 1519, Martim Affonso de Souza in April

1531 entered it, and the last remained there four months: the first governor general Thomé de Souza visited it in 1552, and in the absence of resources for leaving in some of its fine sites a nucleus of colonization, wrote to Dom João III., showing the advantages of the situation and the favourable and important condition of the magnificent bay. It was then already, and since 1534, that Brazil was divided into heriditary captaincies, and the territory of the posterior captaincy, afterwards province of Rio de Janeiro was, as far as the bar of Macahé, comprised in the grant to Martim Affonso de Souza, who doubtless, to spare all sacrifices, forgot the splendid and promising Nicterohy which he knew and had so far appreciated, that in 1531 he had allowed himself to remain for a quarter of a year exploring the interior and having two brigantines to be built; and through economy availed himself, as a fief of his own, of the colonies of S. Vicente and of Piratininga, already founded by himself in 1532 and at the cost of the Government.

But besides these explorers, navigators and official delegates, the French privateers, who almost immediately after the first news of the *Land of Santa Cruz*, had already commenced the contraband and trade of Brazil wood, frequented the bay of Rio de Janeiro, which was near to them, and from whence they took timber, pepper, and every other thing which gave them an available harvest, they being well received by the *Tamoyos*, savages of the dominant tribe of that part of Brazil.

To the traffic and to the factories of the French privateers followed an immediate enterprise of conquest. Nicolas Durand Willegaignon, protected by Admiral Coligny, and aided by the French Government, arrived with two vessels, and many Calvinists, his fellow countrymen, to found a colony in the lands of the bay of Rio de Janeiro, and effectually founded it in 1555, commencing by establishing and fortifying himself on the islet which keeps his name, he having

in his favour the assistance and alliance of the *Tamoyos*. Notwithstanding that Calvinist chief (who, however, afterwards embraced catholicism) returned to Europe, thwarted and disgusted, the intrusive colony remained, and already augmented by a reinforcement of three hundred men brought in 1557 by Bois le Comte, and with them, the aspiration of calling the colony *Henryville* on the western margin of the bay, and *Antarctic France the whole extent of territory* which they could embrace by conquest.

Beaten in 1560 by Mem de Sá, governor general, the French took shelter in the neighbouring woods protected by the Tamoyos, and no sooner had the conqueror retired, than they returned to their former positions which were fortified anew. In 1565 Estacio de Sá arrived with the intention of expelling them once for all, and disembarking in *Praia Vermelha*, near the Pão d'Assucar (*Sugar-loaf*) there fixed the foundation of the city of *S. Sebastião* (less in remembrance of the Saint, than in that of the name of the king); he however lost two years in combats wit houta decisive termination, until his uncle, that same governor general, came to his aid, entering the bar by a fortunate accident or premeditated calculation on the 19th day of January 1567, so that on the following day, that of the feast of the patron saint of the city, he commenced the battle, and from victory to victory on the continent and on the islands intrusive France and invading calvinism were completely crushed by the sovereignty of Portugal and the dominion of catholicism in Brazil. Among the victims of the successive struggles which took place at least during three days, was Estacio de Sá, who for that reason did not see the placing of his Sebastianopolis on the hill afterwards called the Castle hill, on the western border of the bay.

Estacio de Sá was buried in the humble chapel or church covered with thatch which he had built in his ham-

let, which he presumed would be the city: his mortal remains were subsequently placed in a deep and notable sepulchre in the church of S. Sebastião, which was immediately and unpretendingly erected provisionally, on the Castle hill.

In 1862 finally, the bearded friars having to rebuild the said church, the still remaining bones of the destroyed corpse were exhumed, and piously collected and placed in an urn which they well merited, Señor Dom Pedro II. and many members of the Historical and Geographical Institute of Brazil being present at the act.

Mem de Sá remained some months in Rio de Janeiro, founding the city and regulating the principal works and administration of the captaincy of that same name, consequently created. The people with whom Estacio de Sá had come from Portugal and whom he had brought from Bahia, served as a nucleus to the new colony. The Indian *Ararigboia*, Martim Affonso by baptism, who with his horde, leaving his land in the neighbouring captaincy of Espirito Santo had joined the expedition, and had distinguished himself as a true hero in the combats, obtained and occupied two leagues of granted lands (sesmaria) on the other side of the bay, immediately establishing the villages of São Lourenço and Icarahy. Grants of land were not wanting to the Portuguese in the territory which contained superfluous land, and the Jesuit priests, who notwithstanding, had not kept aloof from the perils of war, took advantage of the partition, and promptly took on the beach a place for a warehouse, on the Castle hill, a situation well chosen for a College, and on beach lands, a great and interesting extent of ground: that that care for their material interest should denote a small amount of evangelical intention, is a question to be put on one side: what cannot be denied is, that with that, and notwithstanding that, in Rio de Janeiro, as in all the sea coast of Brazil were to be found

the vestiges of the influence, of the abnegation, of the personal sacrifice, daring, fearless, and heroic, in the glorious campaigns where the *cross* and the words, *religious instruction and civilization*, were the only arms of the bloodless victories, and of the admirable conquests of the priests of the Company of Jesus.

Mem de Sá left another nephew, Salvador Correa de Sá, as Governor of the captaincy of Rio de Janeiro, which was considered so important, that five years afterwards, it was raised, although ephemerally, to the head of a General Government of the Captaincies of the South, to commence in the north from the river Jequitinhonha, under the command and government of Antonio Salema.

Wars of extermination of the tribe Tamoyos, irreconcilable enemies of the Portuguese, the second elevation to the capital of the government of the captaincies of the south in 1608, abolished in 1616, the notable increase of the population, and of riches from the fertility of the soil, and the advantageous conditions of the unrivalled bay, and the lamentable development of the traffic of the enslaved Indians, the greater number of whom were sent or brought to the city, barely yet rising by the backwoodsmen of S. Paulo, the antagonism, and a serious conflict between the Jesuits and the colonists, on account of the said Indians, economical vexations, and new imposts and taxes, the consequence of the oppression and the monopoly of the General Company of Commerce created in 1647 a disturbance of the people, who revolted on account of the same, and the creation of the first parishes and towns, out of the city, fill up the history of the first century of the captaincy of Rio de Janeiro.

In that time the great evil of the colony founded by Mem de Sá was the demoralization and the licence of the habits, the want of discipline and disorderly conduct of the Clergy, unfortunately contributing much to that result; the

ecclesiastical administrators had not the necessary power for indispensable, active severity, and the more so as against them were repeated attempts of assassination made by poison, and by other means which otherwise continued unpunished, inasmuch as the criminals were never discovered.

This intolerable state of things began to mend with the creation of the Bishoprick of Rio de Janeiro; but it became absolutely necessary that the Bishops should shew themselves rigorous with the clergy during a long period, which extended beyond the first half of the eighteenth century.

In 1710 and 1711, the city of Rio de Janeiro was attacked by French expeditions; Duclerc, chief of the first, disembarked in Guaratiba, and came by land to besiege it, he was, however, overthrown, became a prisoner, together with all his men, and a few months after, when he lived in the city in submission, he came to his end one night by being assassinated; this crime which remained in the shadow of mystery, seems to have arisen from private vengeance, but the French attributed it to the governor Francisco de Castro de Moraes, who had no interest in perpetrating it (and if he had, the recourse to assassination would always have been infamous), and to whom is sufficient the sad remembrance of the pusillanimity which he shewed in the action of 1710, and the cowardice with which in the following year, he abandoned precipitately the city, flying and ordering to be withdrawn all the forces opposed to Duguay-Trouin, who had forced the bar and already occupied an undisputed position on land.

After being sacked by the French, the city was ransomed by the payment of six hundred and ten thousand cruzados, one hundred cases of sugar, and two hundred bullocks at the cost of the exchequer, of the coffer of the orphans, and that of absentees, of religious institutions, and from the purse of many colonists, the booty carried off by

the conquerors amounting to two millions (of cruzados), and the injury to the State exceeding thirty; a very dear price paid for the military incapacity and the pusillanimity of a governor!

The wars in the south brought with them a greater importance to the city of Rio de Janeiro, very much nearer to those plains on the left bank of the Plate, than those of the capital of Bahia, and for that reason, the seat of the general government of the Portuguese colony of America was transferred to it in 1763.

From this year to the 7th of March 1808, seven vice-roys governed Colonial Brazil, having for its courageous capital the daughter of Mem de Sá; they were the Conde da Cunha, the Conde de Azambuja, the Marquis de Lavradio, Luiz de Vasconcellos e Souza, the Conde de Rezende, Dom Fernando José de Portugal, afterwards Conde and Marquez de Aguiar, and finally the Conde dos Arcos.

Of those vice-roys all more or less despots, and often capricious oppressors—the Marquez de Lavradio is prominent as a great administrator and real statesman, who opened up fountains of revenue, created industrial occupations, and sowed the seeds for future harvests, and Luiz de Vasconcellos, the *workman*,—who embellished, enriched, and made pleasant the city of Rio de Janeiro, and whose name is perpetuated in the great improvements of the Aqueduct of the *Carioca*, in the fountain in the *Pedro II. square* (then of the *Carmo*, and still after the *Palace Square*) in the *public gardens*, made by the celebrated Valentim, on the bed of a pestiferous lake, for the filling up of which served a spur of the Santa Thereza hill which rose in the place where immediately afterwards was marked out the present street of the "*Mangueiras*", in the street which poetically and deservedly was called at that time "*das Bellas Noites*", and which is now called "*das Marecas*", and in many other works, buildings and rebuildings, which are due to him;

not less distinguished than those two vice-roys, however, was the Conde de Rezende, a visionary and persecutor, whom from the suspicions engendered by the conspiracy of *Tiradentes*, at whose execution or martyrdom he presided, dreamt of plots, of revolts, carried on a government of suspicion, dissolved a literary society, and made *Pizarro* make a voyage of emigration, in timid retreat he who was afterwards Marquez de Maricá, and scattered the few who with these cultivated fraternally and innocently the *belles lettres*.

But even so, with the Conde de Rezende himself, and with the vice-roys his antecessors and successors, the city of Rio de Janeiro encreased and made progress, the number of towns augmented, and the parishes of the interior much more so. In compensation of the want and of the prohibition of making the Indians slaves, the barbarous traffic of African slaves began to increase progressively, and with the aid of these the agricultural produce augmented; the culture of indigo prospered, the coffee plant spread with the best founded hope of great riches, so that the Royal Family of Portugal, emigrants from the mother country came in 1808 to find in Rio de Janeiro a city somewhat rude and paltry in aspect, still made mean and as it were Moorish from the custom of shutting up the families; but rich to pay and live a ten years term of pompous feasts, to raise in that same period edifices, such as the theatre of S. João (afterwards of S. Pedro de Alcantara), an exchange, an academy of the fine arts and others, to extend itself, almost doubling the number of its houses, ready to become embellished, changing its aspect, and to modify itself, altering customs of exaggerated reserve, and finding in herself, finally, sufficient intellectual and material resources to shew herself worthy of the rank of Capital of the Monarchy, to which she was then elevated.

From 1808 forwards, the history of Rio de Janeiro and especially that of the city, better known by that same name, loses its private character, and predominating by its superior political and administrative influence, in the march of events, identifies itself with the general history of Brazil, and cannot be separated therefrom.

It was thus that in 1821 the glorious patriotic conspiracy was got up in it, the result of which was the cry from Ypiranga for the independence and foundation of a new Empire; in the following year, as well also as in 1831 there took place in the bosom of the said capital, after almost a month of agitation, and a great many nights passed in riots and conflicts between the Brazilians and Portuguese, the assembling together of the people and of a great part of the troops in the Campo de Santa Anna (the present Acclamation Square)—on the afternoon and night of the 6th April, which brought about the abdication of the first Emperor, who wanted both moral and physical force to maintain himself on the throne; but at least he knew how to prefer abdicating that crown, to keeping possession of it by entering into conflicts with the inevitable pending revolution. It was also in Rio de Janeiro that the conspiracy of the *exalted* liberals, of the *Caramurús* or restorers of Dom Pedro I. in the character of Regent of the Empire, during the minority of his son, Señor Dom Pedro II., took place; and the much more serious (having for accomplices the government itself of the regency) parliamentary conspiracy of 30th July 1832, which had in view the turning by decree the Chamber of Deputies into a National Convention, and which, in the same chamber, was brought to naught by the prudence and good sense of some notable members of the government party, and by the energetic attitude of the opposition.

And finally, again in 1840, the popular and bloodless reaction took place in the capital of the Empire, on the

22nd July, against the decree of the last Regent, Pedro de Araujo Lima, immediately afterwards created Viscount, and, later, Marques de Olinda, who prorogued the general assembly, which was evidently ready to declare the majority of the Emperor; that imprudent expedient of the ministry being followed by that re-action or public declaration (pronunciamento), directed by the deputies and senators called *Maioristas* (of the majority party) and immediately convoked the general assembly, which in the senate house proclaimed the *majority* of Señor Dom Pedro II., who at half past three in the afternoon of the same day took the oaths prescribed by the constitution of the Empire.

But at that time the municipality of the court, had already, for nearly six years, been separated from the province of Rio de Janeiro, which until the promulgation of the additional act, had been governed by the minister of the Empire, then became administered as the other provinces of the Empire were by a president, who in 1834 was Joaquim José Rodrigues Torres, later on Viscount Itaborahy.

The province of Rio de Janeiro, as already stated, principally, or in its greater part comprised of the captaincy of S. Vicente, or of Martim Affonso de Souza, after the expulsion of the French in 1567 and the foundation of the head city of the administrative captaincy, and twice, the ephemeral seat of the general government of the south, the jurisdiction of its governors extended beyond the river Macahé and through the lands of the questionable captaincy of Pero de Góes, and in 1832 by law of 31st August, were annexed to this province the municipalities of Campos, of Goytacazes and of S. João da Barra, which since 1753 belonged to Espirito Santo.

Most wealthy is the first province of the Empire from its agricultural industry, and the benign and strongly sustaining influence of its exchange, and of the market,

of the opulence, and of the speculative interest of the city of Rio de Janeiro, that bind her in close and contiguous bonds; the province of the same name would be ill appreciated by the importance and proportions of its elegant and delightful capital, the city of Nicterohy, which poetically curved on the opposite side of the bay and facing the majestic Sebastianopolis, is like a suburb of the latter, pleasant and picturesque, in the same way that its provincial government so close to the general administration, that in half an hour, it receives from the latter orders and direction, cannot, nor in fact does it attain the same importance, nor has it that self acting and true and noble vivifying force which ought to make themselves felt even under the unfortunate conditions of the administrative provincial discentralization.

The near neighbourhood of the court, and the very easy communication with it, which is immediate and almost instantaneous, lower the administrative importance and absolutely annihilate the political influence of the provincial government of the city of Rio de Janeiro.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

It is situated in 20° 50′ and 23° 19′ south latitude and in 2° 9′ of east and 1° 42′ of west longitude.

Its greatest extent from north to south is forty five leagues, from the Serra do Batatal to Cape Frio; and 80 leagues from east to west, from S. João da Barra to the Serra of Paraty: and its coast is 120 leagues more or less. Its superfice is 2400 square leagues.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by the province of Espirito Santo, by the river *Itabapoana*, and is divided from Minas Geraes at the Serra da *Mantiqueira*, by the rivers *Preto*, *Parahybuna*, *Parahyba do Sul*, and the rivulet *Pirapetinga*,

river and serra of *S. Antonio,* serras *Frecheiras*, *Gavião* and *Batatal;* on the south by the Atlantic, and the province of S. Paulo; to the east by the Atlantic, and to the west still by the province of S. Paulo, its frontiers with the latter being the serras of *Paraty, Geral*, *Bocaina*, *Ariró*, *Carioca*, and the rivulet of *Salto.*

Although these boundaries may appear clear and positive, they are not the less not free from being in dispute.

## CLIMATE.

In the province of Rio de Janeiro the climate is hot and damp in the southern part, that narrows between the sea and the Cordillera, there being places where this is distant from the former only six, nine or ten miles: in the low lands or where there are swamps, intermittent fevers rage in March and September.

In the northern part, or *up the mountains*, which is the most extensive and vast, the climate is temperate, very agreeable and most healthy.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface of the country is very unequal principally in the southern part, where can be seen low lands, of which a great extent is swampy, and dry plains, isolated mounds, and small serras which are modest branches of those of the *Organs*, or better still, of the mountain range of the sea; to the north, and free from the influence of this, the soil is all low and not unequal; in the northern part, the ground rises proudly opening up valleys more or less deep, and more or less spacious, from whence the rivers and waters curve down, and run to seek the ocean, by the great and dominant channel or discharging place of the basin of Parahyba.

## OROGRAPHY.

Encircling the province by the north, west and south, at the points where they serve as boundaries, the following were pointed out, but stretch themselves out with raised heads in the following order, the serras of *Batatal*, also mentioned in the province of Espirito Santo, of the *Gavião*, *Frecheiros*, *S. Antonio* and *Mantiqueira*, and afterwards in the direction of west to south those of *Cariova*, *Ariró*, *Bocaina*, *Geral and Paraty*.

In the interior, supposing the province divided by the river Parahyba, the serras which predominate in the northern part are the *Pedra Sellada*, and nearer the *Mantiqueira*, and those of the *Minhocas*, of *Rio Bonito*, of *Taquara*, of the *Cruzes*, and of the *Abobaras*, in the territory that advances as far as the bank and the confluence of the Parahybuna. On the other side of the Parahyba and going from the west, the serras succeed as follow: those of the *Lages*, of *Itaguahy*, of *Pirahy*, of *Macacos*, of *Rodeio*, of *Mendes*, and of *S. Anna*, besides others of sundry denominations which indicate locality alone and not distinct serras, some of those which are named are of unbroken continuity. The *serra dos Orgãos* afterwards continues to the east approaching very near to the sea; it rises like a stupendous wall, facing the western side of the Bay of Rio de Janeiro, also taking local names, such as the serra of *Theresopolis*, of *Estrella*, of *Petropolis* &c., and lengthening itself out of the north and north-east, and with more ore less interesting ramifications, under a multitude of denominations, such as *Paquequer*, of *S. João*, of *Capim*, of *Agoa quente*, and of *Macacú*, *S. Anna*, *Friburgo*, of *Imbé*, and of *Macapá*, which go into the interior, in a northerly direction, while that of S. João, whence arises the river of the same name, which discharges itself in the Barra de S. João, *Crubixaes*, of *S. Antonio*, of *Quimbirá*, of *Berta*,

of *Iriry* and others incline to the east and some show themselves near to the sea.

Let it be once more stated, that many local names of serras which cannot be distinguished, such as *Subaio*, of *Macahé* and twenty others, or more, are unmentioned.

It is necessary now to mention a short piece of information.

All the serras of the south-eastern part of the province, that which extends between the right bank of the Parahyba and the Atlantic, evidently belong, in the orographic sytem to the eastern chain or to the Serra do Mar. Those of the extensive territory comprised between the Mantiqueira and the river Parahybuna on the other side of the Parahyba, either are, or show themselves, to be ramifications or dependencies of the Cordillera of the Espinhaço. The boundary mountains of the west and of the south belong to the eastern mountain range: those which form the boundaries to the north shall be more opportunely considered in the study of the province of Minas Geraes.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

There is only one river, which predominates, and whose basin has already been studied in the proper chapter of the first part, it is the Parahyba.

Besides that and its confluents, equally mentioned there, are others which are numerous, but of little volume, that irrigate the province. Those which discharge themselves into the ocean are the *Macahé* after 45 miles course and affording less than 30 of navigation on a very small scale; it receives the *S. Pedro* and has its mouth at the bar of the same name; that of *S. João* is enlarged by the *Curubichaes* and *Bananal*, on the left, and by the *Bacachá* and *Capivary* on the right and by the *Ipuca* the *Lontra*, and the *Dourado*, all three navigable by moderate sized barks; it disembogues about 20 miles to the south-west of Macahé;

the *Guandú* formed by the *S. Anna* and the Lages, goes through the estate of Santa Cruz, and discharges itself through two mouths, opposite to the *Marambaia*; the *Mambucaba*, son of the *Bocaina* discharges itself pompously opposite to the bar of *Cayrussú*. Also into the Ocean, but precisely in the majestic bay of Rio de Janeiro, many rivers of small volume of water but commercially important, come and precipitate themselves; the most conspicuous among others is the *Irajá* with a short extent of navigation and with a tide up to the port of its name; less than a mile to the north of this is the *Mirity*, the first belonging to, and the second being a boundary of the Municipality of the Court; three miles beyond is the *Sarapuhy*; a mile further the *Iguassú* which brings with it the *Iguaré*, and the *Maraby*, also of small account as to navigation; almost two miles afterwards is met the *Inhomirim*, which offers six miles of navigation for small craft; the *Suruhy* and the *Iriry*, the *Mage-assú* and the *Guapy-mirim* follow; two miles to the south, the *Macacú*, the largest of all disembogues, and is navigable for barks for nearly 50 miles, and swells by more than ten tributaries of paltry aid, except the *Guapy-assú*, which is but little inferior to it, and the *Casserebú*, which almost equals this: they all proceed from the serra *dos Orgãos* or from the waters from their slopes and united lower down.

The wise observations of Senhor Agassiz on the ancient dominion of the *Amazonas* overflowing the immense territory (through which it runs) from Cape S. Roque to its majestic mouths, may perhaps have an absolutely opposite application from that Cape to the south; for from thence the lakes of salt-water multiply themselves, or a little distant from the sea, and in the province of Rio de Janeiro these follow one after the other, principally from the municipality of Nicterohy opposite Cape Frio, at a few metres, or at a short distance from the Ocean, and receiv-

ing the tribute of small rivers which fill them so as to oblige them to be emptied by opening ephemeral canals to the sea, which in a few days, and at times hours shuts them by dikes of sand, which its waves throw up and amass. Not less wise than the illustrious Agassiz, the venerated Brazilian, now some years dead, Candido Baptista d'Oliveira, taught that those lakes had been inlets and bays, lost by the Atlantic which had drawn back its bounds, as in another place has already been explained.

Apart from this scientific question it is our duty to consider what is in fact observed.

A series of lagoons, some united, as are the three of Maricá, others separated but in close neighbourhood, extends, as already said, from Nicterohy to Cape Frio, and to a greater separating distance as far as Campos. The opening of the channels to empty those which do not communicate with the sea is official, and as a municipal festival, which has its rules: easiest of man's works, a simple trench is cut in the sand, of a metre or even less in width, which the waters of the flood extend twenty times and more, precipitating themselves with impetus into the ocean: the lake opened empties itself, and the care of closing the channel is left to the sea; while awaiting the completion of the dike fishing is prohibited, and the lake receives an extraordinary supply of fish, which soon nourishes an extensive industrial trade among the poorer population, and they carry abundance home with them; the most prized of the fish supplies the tables of the rich; the advantages of the exploration of these natural riches are immense and open to all without any onus whatever. The markets of the capital of the Empire, and those of the municipality and the population situated at a small distance from the lakes, are lavishly supplied with the produce of this occupation of fishing, which only demands from those who follow it, the employment of some hours in the occupation of realizing a haul that is always certain to be obtained.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* There was, and perhaps, there still is to be met gold in places on the borders of the boundary of this province with Minas Geraes, and in others: there is iron, and there are gigantic hills of one single piece of granite, fine marbles in Campos, a variety of clays for fine earthenware and porcelain.

*Vegetable kingdom.* From the great progress of agriculture a great part of the forests have disappeared: but even so, excellent timber for building purposes abounds, trees for dyeing, others for medicinal purposes, as also shrubs for the same of equal worth: sarsaparilla, ipecacuanha, vanilla, although of inferior quality &c. The species of esteemed exotic fruit trees, and the indigenous, from other provinces of Brazil, which together with those of the soil itself are cultivated in Rio de Janeiro.

*Animal kingdom.* The riches of this cannot now be fully appreciated: there are still to be met, but are becoming scarce, herds of wild pigs; ounces are still more rarely to be met with, and the same may be said of the tapirs &c., and unfortunately the best game is sensibly diminishing; among the best birds are the jacutinga, jacú, macuco &c.; deprived of their secular forests, they retreat to those which still remain to them in the serras, and only come down from them in the winter months, to the woods of the low lands; and that multitude of quadrupeds and of the feathered tribe go on withdrawing from the face of man—who advancing, takes possession of and explores the land; like as the rude patriarchal customs, and the ancient popular usages and festivals have already retreated and taken themselves more and more into the interior, troubled by the contrast and dazzled by the splendour of civilization.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The sugar cane, and cereals were already the source of riches of the first of industries:—Agriculture, in the captaincy of Rio de Janeiro, founded by Mem de Sá, when in the vice-royalty of the Marquis de Lavradio, in the second half of the 18th century, four or six plants of the coffee bush were by invitation or order of that clear sighted statesman cultivated in a private garden, in the neighbourhood of the Ajuda Convent of the city which was to be the future capital of the Empire; here is, barely a century since, in four or six plants the origin of an open mine of extraordinary treasure. The coffee bushes multiplied: they did not despise the good lands of the bottoms of the mountains; but seeking in the serra and beyond it a much more propitious soil, it went on gaining immense forests which were sacrificed to it by being cut down and burnt, extended itself rapidly for the space of many tens of miles, was transplanted to Minas Geraes, S. Paulo, and to some of the provinces of the north, and seized the sceptre of the agricultural produce of the Empire, and long since, entered the markets of Europe and of the United States of America, as the gold of Brazil. Coffee therefore represents the principal source of the agricultural riches of the province of Rio de Janeiro; but in the north and in the south, and in general in the eastern part of the fluminense territory sugar cane maintained its importance, and in progressive development occupied a distinguished second place among the products of agriculture and the exports of the province.

After the coffee and the sugar cane, the cotton plant is advantageously explored by agricultural industry, and the tea plant which was transplanted from China, and grows perfectly in Rio de Janeiro, and the potato, called English, which rivals that of Europe. The culture of tobacco is not wanting, although it is much smaller. The cereals

abound every where in the province, and below the serra the mandioc plant is extensively cultivated, it being the special object of cultivation of many important estates, and of many rural establishments of less pretensions.

Horticulture has increased from an easily explained cause, and is far from being observed in an equal degree in the other provinces of the Empire: besides the good taste, and the love of luxury and show of rich proprietors of beautiful and magnificent *Chacaras* (country houses with *gardens*) of the suburbs of the great capital of Brazil, the market consumes daily all the fruit, vegetables, garden stuff and flowers which the other near neighbouring places and municipalities of the province send to it, receiving especially from *Petropolis* and *Theresopolis* the most precious fruit and the most delicate flowers of Europe, which animates, develops and perfects horticulture.

The industry properly so called, may appear paltry in the province; for the capital of the Empire, so near, opulent, and proud, eclipses it. — Nevertheless the cotton cloth manufactory of S. Aleixo, that of chemical products in Nova Friburgo, of tea in Theresopolis &c., of cigars, and cigarettes, of hats, of paper for hangings, of salting fish in cape Frio &c., of fresh butter and cheese (in small quantities), of candied dried fruits, and preserved in sirop —all of the country— contribute not a little to the riches of the province.

Relative to industry, the useful and considerable establishment of fish ponds and the breeding of fish was not forgotten, but left for distinguished mention; these are situated in three small islands of the bay of Rio de Janeiro, and very near to the coast of the province and of the municipality of its capital, were bounded, developed and explored by Senator Silveira da Motta (the happy father of the illustrious Arthur Silveira da Motta, commander of the Iron-clad, wich in the glorious van-first forced, *primus*

*inter pares*, the passage of Humaitá). In those fish pens, there are more than 14,000 fish, all exceptionally of the most prized species, and which number increases always in the existing, and new tanks, without the demand and consumption which increase progressively being able to impoverish it.

The commerce of Rio de Janeiro is very considerable; but for both its importation, as also for its exportation to foreign countries, it is dependent on the capital of the Empire.

Its commercial centres, some of its exporting ports and towns have suffered and are suffering an undoubted decline from the influence of the railways, which besides create other centres, causing new and well supported villages to rise up and finally making compensation for those local declines by the good they do and by the general progress.

Besides the Dom Pedro II. railway which traverses the Serra do Mar, commands a great part of the valley of the Parahyba, and goes on advancing to Minas Geraes leaving in the province of Rio de Janeiro notable branches, this province has the little railroad of Mauá, which was, in Brazil, the modest precursor of that extraordinary element of progress and of civilization of the 19th century and the railroad which from the port of Villa Nova extends to the village of Cachoeira which lies almost like a foot stool to the Serra of Friburgo; but this line is being hotly pushed on and is mounting the serra, now almost overcome, and is advancing on Cantagallo, upon its reaching which it will have no right to stop; at the same time another company has extended its rails, and in March or April 1873 it will send its locomotives from Nicterohy to *Villa Nova*, and confounded or united there with the Cantagallo railway, it will prolong on a detached road through the municipalities of *Itaborahy*, *Rio Bonito*,

*Capivary*, and sundry others as far as Macahé, or beyond Macahé to *Campos*. Another company still is hastening matters to construct a railroad between those two cities which prognosticates a near future union of the two enterprizes. Projected railroads are announced from *Campos* to S. Sebastião, between *Nicterohy* and *Maricá*, another from Magé to *Theresopolis*, and sacrificing this one barely projected, as also the existence of that of Mauá, a branch of the Dom Pedro II. is being planned which by the serra already in subjection, may run as far as *Theresopolis*, and from *Theresopolis* will terminate in the heart of *Petropolis*.

All this feverish aspiration, and requirement of railroads, that all the different municipalities of the province manifest, and that legitimate speculation of the lucrative employ of capital seeks, show on one hand, the confidence that the rich and varied agricultural produce of the province inspires, and on the other, insure to it an increasing prosperity and a majestic future.

The agriculture, the industry, the commerce of the province of Rio de Janeiro already give it the first rank among its sister provinces of the Empire, and new horizons open, and continue to open in which her riches may be multiplied, and her splendour.

There is wanting to the capital of the province and to the whole of the latter (an exception being made to the city of Campos) banks of large capital, and economical institutions, which in the other principal provinces are met with; but the explanation of that fact is owing to the neighbourhood of the great city, where those institutions of credit abound, and which besides being the political and administrative capital of the whole Empire, is the economical and commercial capital of Rio de Janeiro.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 1,100,000 of whom 800,000 free and 300,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 6 senators, 9 deputies of the general assembly, and 45 of the provincial, the province being divided into 3 electoral districts, with a total of 1649 electors and 77,532 citizens qualified to vote.

The number of senators figures disproportionately here; because for their election, the electoral body both of the province and of that of the municipality of the court, which forms a distinct electoral district, contribute to it.

*Public force. National guard:* with 19 superior commands, 39 battalions and 5 sections of battalion of infantry, 11 squadrons and 12 corps of cavalry, and 1 section of battalion of artillery on active service, and 14 battalions and 17 sections of battalion of infantry in reserve, presenting 39,114 national guards in active service and 17,650 in reserve; total 56764.

*Police corps:* 503 men (effective state).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Primary public:* 162 schools for males, with 5523 scholars, and 12 for females with 2577 scholars. *Private primary:* 62 for males with 1263 scholars, and 39 for females with 913 scholars. *Secondary public:* 4 establishments with 36 male scholars, and 22 female. *Secondary private:* 8 establishments for males with 398 scholars, and for females with 148 scholars.

This statistic which is always that which accompanies the report of 1872 of the Ministry of the Empire, is already in this point not a little deficient. The number of the public schools of primary instruction amounted to more than 300, and that of the private increases naturally with the impulse of the liberty of teaching. It is fit it should be known that in the cities and towns, primary instruction is obligatory.

The secondary instruction of the province (counting the public instruction in the *normal school* which has 4 professors) is not commensurate with the progress of the primary: that however may be explained by the easy communication with the capital of the Empire, where besides the Imperial College of Dom Pedro II. there are many private boarding schools, colleges, which afford a complete course of the humanities, and the ablest of professors.

In concluding this article of statistics, it is gratifying to remark that in the province a commencement has been made towards establishing, through private associations, popular libraries: the city of *Vassouras* in particular distinguishing itself in this very patriotic undertaking.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Rio de Janeiro is divided and sub-divided into districts, municipalities and parishes, as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Nicterohy (city a. cap.) | 1. S. João Baptista de Icarahy.<br>2. S. Lourenço.<br>3. S. Sebastião de Itaipú.<br>4. S. Gonçalo de Guaxindiba.<br>5. N. S. da Conceição de Jurujuba.<br>6. N. S. da Conceição de Cordeiros. |
| 2. Itaborahy | 1. Itaborahy (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista.<br>2. N. S. do Desterro de Itamby.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição do Porto das Caixas. |
| | 2. Maricá (t.) | 1. N. S. do Amparo. |
| 3. Magé | 1. Magé (c.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade.<br>2. S. Nicolao de Suruhy.<br>3. N. S. d' Ajuda de Guapymirim.<br>4. N. S. da Conceição d'Apparecida.<br>5. S. Antonio de Paquequer. |
| | 2. Sant'Anna de Macacú (t.) | 1. S. Antonio de Sá de Macacú.<br>2. S. José da Boa Morte.<br>3. Sant' Anna de Macacú. |
| | 3. Estrella (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade de Inhomerim.<br>2. N. S. do Pilar.<br>3. N. S. da Gloria de Pacopahyba. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 4. Petropolis | 1. Petropolis (c.) | 1. S. Pedro d'Alcantara de Petropolis. |
| | 2. Parahyba do Sul (t.) | 1. S. Pedro e S. Paulo.<br>2. S. Antonio da Encruzilhada.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição da Bemposta.<br>4. Sant' Anna de Cebollas.<br>5. S. José do Rio Preto. |
| 5. Vassouras | 1. Vassouras (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Vassouras.<br>2. S. Cruz dos Mendes.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição do Paty do Alferes.<br>4. Sacra Familia do Tinguá.<br>5. S. Sebastião dos Ferreiros. |
| | 2. Valença (c.) | 1. N. S. da Gloria.<br>2. S. Theresa.<br>3. S. Antonio do Rio Bonito.<br>4. N. S. da Piedade das Ipiábas.<br>5. S. Izabel do Rio Preto. |
| 6. Pirahy | 1. Pirahy (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna.<br>2. S. João Baptista do Arrozal.<br>3. N. S. das Dôres.<br>4. S. José do Turvo. |
| | 2. Rio Claro (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade.<br>2. S. Antonio de Capivary. |
| 7. Rezende | 1. Rezende (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição.<br>2. S. José do Campo Bello.<br>3. Bom Jesus do Ribeirão de Sant' Anna.<br>4. S. Antonio da Vargem Grande.<br>5. S. Vicente Ferrer. |
| | 2. Barra Mansa (c.) | 1. S. Sebastião.<br>2. Espirito Santo.<br>3. N. S. do Rosario dos Quatis.<br>4. N. S. do Amparo.<br>5. Patriarcha S. Joaquim. |
| 8. Iguassú | 1. Iguassú (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade.<br>2. N. S. da Conceiçao de Marapicú.<br>3. S. Antonio de Jacotinga.<br>4. S. João de Merity.<br>5. Sant' Anna de Palmeiras. |
| | 2. Itaguahy (t.) | 1. S. Francisco Xavier.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição do Bananal.<br>3. S. Pedro e S. Paulo do Ribeirão das Lages. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 9. S. João do Principe | 1. S. João do Principe (t.) | 1. S. João Marcos.<br>2. S. José da Cacaria.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição de Passa Tres. |
| | 2. Mangaratiba (t.) | 1. N. S. da Guia de Mangaratiba.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição de Jacarahy.<br>3. S. Anna de Itacuruçá. |
| 10. Angra dos Reis | 1. Angra dos Reis (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição.<br>2. SS. Trindade de Jacúecanga.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição do Ribeiro.<br>4. Sant' Anna da Ilha Grande.<br>5. N. S. do Rosario de Mambucaba. |
| | 2. Paraty (c.) | 1. N. S. dos Remedios.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição do Paratymirim. |
| 11. Campos | 1. Campos (c.) | 1. S. Antonio dos Guarulhos.<br>2. S. Sebastião.<br>3. S. Gonçalo.<br>4. S. Rita da Lagôa de Cima.<br>5. Natividade de Carangolla.<br>6. N. S. das Dôres de Macabú.<br>7. N. S. da Penha do Morro do Côco.<br>8. N. S. da Piedade da Lage.<br>9. S. Salvador.<br>10. Bom Jesus de Itabapoana. |
| | 2. S. João da Barra (c.) | 1. S. João Baptista.<br>2. S. Francisco de Paula da Barra Secca.<br>3. S. Sebastião de Itapaboana. |
| 12. S. Fidelis | 1. S. Fidelis (t.) | 1. S. Fidelis.<br>2. S. José de Leonissa.<br>3. S. Antonio de Padua.<br>4. N. S. da Conceição da Ponte Nova.<br>5. Bom Jesus do Monte Verde. |
| 13. Cantagallo | 1. Cantagallo (c.) | 1. SS. Sacramento.<br>2. N. S. do Carmo.<br>3. S. Rita do Rio Negro.<br>4. N. S. da Conceição das Duas Barras. |
| | 2. S. Maria Magdalena (t.) | 1. S. Francisco de Paula.<br>2. S. Maria Magdalena.<br>3. S. Sebastião do Alto. |
| 14. Cabo Frio | 1. Cabo Frio (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção.<br>2. S. Pedro d'Aldêa. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 14. Cabo Frio | 2. Macahé (c.) | 1. S. João Baptista. |
| | | 2. S. José do Barreto. |
| | | 3. N. S. das Neves. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição de Macahé. |
| | | 5. N. S. da Conceição de Carapebús. |
| | | 6. N. S. do Desterro de Quissamam. |
| | 3. S. João da Barra (t.) | 1. Sacra Familia do Rio S. João. |
| 15. Rio Bonito | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Rio Bonito (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição. |
| | | 2. N.S. da Conceição da Boa Esperança |
| | 2. Capivary (t.) | 1. N. S. da Lapa. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição de Gaviões. |
| | | 3. N. S. do Amparo de Correntezas. |
| 16. Nova Friburgo | 1. Nova Friburgo (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista. |
| | | 2. S. José do Ribeirão. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição do Ribeirão. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição do Paquequer. |
| 17. Araruama | 1. Araruama (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião de Araruama. |
| | | 2. S. Vicente de Paula. |
| | 2. Saquarema (t) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

Nicterohy, the city and capital of the province formerly *Town of the Praia Grande*, is situated on the eastern bank of the bay of same name or that of Rio de Janeiro, and opposite the opulent capital of the Empire, with which is keeps up a continual communication by canoes, boats &c. and by two lines of steamers. It is composed of two suburbs, between which custom alone makes a distiction. S. Domingos richer in elegant houses, country seats and gardens, is the most preferred by the families of the opposite city, who during the hot months frequent it for the sea bathing it affords; even if it were deficient in all else, the surprising beauty of the beach of Icarahy with its romantic Itapuca, one of the most enchanting situations which can charm the eyes of man; *Praia Grande*, the commercial suburb, and *São Lorenço*, a distinguished parish, and as it were out of the city, which calls to mind the

intrepid Indian Martim Affonso Arorigboya. Nicterohy and particularly Praia Grande have broad and perfectly straight streets. The most remarkable buildings are the *Asylum of S. Leopoldina*, the hospital which rises to view on a hill facing the sea, the parish church of S. João Baptista, and the station of the street railway company in Barreto: the great foundery and naval establishment of Ponte d'Area, now fallen into complete decay, can scarcely be mentioned. *Campos*, the most commercial and opulent city of all the province situated on the banks of the Parahyba, is flourishing and proud of her churches, her press and her economical institutions, of her theatre, and of the superb houses of her wealthy proprietors, has sway over the lower Parahyba, and already possessing the electric telegraph awaits the railroad, which will unite her, by the interior, to Nicterohy, which holds a higher rank in an administrative point of view, but is inferior to her in riches and prosperity.

*Petropolis*, a city both rural and aristocratic, a city of German colonists, who have four schools for their children, who have their religion and their pastors, their vegetable and flower gardens, their cattle pens, their Germanic customs, their industrial occupations, and their commerce, their entertainments and national balls, and city with the Emperor's palace; with magnificent private houses, and the yearly influx of the higher classes, that is of the rich families of the capital, who go there to forget the hot months; Petropolis finally, which besides the excellent road wich winds gently down the serra to meet the Mauá railroad, has the *União e Industrial* road, a normal carriage road, with great and costly works of art, with a magnificence of finish which rivals the best in Europe, and which extending to Minas Geraes, finds itself nevertheless lowered in estimation by the undisputed conquest of the iron road of Pedro II., which takes the produce of the most fertile

and important centres. *Theresopolis* still more healthy than *Petropolis*, is at a less distance from the capital of the Empire, but up to the present deprived of the means of easy and rapid communication, it is rising and hails the auspicious future, which ensures the best of climates, and *Nova Friburgo*, town, and that the *Cantagallo* railway is about in a few months to connect with Nicterohy, and which has long since been the shelter of a great number of sick people and to which they have resource for its most pure air, in regaining their health and strengthening their bodies. All three, *Petropolis*, city, *Novo Friburgo*, town and *Theresopolis*, village, which is rising full of life, have their seat on the picturesque heights of the Serra dos Orgãos (Organ mountains). The cities of *Angra dos Reis* and of *Paraty*, on the magnificent bay of the former name, are conspicuous from their commerce and the considerable production of their coffee, sugar, rum &c. *Cantagallo*, *Vassouras*, *Valença*, *Barra*, *Mansa*, *Rezende* are other cities which owe to coffee their flourishing state and the importance of which is sustained and wealth augmented by the *Parahyba*, the Dom Pedro II. railway, and its branches. *Magé*, another city in a pleasant situation, and at less than 3 miles distance from the sea, which forms the bay of Rio de Janeiro, is on the bank of the river of its name, and near to the Organ mountains; it commands a rich municipality; but feels the decay of its commerce. *Cabo Frio*, the most ancient of the province, has advanced but little; it however exports coffee, sugar &c., and quantities of salted fish. *Macahé*, a small distance further prospers on account of its enlarged commerce, which has the advantage of a favourable port, and its agricultural industry which avails itself of the fertility of the soil of its municipality and of its neighbouring places; the railway which will connect it with the city of Campos will further increase its importance. Finally *S. João da Barra*

at the mouth of the *Parahyba* is making considerable commercial progress, which it greatly owes to its fortunate position; it is one of the principal exporting ports of sugar, would attain the name of the queen of the Parahyba, if it could snatch from *Campos* the well merited sceptre.

Besides these 14 cities, some towns distinguish themselves, equalling and even exceeding in importance some of the former, naming them, however, would much extend this work.

*Nova Friburgo*, which is merely an elegant and nice town, and *Theresopolis*, which it not one, were exceptionally contemplated on account of unsurpassable excellence of their climate.

# CHAPTER XIV.

## MUNICIPALITY OF THE COURT.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The city of S. Sebastião of Rio de Janeiro, was as already said, the capital of the Empire, and at the same time of the province of Rio de Janeiro, which had not like the others, either government, or provincial council, being administered by the superior authority of the minister of the Empire; but in 1834, and in conformity with the disposition of article 1st of the Additional Act, it had to be separated from the province to whose bounds its municipality belongs, towards which it preserved that high and supreme political gradation, receiving still in conformity with the said Additional Act, the name of *Municipality of the Court*, which is generally altered into *Neutral Municipality*.

In the Municipality of the Court is the seat of the general government; in it resides the Emperor, the general legislative assembly meets therein, the ministers of State, as well as all the tribunals, and superior and general institutions of the Empire perform their functions; the foreign ministers and diplomats also represent their governments there. The municipal administration, as has already been said in the general study, belongs to the senate of the competent chamber, which bears the title of the *most illustrious*, and also to the general government, through the ministry of the Empire.

These very short explanations have most certainly little of the characteristic of a historical sketch of the capital city of the Empire, and of its municipality; this work is, however, wanting here, because it is already comprised in the study of Rio de Janeiro.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The astronomical position of the Municipality of the Court, is between 22° 43′ of south latitude and 23° 6′; and between 4′ of east, and 35′ west longitude.

Its greatest extent from north to south—the islands belonging to it not entering into this calculation—is 8 leagues, measuring from the right bank of the river *Merity*, as far as the *Pedra do Relogio*, and from east to west, 12 leagues from the point Calabouço, to the left bank of the river *Guandú*: its coast is near upon 30 leagues, counting that also of its principal islands.

## BOUNDARIES.

The Municipality of the Court is bounded on the north by that of Iguassú, by the river *Guandú mirim*, and *Mirity*. On the south by the Atlantic; on the east by the same Atlantic, in the bay which separates it from the city of Nicterohy, &c.; on the west by the municipality of *Itaguahy*, by the river *Guandú*.

Sundry islands of the bay of Nicterohy, or of Rio de Janeiro belong to its municipal circumscription, the principal are those of *Governador*, and of *Paquetá*, which are parishes, and have an active population.

## CLIMATE.

The climate is variable; in the low lands of the city and neighbouring, and more distant suburban parishes, it is damp and as cold in the winter, as it is surpassingly hot in the capital from December until March; but in the capital

itself, on the Santa Thereza, and Paula Mattos hills, and following up the same serra as far as *Tijuca*, which is 2 leagues distant from the city, and beyond *Tijuca* in the continuation of the same chain of mountains, the climate is cool, pleasant and salubrious rivalling that of the best situations; the purest of air, abundant and excellent water, such as no city in Europe possesses, render these mountains a treasure and inappreciably enchanting. The ancient *Sebastianopolis* was, in its lower quarter, very damp; but, besides other works, that of the laying down the pipes by the gas company, and the drains by the drainage company have in a great measure caused the disappearance of that bad state. In comparison with other capitals, and great cities of the civilized world, that of Rio de Janeiro is notably in more favourable circumstances, and the foreigners who dwell in it, as in every other place, are more subject naturally to epidemics, which sometimes make their appearance; and the greater number of the deaths, therefrom, arise out of a want of hygienic precautions, and from their not knowing how to seek for, under these circumstances, which are otherwise exceptional, better dwellings, which are easy to be found, or take precautions which they are accustomed to despise, and which the nature of the country calls for.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface is low near the sea; but spurs and isolated mounds detach themselves from the general mountain range which, after nearly touching the beach of Rio de Janeiro city, proudly extends itself in its curve.

## OROGRAPHY.

The municipality of the capital receives a notable branch of the eastern cordillera, to which belong the serras of *Bangú*, and of *Jacarépaguá* which lie on the south of it;

immediately after it is that of *Tijuca* which prolongs itself into a curve, and separates the suburbs of Laranjeiras and Catette, which are on the sea side, from those of *Andarahy*, *Engenho Velho*, *Rio Comprido*, &c., which extend on the opposite side, and terminate in the middle of the city, under the name of the *Thereza* hill; but besides this, several hills are to be seen rising up in divers parts of the capital, such as S. Antonio barely separated from the *Castle* hill which is on the border of the sea, and which seem true spurs from that serra, as also the *Gloria* hill, likewise on the border of the sea, and others which continue on to *Botafogo* in the southern part of the capital: on this same side Tijuca develops itself in great height, and goes beyond the *Corcovado* and the *Gavia* and erects itself in the *Sugar loaf*, at the entrance of the bar of Rio de Janeiro, forming with these and other mountains of granite, the famous so-called *Giant of Stone (gigante de pedra)*; on the northern side of the city, other isolated hills, such as the *S. Bento*, *Conceição*, *Livramento*, &c. are dependencies of that same serra, advancing, however, in another direction; both these last as well as those of the *Castle*, *S. Antonia*, *Gloria*, &c. are populated, principally the last, which is covered with houses, and garden grounds; but those of *Santa Thereza* and *Paula Mattos*, and especially the former is traversed by innumerable streets which intertwine and rise on the back of the mountain and down each of its slopes, and form a kind of labyrinth of great and small country seats of numerous houses in a continuous row, well supplied with excellent water from the aqueduct of the *Carioca*, and favoured with easy and broad roads for its ascent, on which carriages travel, and they are now about to lay the rails for as treet railway.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

No river of note whatever runs through the Municipality of the Court; the *Guandú* the *Cabussú* to the south, and

*Irajá* and *Mirity* which run into the bay of Rio de Janeiro, are scarcely to be mentioned.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*The mineral kingdom.* All was said of it that could be said in the general study to be met with in the *first part;* it may be useful to remember the abundance of springs of mineral waters (ferreous), some of which are to be found in the centre of the capital itself, and others in its neighbouring and healthy suburbs.

*The vegetable kingdom.* In some of the parishes *out of the city*, there are still to be seen rich woods and forests of precious timber for building purposes: in the neighbourhood of the capital, naturally, the wants of the people increasing greatly, and the places where population is being rapidly developed, take from the woods the space which they require, and which cannot be disputed with them. Nevertheless, since a few years back, the Government looks after, as it ought, and for the public good—the woods that belong to the State in the Serra da Tijuca, and around the springs of the water called *Carioca*, and in the neighbouring site of the *Paineiras* in the same serra, established an extensive plantation and cultivate with solicitude—trees for building purposes, or as is commonly said *madeiras de lei* (lawful wood)—which already merits a curious, prolonged, and pleasant attention, and that promises to the capital of the Empire, a rich, complete and admirable forest.

*The animal kingdom.* Its remnants disbanded and put to flight, are barely to be found in the woods which are more distant from the capital: the hunters from the city only now find *rabbits*, *armadillos*, and some other quadrupeds less prized, in its vicinity: amateur naturalists and collectors abound on the Serra da Tijuca, making a number of collections of insects, and principally of butterflies.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

Sugar and rum, products of the agricultural industry of the sugar cane, cereals, and mandioc farina, represent the farming of the parishes called *country*, in which is also extensive the cultivation, and important the exploration of fruit trees, the market receiving a great abundance of grapes, pines, melons, water melons, saputis, abios, oranges, sweet limes and lemons, &c.: round and even in the capital, the vegetables, all garden stuffs and flowers give relatively considerable profit to their cultivators, of which the greater number are immigrants and colonists, chiefly Portuguese islanders, and from the continent of that kingdom, of whom many work for monthly hire, and not a few on their own account: it is still these who in greater numbers are employed in the cultivation of grass for cutting, generally called planted grass, the chief sustenance of stabled animals, who consume an extraordinary quantity of it, and it gives great profit for the labour bestowed, that grass moreover being a native of many parts of the province.

Finally there is no agricultural experiment or undertaking which fails to return a profit to the prudent and skilful explorator.

In reference to the industry of the capital of the Empire, it naturally distances that of all the provinces and is a long way in advance. To spare unnecessary repetition, it is sufficient to say, that the nascent and already animated development of the general industry of the Empire, which was treated of in the *tenth Chapter of the first part*, is subdivided in the statement of the industrial progress of the sundry provinces; but represented in its almost totality in the respective statement of the city of Rio de Janeiro, which still boasts, manufacturies and industrial establishments, which in all the others unfortunately fail. Certain industries naturally peculiar to one or to the other pro-

vince only as an exception, escape from the influence of its commerce. In the universal exhibitions of London and Paris, justice was done to the produce of industry of the capital of the Empire of Brazil.

As to the commerce and grandeur, it is imperative on us here, to give as close and abridged a notice of it as possible: the city of Rio de Janeiro is the first commercial city in Brazil, and in South America, and enters in the number of the most considerable of the world.

The seat of the capital of the Empire in this city gives it, assuredly—political supremacy, sumptuosity, luxury and a splendour appropriate to a court; but should this be wanting, or hereafter fail the rich *Sebastianopolis,* that condition dependent on the will of men would superabound, and do exceed the conditions of the commercial emporium, which the supreme will of God gave it in its fortunate geographical position, and in its immense, placid, poetical and majestic bay, which combines with all its beauties, and all its imaginable charms, all positive advantages that to the greatest extent, and with the most exacting caprice, can be desired, in its bay, or splendid gulf, finally intermediary bay, refreshing and protecting vessels which have made the longest voyages, abounding in every resource, the centre of the extraordinary commerce with the interior, and of communications with all the nations of the world.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 235,381 inhabitants of which 185,289 are free and 50,092 are slaves.

This official information taken from the last statistic presented by the Government is much below the reality: previous census raised the population to a higher figure: that of 1849 gave 266,000 inhabitants: in 1859 the senator Pompeio de Souza Brazil reckoned at 300,000 the inhabitants of the Municipality of the Court: from that date to

1872, the population has considerably increased. The official returns are even now confessedly incorrect, and fresh statistics which are being organized by the Government will demonstrate this fact. It will shortly be made evident that the population of the capital of the Empire, and of the respective municipality far exceeds 300,000 inhabitants.

*National representation:* 6 senators for the province of Rio de Janeiro: three deputies of the general assembly, elected by their district, which presents 359 electors, and 12,717 citizens, qualified as voters.

*Public force: national guard*, with one superior command, 8 battalions of infantry, one of artillery, 1 corps of cavalry on active service, and 3 battalions of reserve, representing 5161 national guards on active service, and 2440 of reserve; and a total of 7601.

*Police force:* consists of a military corps of police which ought to consist of 560 men divided among 6 companies, and a city guard with an equal number of men. The military police corps is not in its efficient state, as 73 men are wanting thereto.

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary*: 38 schools for males, with 2856 pupils, and 34 for females with 2459 pupils. *Private primary:* 22 schools for males with 3900 pupils, and 30 for females with 2219 pupils. *Public secondary instruction:* 1 establishment for males with 351 pupils. *Private secondary:* 35 establishments for males with 2169 pupils, and 25 for females with 715 pupils.

Since this statistic there have already been created some more public schools for primary instruction, and by the assistance of the Government, and by the initiative taken by associations, night schools are being established for both children, and adults.

Amongst the private schools for both sexes are to be included those founded by the ancient and patriotic *Sociedade Amante da Instrucção*, in which a great number of poor boys and girls receive gratuitous instruction.

The public establishment for secondary instruction of which the statistics speak is the imperial college of Dom Pedro II., divided into boarding and day school, with a complete course of study, which occupies 7 years, having the privilege to confer a bachelor's degree.

The primary and secondary instruction of the Municipality of the Court is under the control of the minister of the Empire, under whom it is directed by an inspector general who presides at and hears the high council of public instruction, of which are members, the rectors of the boarding and day school of the imperial college of Pedro II. Besides four others appointed by the minister of the Empire, and whose services are although gratuitous, prove of great value.

The statistic of secondary instruction does not include the courses of preparatory matters attached to the military, central, and naval schools, this latter being for boarders, and day scholars.

Neither is it in the province of the statistic presented to mention that in the capital of the Empire large sums have been expended, amounting to many hundreds of contos de reis in building elegant edifices studiously adapted for public schools, and that the Imperial Government does not spare honorary rewards given to citizens, wo in the capital or in the provinces cause to be built, or notably aid towards the building of good houses for schools.

In a point of view having reference to the Municipality of the Court, the instruction can only be considered in its primary and secondary degrees, and therefore it is only in the State of the capital of the Empire that the institutions of superior instructions should be mentioned, which are out of the pale of the constitutional right of the provinces, and of the municipalities, and exclusively entrusted to the supreme direction of the General Government.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The municipality of the capital contains the following parishes:

| Municipality. | Parishes. |
|---|---|
| Rio de Janeiro (city) | 1. Santissimo Sacramento.<br>2. São José.<br>3. N. Senhora da Candelaria.<br>4. Santa Rita.<br>5. Sant' Anna.<br>6. São Christovão.<br>7. S. Francisco Xavier do Engenho Velho.<br>8. Santo Antonio dos Pobres.<br>9. N. Senhora da Gloria.<br>10. S. João Baptista da Lagôa.<br>11. Espirito Santo.<br>12. N. Senhora do Desterro do Campo Grande.<br>13. N. S. do Loreto de Jacarépaguá.<br>14. S. Salvador de Guaratiba.<br>15. N. S. da Apresentação de Irajá.<br>16. N. S. d'Ajuda da Ilha do Governador.<br>17. Bom Jesus do Monte de Paquetá.<br>18. S. Thiago de Inhaúma.<br>19. Curato de Santa Cruz. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*S. Sebastião of Rio de Janeiro*, or simply *Rio de Janeiro*, capital of the Empire of Brazil, a maritime city, seated on the western side of the magnificent bay of Nicterohy, or Rio de Janeiro, is the most populous, rich, commercial, industrial, and civilized of the whole Empire; it comprises in its municipality 18 parishes, and a curacy, that of *Santa Cruz;* they considered it divided into the old city, the new city, and parishes in *the country,* as belonging to its municipality; the old city that historically ought to end at the line of the street formerly called *da Valla*, which was still considered in the last century that of the *walls*, goes as far as the *Praça da Acclamação*, formerly called the *Campo*

*de Sant' Anna*, and is one of the most spacious in the world; the old city which is the commercial centre, suffers from the narrowness of its streets, of the curves and tortuous lines of some; but it is the one which boasts of the best and most superb edifices; the new city is almost entirely built in straight streets, but of humbler houses. Of the *country parishes*, the nearest have already lost the right to that name. Some one has said that the city of Rio de Janeiro requires new suburbs: truly those which were, and those which belong to the parishes of the *Gloria*, of *S. João Baptista da Lagôa*, as far as beyond *Botafogo*, of *Espirito Santo*, of *Engenho Velho*, of *S. Christovão*, even much beyond its square, which is more or less at three miles distance from the *Praça de Dom Pedro II.*, or former *Largo do Paço* bordering the sea, now form part of the city by a series of streets bordered by shops that sell by retail, and by modest dwellings, by houses with gardens, and by aristocratic "palacetes", which do not interrupt the continuity of the capital, and which still more confound themselves with the same by the incessant movement of a numerous population, and by the extraordinary facility of communication, owing to the plying to city street railway cars, which take their departure from the centre of the *old city* in every direction.

The great *Sebastianopolis*, the seat of the General Government and of the superior tribunal of justice, and of public administration which has already been mentioned —still boasts of the first and most considerable military and naval arsenals of the Empire; a notable dry dock constructed in the *Island das Cobras*, the *asylum for invalids*, in the island of *Bom Jesus*, military hospital on the Castle hill, the national *museum*, the custom-house whose works are not yet finished, already offer superb proportions; a house of correction which exhibits appreciable products (of industry) from its work-shops, where the condemned prisoners work, public and military archives, the mint, one of

the principal edifices of the city, botanical garden (where the imperial institute of agriculture, founded under the name of "Asylo Agricola", a theoretical and practical school of agriculture), a public garden, and many other important public institutions, under the immediate direction of the Government.

With reference to commerce, and economical establishments, besides the Bank of Brazil, Rural and Hypothecary, Commercial of Rio de Janeiro, National for deposits and discounts, Mauá & Co., *English Bank of Rio de Janeiro, limited*, *London and Brazilian*, *Caixa Economica e de Soccorros*, *Monte Pio dos Servidores do Estado*, the *Popular Fluminense*, and others; the Foreign and National economical institutions, and banking houses are numerous.

Among the establishments of charity is most conspicuous the creation of Father Anchieta, the ancient *Misericordia*, rich and venerable, with its hospital on the Santa Luzia beach, and its magnificent asylum of Pedro II. where the insane are zealously cared for and treated, and which is perhaps the finest edifice of the capital; the *Caixa de Soccorros de Pedro V.* (Portuguese and very considerable); the Lazar Hospital, those of the "Ordens terceiras of the Carmo", of S. Francisco de Paula, and of S. Francisco da Penitencia, that of the "Sociedade Portugueza de Beneficencia", *British Benevolent Fund*, Sociedade Hespanhola de Beneficencia, French of mutual succour, and sundry others. Giving an example of its advanced civilization, the capital of the Empire boasts of its superior instruction, and that it is applied to the academies of marine, to the military, to the imperial academy of the fine arts, to the schools of medicine, to the central (military and engineering), to the commercial institute, to the imperial college of Pedro II., and among numerous scientific and literary and artistic societies, to the imperial academy of medicine, to the historical and geographical institute of Brazil, to the

"Sociedade auxiliadora da Industria Nacional", the polytechnic, pharmaceutic, Imperial Fluminense de Agricultura, da ordem dos Advogados, dos Bachareis em Letras.

Commendatory mention should be made of the "Lyceo de Artes e Officios", and the institute of blind children, of that of the deaf and dumb. Literary societies abound, as also gymnastic and others. The national library frequented by day and night, does not cause the Gabinete Portuguez de Leitura, and Fluminense to be forgotten, besides the libraries of commerce which are more than twenty.

The national printing establishment is notable, which deserves to develop its resources, so that it may do away with the necessity of all foreign importation in what concerns its craft; besides the above there are nearly 50 private printing establishments, which are supplied in the capital, and besides the book, and small works which they give to the press, they publish about 70 periodicals and reviews, of which, if some are ephemeral, others immediately substitute them. Forgotten or laid aside other institutions and notable things, which recommend Rio de Janeiro, mention must be made of the excellent paving of its squares and principal streets, its wealth of excellent water, its nightly illumination by gas, its system of drainage, which, although not yet perfect, is already of extraordinary utility, and of very sensible cleanliness. Six convents and monasteries, a little less than thirty churches, and temples adorn it, of which, conspicuous for its architecture, is the church of Santa Cruz dos Militares, that of S. Francisco de Paula, and that of the Candelaria.

Among the most distinguished public edifices, are the Bank of Brazil the Mint, the Academy of the fine arts, the Palace at S. Christovão, without speaking of the Misericordia Hospital, and principally the Asylum of Pedro II., which has a right to more praise; the station of the Pedro II. railway is elegant; but it will not, perhaps, be in

keeping with the projects of the garden, and embellishment of the spacious square of the praça da Acclamação, where the building is seen.

Yet poor in monumental works, the capital can at least praise its Carioca aqueduct, its fine stone fountain of Pedro II. square; in the praça da Constituição, and in the midst of an agreeable and verdant garden is the statue of Dom Pedro I., and in S. Francisco de Paula square, the pedestrian statue of José Bonifacio, both of them erected exclusively by national gratitude, manifested in the voluntary subscription of the people.

---

# CHAPTER XV.

## PROVINCE OF S. PAULO.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The first knowledge, and that merely by sight, of this province, and even the names of some of its points, such as S. Sebastião, and S. Vicente, goes as far back as the year 1502, or rather the first expedition of an exploring nature, sent to Brazil by the king Dom Manuel; but it was only in 1532 that the two colonies of S. Vicente on the coast, and of Piratininga in the interior were founded by Martim Affonso de Souza, with which colonization was really initiated, by order of Dom Joãa III. in the land discovered by Cabral.

Like Caramurú in Bahia, of unhoped for assistance. Was João Ramalho and another shipwrecked Portuguese whom the Indians had there welcomed, to Martim Affonso in S. Vicente, and still more in Piratininga.

Herrera, and with him, Ayres Casal pretends, that since 1527 there had been a factory at S. Vicente for the *ransom* of Indians (*ransom* here means the traffic of Indians who were made slaves); still, however, upon such good authority, the fact was not investigated.

In the division of Brazil into captaincies, that of S. Vicente, with 100 leagues of coast fell to Martim Affonso, and that of *Santo Amaro*, immediately to the south, with 50 leagues of coast, to Pero Lopes de Souza, brother of

the former; it matters little to mention here, how and where the latter captaincy interpolated in the former a portion of ten leagues; the essential thing to know, is, that both extending themselves, from the bar of the river Macahé, as far as Lagunas, they gave a great part of their territory to the province of Rio de Janeiro, a good part to Santa Catharina, and embraced all that which formed the province of S. Paulo, and that of Paraná, which was but lately created one: such were the dimensions of the captaincies that with extraordinary hereditary, aristocratic, and senhorial privileges Dom João III. gave to some of his noble and notable vassals in 1534.

It was well that the distance, the want of capital, and of good choice of colonists, a thousand other material embarrassments, and the flux of Portuguese emigration to India, hindered that rooted system of feudalism, and the subdivision of Brazil into suzerainties, which in the hypothesis of prosperity and puissance would have made them in Portuguese America that which the feudal States were in Europe, considerably aggravated by the Atlantic Ocean separating the suzerain from the sovereign.

After 1549 the beneficent influence of the general government of Brazil made itself felt in the captaincy of S. Vicente, which as well as that of Santo Amaro, did not again see its donee, and was governed in early times by his and his heirs' delegates; the Jesuits at once penetrated into those lands; in 1553 they already had a college in S. Vicente; and in that year they commenced building between the river Tamandatey and the rivulet Inhamgabaú another, which was inaugurated on the 25th January 1554, called of S. Paulo, to the shades, protection, and predominancy of which the Indians were called: hence arose a bloody conflict with the colonists.

João Ramalho and the Portuguese of Piratininga, of Santo André, and of other spots of population which were

rising in the interior, had, adopting Brazil with all its conditions, taken Indian wives, some legitimate, others, the greater part, illegitimate, poor savages who could not know what the legitimacy of unions was: the population of the captaincy of *S. Vicente* grew relatively large, and in that population the cross breed of *mamelukes*, was fiery, energetic, ungovernable and audacious: such was the origin, the source from whence sprung the greatest part of those intrepid adventurers, called "sertanejos" (backwoodsmen) of S. Paulo, legendary in the history of Brazil, who pardoning them the first incentive of their cruel bands, at first persecuting, making war on the savages to make prisoners of them, and sell them in the market as slaves, which the Government permitted and authorized, and afterwards more worthily exploring golden treasures, and deposits of precious stones, internated, and as it were overran and made the round of the immense country, which is now an Empire, giving to kings, and without the aid of the kings of Portugal the conquests of Minas Geraes, of Matto Grosso, of Goyaz, of Piauhy, descending the great rivers of the interior, as far as their confluence with the Amazonas, contracting and finishing by victory the war of Palmares in Pernambuco, in which some governors of that captaincy had shewn themselves impotent.

In 1556 the disagreements of the *mamelukes* and the Portuguese colonists with the Jesuits of Pirataninga, arrived at the pitch of the first mentioned attacking the college of S. Paulo and the respective nascent population; the fathers did manage by aid of their Indians, to repel the aggressors; but for that reason the antagonism was aggravated.

In 1562 and 1563 the famous conspiracy of the Tamoyos, seriously threatened the Portuguese conquest of the captaincy of S. Vicente; after destroying not a few farms and agricultural establishments, these valiant savages at-

tacked the town of S. Paulo which owed its escape from being taken, chiefly to the Indian chief already baptized Martim Affonso Tebyreçá. The intervention of the Jesuits was exercised in good time, to put an end to that war, who induced the Tamoyos to make peace with the Portuguese, by means of delivering up to them the prisoners who had fallen into the power of the latter.

In the year 1640, the question of the Indians and the publication of the Bull of Paul III. in favour of the Indians of Perú, being made to have full vigour in Brazil through the influence of the Jesuits with Urban VIII., the colonists of Rio de Janeiro having mutinied, made the Paulistas take up arms, who expelled the Jesuits, who almost immediately were admitted in S. Vicente under conditions that annulled all the effects of the bull or of its publication, as far as it ought to have advantaged them; it was only much later, that even so, they were restored to their college of S. Paulo.

Aggrandized with an extraordinary amount of territory by the discoveries and conquests of the backwoodsmen, and although subaltern to Rio de Janeiro, carrying its jurisdiction (naturally very reluctantly suffered) not only to the south of Brazil, but also to Minas Geraes, and Matto Grosso, the captaincy of S. Vicente rose in 1709 to an independent captaincy, with the title of *S. Paulo*, embracing as a sister, under the same governor, the captaincy of Minas Geraes.

The denomination of S. Vicente, then lost by the captaincy, was merely historical: a quarter of a century after its foundation, S. Vicente, the first regular colony of Brazil, had already begun to fall off; the village, soon made a town, and the present city of Santos, its fortunate and much better situated neighbour, had taken the lead in importance, and naturally in predominancy of commerce. S. Vicente was already a town in 1709, as it still is, pre-

serves itself, and as respects its archæology, it is considered, and maintains itself in that grade.

The progress and increase of the population of Brazil went on reducing the immense captaincy of S. Paulo to its proper and much more limited proportions: in 1720 all the territory of *Minas* had a government apart: in 1748 and 1749 the captaincies of Goyaz, and of Cuyabá were created: in 1738, Santa Catharina had already been also raised to a captaincy subaltern to that of Rio de Janeiro, and even so, that of S. Paulo, which for those necessary and indispensable divisions and organizations of superior administration, ceased to be what it had been—the most extensive and vastest of all the captaincies of Brazil, continued to be counted among the first, from its spacious territory, from the energetic character of its population, and from the extremely fortunate conditions of its soil.

With the creation of the captaincies of Goyaz and Cuyabá, that of S. Paulo suffered a decline which was the consequence of the centralizing system: its capital since 1709 seated in the town of the same name, passed to Santos, whose governor was subject to Rio de Janeiro; in 1765, however, both the independent rank as well as the seat of its government in the said town of S. Paulo were restored with demonstrations of applause from the Paulists, and without injury to the centralizing power, which shewed itself stronger and more efficient than ever, under the vigorous policy and admirable science of that statesman, the Marquez de Pombal.

The captaincy of historical recollections, legendary, romantic, and rich in warlike traditions, terrible, poetical, surprising, at times sinister, at others sublime, the captaincy of S. Paulo, which could not dispute with that of Rio de Janeiro, the glory of the first placed in the magnificent patriotic movement of the Independence, had yet the supreme good fortune to hear raised on the bank of

its modest brook, but one eternally ennobled, the cry electrically and majestically national, the cry of Ipiranga, the cry of the nation—Independence or Death!

A province of the first order, among those of the Empire of Brazil, S. Paulo which was already the seat of a bishop since 1746, saw in its capital, created by law of 11th April 1827 a juridic course of study, from which it derives the proud satisfaction of having sent forth some notable statesmen for the Brazilian Empire.

Famous for its predominating liberal ideas, the province of S. Paulo had considerable influence in the feeling of opposition to the politics of the first reign, and in the direction of public in the first six years after the 7th April, through the important men who represented it in the legislative chambers, among whom is conspicuous Vergueiro, senator, member of the provisional regency, and afterwards minister, Costa Carvalho (later on Marquez de Monte Alegre), member of the permanent regency, the priest Feijó, a minister of glorious fame, and afterwards first regent of the Additional Act, Paula e Souza, the wise, the modest, a monument of science, virtue and abnegation, Antonio Carlos whose eloquence might be compared to a cataract, and his enthusiasm to a volcano, which still makes the popular tribunes and the parliamentary orators of the new generation despair of imitating, much less of competing with him; and Martim Francisco, the minister of finance from 1822 to 1823, a notable orator and a man of austere habits, and of immaculate honour.

In 1842 the liberal party, which both in parliament and in the press had pronounced themselves warmly against the reform of the code of criminal process, promulgated in spite of them on the 3rd December 1841, became more irritated from the fact of the dissolution of the chamber of deputies, and with lamentable imprudence, and disregard of the laws, took the field in a state of armed resistance,

the province of S. Paulo being the first, where the revolt broke out, that in a few weeks was stifled there, happily, without any considerable blood shed.

In 1844, the amnesty granted by the Emperor caused all the consequences of the revolt which was put down, to vanish, the moral oblivion of this act following the action of the law against the chiefs of the armed movement.

Since that time, the province of S. Paulo tranquil and happy has seen the traditional energy of her sons apply itself to commerce, and still more so towards agriculture, without their civic duties being forgotten or their political spirit being broken.

The European colonists, and the free labour that Senator Vergueiro had the glory of introducing into the province, and who were to be seen in his large agricultural estates, were of the most useful advantage on account of the example shewn, and the experience made patent, not only to the other estate owners, but to the colonists, who were made aware of the extraordinary fertility of the soil, and the wealth which farming ensures to the man who labours therein.

And the province of S. Paulo is a true El-Dorado which opens its immense, friendly and fruitful bosom to European immigration. The fertility of its soil is in all its extent seductive and attractive; but in a vast region, beyond the serra, in the municipalities which extend between the serra of Araraquara and the Mogyguassú, and in other neighbouring places, it exceeds all the calculations of the greatest, and, as it were, unlimited strength of the producing power of the lands. There the work of one man alone, if laborious, gives a sufficient supply for a family; there, in a few years, the farmer of middling means, arrives at riches and passes on, shortly, to opulence. There, no one who is diligent and laborious, fails, when he has only himself to provide for, in living in plenty.

And besides these dowers of a most gift giving nature the province of S. Paulo, taking the lead of the others, and only disputing supremacy with that of Rio de Janeiro, and certainly not losing any advantage, extends, and develops with her own capital, and a vigorous and praiseworthy provincial action, her railroads, which bring closer the rich agricultural municipalities to the commercial ports of the coast.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

It embraces the parallels of 19° 54′ and 25° 15′ of south latitude: its west longitude lies between 56°, and 10° 19′.

The province has an extent of 148 leagues from north to south, from Caconde to the mouth of the river Paranapanema, and 160 from east to west, from the island of S. Sebastião to the left bank of the Paraná. The superfice is of 10,300 square leagues; the coast line measures 90 leagues, more or less.

## BOUNDARIES.

The province of S. Paulo is bounded on the north by the province of Minas Geraes, and Goyaz, on the south by that of Paraná and the Atlantic Ocean; on the east by Rio de Janeiro, and on the west by Minas Geraes and Matto Grosso. The divisional lines are in dispute in more than one place.

## CLIMATE.

The province of S. Paulo being cut by the tropic of Capricorn extends its territory in a northerly direction to the torrid zone, and to the south, to the temperate zone: its climate, consequently, varies; but it is everywhere healthy, and chiefly so in the interior. In its greatest extent spreading itself beyond the tropic to the south, it

there enjoys a great advantage in its climate which besides being healthy, is soft and temperate, the Europeans from central Europe finding it differ but little from their own countries. On the coast the heat is more pronounced.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The soil is low in the vicinity of the sea, but it is immediately commanded by great mountain ranges: in the interior it becomes elevated, and hills and mountains stand out and extend, without, however, depriving the country of plains.

## OROGRAPHY.

The two great Cordilleras *Oriental*, and of the *Espinhaço* predominate in the orographic system of the province.

The former, the *Serra do Mar* enters to the north by the municipality of *Bananal*, and with a more general direction of north-east to south-west, runs as far as the extreme west of the municipality of Apiahy, from whence it passes on to the province of Paraná, having divided the province of S. Paulo in two very unequal parts, that of Beira-mar, and that of Serra acima (above the serra) which is much the greater. As in the other provinces the mountain range takes sundry names, according to the localities; it being imperative to mention the serra of Cubatão, which from the municipality of S. Sebastião conserves that name till it leaves the province.

The Cordillera of the *Espinhaço* or *Occidental* in relation to that of the *Mar* comes from the boundaries with the provinces of Rio de Janeiro and Minas Geraes, and keeps its name of *Mantigueira*, which it brings thence to the Morro do Lopo; its direction is from north-east to south-west, and almost in a straight line to the said *Morro do Lopo*, which serves as a centre to it: it trends from thence to the north-west, up to where it takes the name

of *Serra das Caldas*, its waters flowing to the *Araraquara*, it afterwards bends to the west, and thirteen leagues beyond, again to the north-west skirting the Rio Grande, and seeing to the east the mouth of the *Sapucahi-mirim*. The serra of *Mogiguassi* is subject to it through the branch which parted from *Morro do Lopo*, goes on and joins the former: those of *Rio Grande*, and of *Paraná*, terminate it with their local names.

Independent of the two mountain ranges that of Araraquara extends as it approximates to the right bank of the Tieté, to whence it throws out ramifications and buttresses, under divers names, at the same time that it advances with considerable sinuosity to the left bank of the *Mogy-guassú*, embracing the flourishing municipalities of the *Limeira*, *Rio-Claro*, *Constituição* and *Araraquara*. To the north-west the serra of *Jaboticabal*, and to the south-west, that of the *Itaqueri*, complete the mountain range of *Araraquara*.

To the north of that mountain range, between the rivers *Pardo* and *Mogy-guassú* the small serra of the *Pederneiras* rises. The serras of *Boticutu* and of the *Agudos* are still but little known.

By the name of the Morros de *Araçoiaba*, a group of mountains, which throw out short buttresses, and spreads out to the west of *Sorocaba* (city), flowing therefrom, sundry streams of water, of which the most remarkable are, that of *Ipanema*, which springs from its eastern side, and the *Sarapuhú*, on the opposite side.

The mineral riches of this orographic group are immense.

These principal notions being given, it is imperative on us to leave on one side the ramifications of the two great Cordilleras, and those which are well or ill called *isolated*, or of the system itself, as well as the *appendant* serras which are mentioned in great number in the *Geographia da Provincia de S. Paulo*, of the distinguished

Brazilian, and some years deceased brigadier Machado de Oliveira.

## HYDOGRAPHY.

The hydrographic system of this province has its principal division determined by the Oriental mountain range, which separates the territory *Beira-mar* from that of the *Serra acima*.

In the maritime part or *Beira-mar*, as they call it, the river with the largest body of water, and of the greatest importance is the *Iguape*, or Ribeira de Iguape, which in this region commands the waters of the south over a great extent of territory by itself or by its confluents, flowing in its course through the municipalities of *Cananea*, *Tiririca* and *Iguape*, and disembogues in the ocean, three or four leagues to the north of the *Mar Pequeno* (lake). It receives the Iguape on the right bank, 11 rivers and 9 rivulets, and on the left, 12 rivers, and 13 rivulets; it affords navigation, for some leagues, to smacks.

After the *Iguape*, the *Una*, navigable by canoes for 15 miles enters the ocean; this river separates the municipalities of *Iguape* and *Stanhaen*. The *Stanhaen* disembogues below the town of its name, giving entry thereto to launches, and is navigable by canoes 20 miles beyond. There are nearly forty rivers which discharge themselves into the sea on the coast of S. Paulo; but the greater part of them of much less bulk of waters.

In the territory of the *Serra acima*, the Parahyba do Sul predominates over all the waters in the north, and over all the others in the immense extent of that part of the province, the Paraná is paramount running to the west.

The *Parahyba do Sul* has already been described: it bathes 17 municipalities and receives into its stream 17 rivers and 17 rivulets in the province of S. Paulo, besides the affluents of these.

The vassalage paid to the *Paraná* is heightened by that of the basin of the great *Tieté*, the *Anhemby* of the savages.

The sources of the *Tieté*, says Machado de Oliveira, pour out from the ramification of the Maritime Cordillera that takes the name of *Morros da Barra*, and from the section of the same Cordillera which in the direction of enst to west goes from that ramification to the southern part of the municipality of Santo Amaro.

It is better, and it is just that the above cited Brazilian geographer should speak in this place.

"On crossing the municipality of Mogy das Cruzes, the river bends to the north, and here forms an arc the descending part of which terminates in the point which faces the village of Guarulhos. From this point the direction of the river is from the east to south-west as far as the village of Baruery, seated on its right bank from whence it trends to the north-west, and afterwards to the north as far as the town of Parnahyba, which lies on its left bank. From thence it makes a slight curve, with a convex inclination to the north, and at the end of this convexity it runs to the west, as far as the hill of Potribú, and in continuation, in the more general direction from south-west to north-east, until it reaches to two leagues above the city of Porto Feliz, the river takes a south-westerly direction as far as that city, which is situate on its left bank.

"The *Tieté* proceeds from Porto Feliz, to the mouth of the *Piracicaba*, the greatest of its affluents, and which comes to it from the east, in the more general direction of south-east to north-west; and the river has in this long extent of 48 leagues so many sinuosities, forming small consecutive curves, and always avoiding each other, that the description of it, making mention of all its irregularities, which it presents in this part of its course, would be too long.

"From the mouth of the *Piracicaba* to the embouchure of the river dos Lençóes, its southern affluent, the river runs in the direction of east-south-east to west-north-west, forming at the end a small curve to the south; from hence it inclines to the north-north-west as far as the fall of Itapuan, where met by one of the ramifications of the mountain range of Araraquara it bends back to the south-west till it reaches the fall of Baurú, and turns back from that place suddenly, and retakes its former direction, and proceeds on to the mouth of the *Jacarépipira-guassú*, which discharges itself on the right.

"In the long course of 40 leagues which the river takes from the mouth of the Jacarépipira to the falls of the Escaramuça, the *Tieté* runs in the more general direction of from south-west to north-east making in sundry places slight deviations, sometimes to the north-east, sometimes to the sout-east, without, however, leaving the direction most followed. A the end of that long stretch, the river runs until it disembogues in the *Paraná*, at a distance of 44 leagues, and in the *presumable* direction of east-south-east to the west-north-west, for it is not yet quite ascertained.

"The *Tieté* by itself and its affluents runs in the province through 33 municipalities, which are: that of Parahytinga, Mogy das Cruzes, Santa Izabel, Bragança, Atibaia, Nazareth, Cachoeira, the Capital, Santo Amaro, Amparo, Belem, Jundiahy, Indaiatuba, Cubriuva, Parnahyba, Cutia, Campinas, Itú, Porto Feliz, Sorocaba, Campo largo, Piedade, S. Roque, Una, Brotas, Rio Claro, Limeira, Constituição, Capivary, Pirapora, Tatuhy, Araraquara and Botucatú."

The Tieté receives as its principal affluents on the right bank

The rivers: *Jundiahy de Mogy*, *Taiassupeboçú*, *Paratihu*, *Taiassupemerim*, *Pirahytinga*, *Juquery*, *Jundiahy-guassú*,

*Jundîahy*, *Capivary*, *Piracicaba*, *Jacarépipira*, *Jacaré-guassú*, *Quilombo*, *S. José*, *Sucury*.

The rivulets: *Boquira-mirim*, *Pinheirinhos*, *Sant' Anna*, *Pedras*, *Cristaes*, *Pau Santo*, *Itaguaçaba*, *Capivary mirim*, *Baguary*, *Dous Corregos*, *Moqueim*, *Jatahy*, *Tatú*, *Bebedor*.

And on the left bank the rivers: *Cabuçú*, *Tamandúatehy*, *Pinheiros*, *Pirapora*, *Soracaba*, *do Peixe*, *da Onça*, *Capivara*, *Araquan*, *Lençóes*, *dos Patos*, *Baurú*, *Claro*, *Lambary*.

The rivulets: *Guiahó*, *Goiabal*, *Aricanduba*, *Itacoera*, *Tatuapé*, *Pirajuçara*, *Jaguaraé*, *Jurubatuba*, *Jaceguay*, *Paranahyba*, *Cutia*, *Baruery*, *Piragibú*, *Cavetá*, *Potribú*.

The Rio Grande finally, which marks the northern boundary of the province of S. Paulo with Minas Geraes and Goyaz, forms another subsidiary basin of the Paraná; it enters S. Paulo through the district of Franca, takes a course from east to west, with many bends that modify its direction, and then takes the predominant one of from north to south, always with divergencies which make it incline sometimes more to the south and sometimes more to the north-west, it goes on beyond its fall of *S. Estevão* and receives the waters of the *Mogy-guassú*, to go further on, and as has already been learnt, to unite itself to the Paranaiva, changing both names for that of *Paraná*. The Rio Grande by itself and by its affluents irrigates in S. Paulo: the municipalities of *Franca*, *Batataes*, *Casa Branca*, *S. Ioão da Boa Vista*, *Mogy mirim*, *Penha* and *Serra Negra;* the rivers *Canóas*, *Inferno*, *Sapucahy* and *Mogy guassú* are its affluents on the left bank which belongs to the province within its competent limits.

The *Paranapanema* has its source on the north-west of the Serra *Paranapiacaba*, receives the *Itapeteninga*, runs to the west, as far as the mouth of the *Taquary* and almost in a straight line to the north-north-west, it runs on the mouth or the confluence of the *Itareré*, and passes on by a course, twice as long, to belong to the province

of Paraná, having irrigated in S. Paulo the municipalities of *Itapeteninga*, *Capão Bonito*, *Itapera* and *Apiahy*, and receives about 22 affluents including rivers and rivulets.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom:* is most rich; the mountains of *Araçoiaba* are mountains of iron; many things more which it would be our duty to mention here, are already pointed out in its competent chapter in the *first part*.

*Vegetable kingdom:* is opulent as that of the most favoured of the provinces, and therefore all special mention may be dispensed with.

*Animal kingdom:* is the same as that of the whole of Brazil. S. Paulo is one of the provinces notable for the taste of sport for *large game*, for which deer greatly abounds; and in the interior, and towards Goyaz, the largest, and superbly antlered deer are found: the hunting of ounces, and especially those called *tigres*, the fiercest and most dangerous, is much followed; they are, naturally, getting scarcer where the population increases more, there being no lack, however, of deserts and forests, and *estates* somewhat distant from the cities, towns, and notable villages, which offer to hunters the emotion and pleasure which they feel in this audacity and at times, hand to hand encounters with the most terrible wild animals of Brazil; for when the gun fails to kill them, the fearless and dexterous hunter takes to his knife and forked stick and knows how to vanquish the prey with these.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

In Brazil, it appears that the Paulist is represented by the energy of his character or whatever it may be of an exceptional race: the Paulists were for more than a century the conquerors, and the first to people the immense interior, at first, beating, pursuing and enslaving

the savages, and afterwards discovering and exploring the richest mines of gold and precious stones: now in the nineteenth century they explore agriculture, call for, invite, receive with favour and promote European immigration, which climate and fertility of their province facilitate considerably, and more than that, they with a provincial initiative as enthusiastic as honourable, they undertake and carry on the work of railroads, giving an example of strength and confidence in her own resources, which with the exception of Rio de Janeiro, no other province of the Empire can dispute with her a like glory, and primacy in the zealous march of material progress.

The animation and prosperity of agricultural industry boast of the surest bases of the wealth and splendid future of that magnificent star of the Empire.

The culture of the coffee tree is of astonishing advantage, especially in some of the municipalities, as that of the *Limeira*, and its other neighbours: the sugar cane, tobacco, the cotton plant, the tea plant give the highest remuneration for the labour employed; the grape vine, wheat and flax grow in a congenial soil, like that of Europe; cereals are harvested in abundance, and the breeding of cattle, mules and swine is an industry widely explored, with evident profit, shewn by the periodical fairs at Sorocuba, in which the sale equals in animation the demand.

Rich in mineral productions of the most precious kinds, flourishing through its agriculture, which among the most fruitful soils is the most fertile, and the exhaustless mine of gold, the province of S. Paulo has yet further in its favour, a climate both temperate, soft, and beneficent, which facilitating the increase of the population both native and immigrant raises its produce, and therefore its private and provincial economical resources, as well as those of the State.

In view of this picture, it is unnecessary to state that in S. Paulo commerce increases and becomes developed with the greatest activity, her great centres multiply, and fresh horizons of progress and riches open; and should proofs of this be demanded, they could be presented, positive and unquestionable as they are, in the simple testimony borne by the railway of *Santos* to *Jundiahy*, from *Jundiahy* to *Campinas* (a Paulist undertaking), of *Sorocaba*, now constructing, and which has for its end the connecting the capital with the iron foundery of *Ipanema*, and others which are in project, with an eloquent indication of zealous puissance.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 850,000 inhabitants, of which 770,000 are free and 80,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 4 senators, 9 deputies of the general assembly, and 36 of the provincial: the province is divided into 3 electoral districts, which present a total of 1169 electors and 55,152 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard* with 24 superior commands, 51 battalions, and 4 sections of battalion of infantry, 13 squadrons and 4 corps of cavalry, and 2 sections of battalion of artillery on active, and 12 battalions and 15 sections of battalion of reserve, presenting 53,272 national guards on active service and 12,031 of reserve; total 65,303.

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary*: schools for males, 266 with 7553 pupils, and 156 for females, with 3967 pupils. *Public secondary:* 1 establishment with 42 pupils.

This official statistic taken from the report of the minister of the Empire in 1872, which is that adopted, and always followed in this work, does not exhibit, in the

absence of information, the table of *primary* and *secondary private instruction*, of the province of S. Paulo, where, however, instruction is free. The establishment of public *secondary* instruction, of which the statistics speak, must be a school for Latin and French in the city of *Itú*.

Besides this official information, it is necessary to add that in reference to *primary instruction*, besides the private schools, of whose number and attendance of pupils the Government does not receive information, there are in the province many other establishments, and they are maintained by the patriotism and philanthropy of good citizens.

In the report of the president of the province in 1871, the following words may be read: "There are *every where schools being organized, gratis, for the benefit of the poorer classes.*" In the city of *Santos*, a society was founded for the benefit of *primary* and *secondary instruction* of the municipality. As to *private secondary instruction*, in the absence of more extensive information, it should not be forgotten that in the city of S. Paulo there are schools for preparatory study, required for the admission of students to the juridical cours.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of S. Paulo is divided and sub-divided into districts, towns and parishes as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. S. Paulo (city and cap.) | 1. Sé. |
| | | 2. S. Bom Jesus de Mattosinhos do Braz. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição de S. Bernardo. |
| | | 4. Expectação de N. S. do O'. |
| | | 5. N. S. da Conceição de S. Iphigenia. |
| | | 6. N. S. da Penha de França. |
| | | 7. N. S. da Conceição dos Guarulhos. |
| | | 8. N. S. do Desterro de Juquery. |
| | 2. Cutia (t.) | 1. N. S. do Montserrate da Cutia. |
| | 3. S.Amaro (t.) | 1. S. Amaro. |
| | | 2. N. S. dos Prazeres de Itapecerica. |
| | 4.Parnahyba(t) | 1. Sant' Anna de Paraupéba. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 2. Santos | 1. Santos (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario da Cidade de Santos. |
| | 2. S. Vicente (t.) | 1. S. Vicente. |
| | 3. Itanhaem (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Itanhaem. |
| | 4. S. Sebastião (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião.<br>2. S. Francisco das Chagas.<br>3. S. Antonio de Guaraguatatuba. |
| | 5. Villa Bella (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Ajuda do Bom Successo de Villa Bella. |
| 3. Iguape | 1. Iguape (c.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus de Iguape.<br>2. S. Antonio de Juquiá. |
| | 2. Cananéa (c.) | 1. S. João Baptista de Cananéa. |
| | 3. Xiririca (t.) | 1. N. S. da Guia do Xiririca.<br>2. Sant' Anna da Iporanga. |
| 4. Sorocaba | 1. Sorocaba (c.) | 1. N. S. da Ponte da Cidade de Sorocaba. |
| | 2. Campo Largo (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres do Campo Largo. |
| | 3. Piedade (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade. |
| | 4. S. Roque (t.) | 1. S. Roque. |
| | 5. Araçariguama (t.) | 1. N. S. da Penha de Araçariguama. |
| | 6. Una (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres de Una. |
| 5. Itú | 1. Itú (c.) | 1. N. S. da Candelaria do Itú.<br>2. Agua Chóca. |
| | 2. Porto Feliz (c.) | 1. N. S. Mãe dos Homens do Porto Feliz. |
| | 3. Indaiatuba (t.) | 1. N. S. da Candelaria de Indaiatuba. |
| | 4. Cabreúva (c.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade de Cabreúva. |
| 6. Constituição | 1. Constituição (c.) | 1. S. Antonio da Constituição.<br>2. S. Barbara.<br>3. S. Pedro. |
| | 2. Capivary (c.) | 1. N. S. do Patrocinio de Capivary de Cima. |
| | 3. Tieté (c.) | 1. SS. Trindade de Piraporá. |
| 7. Campinas | 1. Campinas (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Campinas. |
| | 2. Bethlem (t.) | 1. N. S. de Bethlem. |
| | 3. Jundiahy (c.) | 1. N. S. do Desterro do Jundiahy. |
| 8. Bragança | 1. Bragança (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Bragança.<br>2. N. S. do Soccorro. |
| | 2. Amparo (c.) | 1. N. S. do Amparo. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 8. Bragança | 3. (Atibaia (c.) | 1. S. João Baptista de Atibaia. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Carmo do Campo Largo. |
| | 4. Serra Negra (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario da Serra Negra. |
| | 5. Nazareth (t.) | 1. N. S. de Nazareth. |
| | 6. S. Antonio da Cachoeira (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Cachoeira. |
| 9. Taubaté | 1. Taubaté (c.) | 1. S. Francisco das Chagas de Taubaté. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Piedade do Boquirá. |
| | | 3. S. Antonio do Paiolinho. |
| | 2. Pindamonhangaba (c.) | 1. N. S. do Bom Successo de Pindamonhangaba. |
| | 3. Caçapava (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Ajuda de Caçapava. |
| | 4. S. Bento de Sapucahy-Mirim (t.) | 1. S. Bento de Sapucahy Mirim. |
| 10. Parahybuna | 1. Parahybuna (c.) | 1. S. Antonio do Parahybuna. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Bairro. |
| | 2. Ubatuba (c.) | 1. Exaltação da Santa Cruz de Ubatuba. |
| | 3. S. Luiz de Pirahytinga (c.) | 1. S. Luiz de Pirahytinga. |
| 11. Guaratinguetá | 1. Guaratinguetá (c.) | 1. S. Antonio de Guaratinguetá. |
| | 2. Cunha (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Cidade de Cunha. |
| 12. Jacarehy | 1. Jacarehy (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Jacarehy. |
| | 2. S. José do Parahyba (c.) | 1. S. José do Parahyba. |
| | 3. Mogy das Cruzes (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Mogy das Cruzes. |
| | | 2. N. S. d'Ajuda de Itaquaquecetuba. |
| | | 3. S. Bom Jesus do Arujá. |
| | 4. S. José do Parahytinga (t.) | 1. S. José do Parahytinga. |
| | 5. Santa Branca (t.) | 1. Santa Branca. |
| | 6. Santa Izabel (t.) | 1. Santa Izabel. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Patrocinio. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 13. Bananal | 1. Bananal (c.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus do Livramento do Bananal. |
| | 2. Areas (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna da Cidade de Areas. |
| | 3. Barreiros (t.) | 1. S. José dos Barreiros. |
| | 4. Queluz (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista de Queluz.<br>2. S. Francisco de Paula dos Pinheiros. |
| 14. Lorena | 1. Lorena (c.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade da Cidade de Lorena.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição do Embaú. |
| | 2. Silveiras (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Silveiras.<br>2. N. S. da Piedade do Sapê. |
| 15. S. João do Rio Claro | 1. Rio Claro (c.) | 1. S. João do Rio Claro. |
| | 2. Limeira (c.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres da Limeira. |
| | 3. Brotas (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres de Brotas. |
| | 4. Jahú (t.) | 1. N. S. do Patrocinio do Jahú. |
| 16. Araraquara | 1. Araraquara (t.) | 1. S. Bento de Araraquara. |
| | 2. Bethlem do Descalvado (t.) | 1. N. S. de Bethlem do Descalvado.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição de Itaquery.<br>3. S. Rita do Passa Quatro. |
| | 3. Pirassinunga (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus dos Afflictos de Pirassinunga. |
| | 4. S. Carlos do Pinhal (t.) | 1. S. Carlos do Pinhal. |
| | 5. Jaboticabal (t.) | 1. N. S. do Carmo do Jaboticabal. |
| 17. Itapetininga | 1. Itapetininga (c.) | 1. N. S. dos Prazeres de Itapetininga.<br>2. N. S. das Dôres de Sarapuhy.<br>3. S. Bom Jesus do Alambary.<br>4. Guarehy. |
| | 2. Tatuhy (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Tatuhy. |
| | 3. Paranapanema (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Paranapanema. |
| 18. Mogy Mirim | 1. Mogy Mirim (c.) | 1. N. S. da Penha de Mogy Mirim.<br>2. N.S. da Conceição de Mogy Mirim.<br>3. Espirito Santo do Pinhal. |
| | 2. S. João da Boa Vista (t.) | 1. S. João da Boa Vista. |
| | 3. Penha (t.) | 1. Penha. |
| | 4. Casa Branca (t) | 1. N. S. das Dôres da Caza Branca. |
| | 5. S. Simão (t.) | 1. S. Simão. |
| | 6. Caconde (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Caconde.<br>2. Espirito Santo do Rio do Peixe. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 19. Botucatú | 1. Botucatú (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres de Botucatú. |
| | 2. Lençóes (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade dos Lençóes. |
| | 3. S. Domingos (t.) | 1. S. Domingos. |
| | | 2. N. S. dos Remedios da Ponta do Tieté. |
| | 4. Itapera da Faxina (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna da Itapera da Faxina. |
| | 5. Apiahy (t.) | 1. S. Antonio de Apiahy. |
| | | 2. S. João Baptista da Faxina. |
| | | 3. N. S. do Bom Successo. |
| 20. Franca | 1. Franca do Imperador (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Franca. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Carmo da Franca. |
| | | 3. S. Rita do Paraizo. |
| | | 4. Macahubas. |
| | | 5. Rifana. |
| | 2. Batataes (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus da Canna Verde de Batataes. |
| | | 2. S. Bento e Santa Cruz de Cajurú. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*S. Paulo*, city and capital of the province, situate between the rivulets *Inhangabaú* and *Tamandatehy* and at three miles' distance from the Tieté; its cradle was the college of the Jesuits, founded in 1554 by the name of *S. Paulo de Piratininga*. The provincial government has its seat therein, and also one of the two schools of social and juridical science, established in the Empire: its principal buildings are, the ancient college of the Jesuits, which is now the palace of the Government, the Franciscan convent, in which the school of social and juridical sciences carries on its functions, the churches of the Sé, of Santa Ephigenia, and others; it possesses a humble theatre, literary societies which are maintained by the academical youth, printing offices, &c.; it is connected to Santos and the sea by the railroad, which starting from Santos, goes over the Serra de Cubatão; it prides itself, finally, on its neighbourhood to the field of *Ypiranga*, where the independence of Brazil was proclaimed.

*Santos*, a maritime city, and a considerable commercial emporium, with a custom-house, lines of steamers both national and foreign, and a railroad that is advancing into the interior, populous, rich, and possessing elegant buildings in its private houses: it was the birth-place of the brothers Gusmão, of whom Alexandre de Gusmão—the *flyer*—invented the aerostatic machine, and the Andradas, of whom José Bonifacio, Martim Francisco and Antonio Carlos are the glories of Brazil.

*Itú*, a city three miles distant from the Tieté, a centre of agricultural produce, commercial, flourishing, having fine churches, two convents, a hospital for lepers, a municipal chamber and jail, streets well paved and a numerous population, a seminary, &c.; it prides itself upon its having been the birth-place of Paula e Souza, the learned, and of Feijó, the austere.

*Sorocaba*, a city on the banks of a river of the same name and at 60 miles to the south-west of the capital of the province, and also a centre of agricultural produce, and very commercial and populous. It possessess some churches and notable edifices.

An annual great fair of horses, mules, horned cattle, &c. is held there, and which animals come from the province itself, as well as from that of *Paraná*, and Rio Grande do Sul.

*Iguape*, *S. Roque*, *Porto Feliz*, *Capivary*, *Campinas*, *Bragança*, *Amparo*, *Jundiahy*, *Atibaia*, *Constituição*, *Tieté*, *Taubaté* (ancient, historical, and proud of its past fame), *S. Luiz do Parahytinga*, *Pindamonhangaba*, *Ubatuba*, *Jacarahy*, *S. José de Parahyba*, *Mogy das Cruzes*, *Parahybuna*, *Guaratinguetá*, *Cunha*, *Bananal*, *Areas*, *Lorena*, *Silveiras*, *Rio Claro*, *Limeira*, *Itapeteninga*, *Tatuhy*, *Mogy mirim*, *Itapera da Faxina*, and *Franca do Imperador*, are cities, some of which are very considerable in the province of S. Paulo —some for their commerce, and for their maritime situa-

tion, for exporting; others for their importance as centres of agricultural population, in municipalities of notable richness and uncommon fertility of soil.

Towns and nascent villages, which smile at the promising future, are, of necessity, not mentioned: but as an exception, duty obliges us to mention the most decayed and obscure of all. *S. Vicente*, a town, the first populated spot in S. Paulo, founded by Martim Affonso de Souza in 1532 in the island, then, and for a long time afterwards, the island of Enguá-Guaçú, and now become truly a part of the continent.

S. Vicente at the end of a few years slighted on account of the superiority of the situation of Santos, became, a long time since, a poor hamlet or suburb of *Santos*; it is still a town, and as long as it shall be possible will remain such, in honour and worship of history, which cannot forget that S. Vicente was the first regular colony of Brazil, and the colonial placenta of S. Paulo. The town of S. Vicente is the *rediviva* of the primitive colonies of Brazil, without animation in the present, or hope for the future; broken down and expiring, the past galvanizes and gives it an artificial life, which supports it in the rank of the first, and the last, of the most venerated and the most obscure, of the most ancient, and the most pretermitted of towns of S. Paulo: it is merely a living corpse, due to generous scruples, and to the noble glorification of history.

## COLONIZATION.

It is now nearly thirty years since the senator of the Empire, Campos Vergueiro, introduced free labour in his considerable agricultural establishments in S. Paulo, engaging European colonists: that example was soon followed, and is so still by sundry and important owners of estates. Some colonies were dissolved; others, however, maintained themselves and prospered. The systems followed in those

colonies would not, if related, find space in this book; to say nothing of the difficulties, disadvantages, and profits, of the well founded complaints, and in a greater number, the ill founded, of the colonists.

It is certain that they experienced all the vexations that inexperience, and novitiate prove almost certain to bring with them; and that in all the cases of claims on the part of the colonists, and of disputes between the latter and the owners of estates as to the carrying out the contract, treatment, &c., the Imperial Government took measures as they ought, appointing commissioners, and a comittee of inquiry who studied the disputes and the rights of each one, in order to do due justice.

Of the old colonists, many are now proprietors: of the laborious and moral, few left the province: in the last few years some hundreds of Europeans arrived contracted for some estates, where they are working with spirit and satisfaction.

With all the losses suffered by sundry estate owners, with all the complaints, well founded (which, however were extraordinarily exaggerated in Germany), the colonization in S. Paulo has been greatly advantageous to the province, and not less so to the labourers from Europe contracted, who either bore testimony of their well being and of the profit accruing to them, continuing to work on hire, or free from their contracts, established themselves independently, and in farming or other industry found a sufficiency, and fortune, which, in Brazil, never fails the diligent.

That colonization continues and will continue: but what the province of S. Paulo, and those which follow to the south ought to hope for, is the spontaneous immigration of the Europeans of the north and of the south, who without dispute will evidently encounter here a much better Europe than their own, by reason of its temperate climate, so beneficent, and the fruitfulness of its soil.

In conclusion, it would be unjust to forget to declare, that it would have been easy, had space permitted, to give a *résumé* of all the history of the colonies of S. Paulo, from the circumstantial and luminous work, the extensive, developed and conscientious report, which, commissioned by the Government, Dr. Carvalho de Moraes wrote upon them.

# CHAPTER XVI.

## PROVINCE OF PARANÁ.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

As regards what has been handed down to us concerning the ancient colonial state of this province of the Empire, its history is almost entirely mixed up with that of the captaincy of S. Vicente, afterwards called S. Paulo. It is beyond doubt that the territory belonged to another and distinct hereditary captaincy—that of S. Amaro—which extended up to the neighbourhood of Laguna, or the lands of S. Anna; its donee, however, Pero Lopes de Souza never even had the good fortune to visit it, after the well deserved grant made in 1534, inasmuch as he died in 1539.

Representatives of the donee and of his heirs took under their charge some, although very few of the colonial nuclei which in the first years could with difficulty prosper under the shadow and protection of the captaincy of S. Vicente.

The ties of fraternity which bound the two donees Martim Affonso de Souza, and Pero Lopes de Souza, as well as the close relationship between the heirs of both, will explain and confirm by right a certain guardianship which the flourishing captaincy assumed over the other—which sparsely populated, and devoid of the necessary

means, could with difficulty support its rising but weakly population.

It is further to be remarked that the captaincy of S. Amaro had a part of its territory (that which extended from the river Curupacé to the bar of S. Vicente) wedged in between the lands of the captaincy of that name; it was in this part that in the beginning naturally her colonization was so feebly developed, and it therefore followed that inasmuch as the representation of the donees and of their successors confirmed the rights and dominion of the latter, by granting in their names portions of incult lands, one single "provedor", "ouvidor", and "alcaide-môr", who were those from S. Vicente, took the management of the captaincies,—and in this manner matters were so carried on, that, after disputes, contentions, and suits at law concerning the other inheritances granted to Martim Affonso, and to Pero Lopes, which many families of high rank in Portugal disputed in the 17th century, after Affonso VI. had united the two captaincies under the absolute dominion of the Portuguese crown in 1679, and very soon after conferred them on the count Ilha do Principe, and when in 1709 Dom João V. liberally rewarding the Marquis de Cascaes, who appealed against the grant made by Affonso VI., caused them to revert definitively to the State, and created the captaincy of S. Paulo and Minas independent of that of Rio de Janeiro—already the captaincy of S. Amaro, in spite of, or even assisted by the representatives or delegates of the heirs of the donees, was dependent and a colony subject to the administration and government of S. Vicente.

At the close of the 16th century the captaincy of S. Amaro insignificant and disheartened had, near the town of the same name, only one sugar estate and mill, and to the north of the island also of the same name two forts well garrisoned, those of S. Felippe and S. Thiago. In the following century the energetic onward movement of

the Paulistas, the gold mines of Paranaguá, and the known fertility of the soil of the abandoned S. Amaro were the incentives for the exodus to the south of the explorers and famous pioneers, who founded nuclei of population, and laid the foundation of important towns.

In 1624 the captaincy of S. Amaro received in a division of territory, arbitrarily decreed, the designation merely historical, and unsanctioned by the voice and designation of the people—of the captaincy of *Itanhaem*.

The independence of Brazil being proclaimed in 1822, the ancient captaincy of S. Amaro was legally and administratively absorbed by the province of S. Paulo, of which it formed a part, under the name of district of Paranaguá, which it received on the 17th June 1723, and in addition thereto that of Paranaguá and Coritiba, which was granted to it in 1812 on account of its increasing importance. From that time forward the district of Coritiba was the generic and commonly accepted appellation by which its fertile and rich territory was known, and whose inhabitants petitioned in 1840 the general legislative assembly for the rank and standing of Province of the Empire.

The law of 29th August 1853 acquiesced in the just and well founded aspirations of the people of Paranaguá and Coritiba,—that same law which created the province of Paraná dismembered from that of S. Paulo, and having for capital the city of Coritiba: the new province was inaugurated on the 19th December of the same year, and her first president and successful founder was the Counsellor Zacharias de Goes e Vasconcellos.

Adding to, and continuing the very fertile soil of S. Paulo, rich and liberal in natural productions, favoured by the climate, which is mild and temperate in the south of Brazil, the province of Paraná to such a high degree attracts, seduces and fascinates the European settlers and emigrants, that her mild and enchanting southern neigh-

bour Santa Catharina has oft complained of the incentives, and the seducing magic by which she entices, and seduces her labourers, useful immigrants, and families from Europe, who pass on from her colonies to the very fertile lands of the Paraná.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude is all south, and includes the parallels of 22° 4′ and 25° 29′, leaving out the territory claimed by the province of Santa Catharina, including which it reaches the parallel 27° 50′. The longitude is all west, the province being placed in 4° 45′ and 11° 53′.

Its greatest distance from north to south is, from the left bank of the Paranapanema, 66 leagues to the right of the Iguassú, or 83 leagues on the right bank of the Uruguay, and 120 leagues from the Atlantic on the right bank of the river Ararapira, to the left bank of the river Paraná, where the Iguassú has a bar. Its superfice is 8000 square leagues: line of coast about 25 leagues, not including the bays of Paranaguá and Guaratuba.

## BOUNDARIES.

The province of Paraná has for its northern boundary S. Paulo, for its southern Santa Catharina and the Argentine Republic; to the east the Atlantic and Santa Catharina; and for its western boundary the province of Matto Grosso and the republic of Paraguay.

No divisional lines have been laid down by decree.—Senhor Luiz de França Almeida e Sá, the author of a résumé, and a clever, valuable "Compendium of the Geography of the Province of Paraná", draws in the following manner the line which he considers as established.

"The province of Paraná has for her divisionary line:

"To the north, the river Paranapanema, from its mouth in the Paraná to the bar of the Itararé.

"To the north-east: the course of the river Itararé as far as its head waters, the left banks, from one of the branches of the Apiahy, and to the right the most eastern branch of the other, from the source of the latter to that of the river Itapirapuan to the Ribeira de Iguape, ascending through it up to the mouth of the river Pardo, and by the current of this latter up to its springs, then going on over the Serra Negra to the isthmus of Varadouro, in the direction of the river Ararapira, and by the southern bank of this latter to the sea.

"To the east: the Atlantic Ocean.

"To the south-east: the river Sahy-Guassú, the Serra do Mar, the river Marombas, from its source to the river Canóas, and by this to the Uruguay.

"To the south: the river Uruguay, in the part included between the bars of the rivers Canôas and Pepery Guassú.

"To the south-west: the river Pepery-Guassú, from its mouth in the Uruguay to its source, from this latter to that of S. Antonio, following the course of it to its bar, at the Iguassú, and by this latter up to its mouth in the Paraná.

"To the west: the winding Paraná, from the bar of the Iguassú to that of the Paranapanema."

## CLIMATE.

Is warm and sultry on the lands of the lower serra or on the sea-coast,—temperate and healthy on those of the upper serra, where the province of Paraná enjoys a climate in no way inferior to that of S. Paulo.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The land is low, and in some places marshy, in the neighbourhood of the sea, the elevations then commencing, and the mountain range which extends from north to south, and divides the lands on the sea-board from the wide

central elevation, presenting many serras, well watered, covered with extensive virgin forests, and plains which spread out to the west.

## OROGRAPHY.

The orographic system of the province of Paraná requires as yet to be carefully studied: some of the mountain ranges in the interior are scarcely known even by name in the maps; and it would be presumptuous to determine their connexion and correlativeness, Senhor Almeida de Sá, the author already quoted of the *Geographical Compendium of the Province of Paraná*" confines himself to the following observations on the subject.

"Amongst the different mountain ranges which cross it (the province) four are separated from each other by the very vast table lands which they present,—these are: the extensive maritime Cordilheira called Cubatão, which continuing on almost parallel with the coast forms a vast plateau with an elevation equal to its summit, which is 950 metres above the level of the sea, taking in the very fertile lands of Coritiba; the Serrinha, or *Serra dos Capados*, which forms to the west of its summit (1220 metres above the level of the sea) a second plateau, where are situated the celebrated *Campos Geraes*; — the *Serra das Furnas* which forms a third plateau more elevated than the other two,— and the *Serra da Esperança*, presenting the last and a more important one than any of the others.

It were unnecessary to mention that the eastern mountain range assumes, as in the other provinces, different local denominations; it is right, however, to point out the *Serra Negra* which contributes to the boundaries of the north-east. The mountain range of *Apucarana* appears to be a continuation of that of *Esperança*, extending, however, very much to the west.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The province contains three great basins; those of *Paranaguá* and *Guaratuba* on the sea-coast; and that of Paraná on the upper serra.

The rivers *Nhandiaquára*, *Guaraquassú*, *Serra Negra*, *Guarakessava*, *Tagassava*, *Cachoeira*, *Faisqueira*, *Sagrado*, *Itaqui*, *Borrachudo*, *Varadouro*, and *Tiberé* flow into the bay of *Paranaguá*; and the rivers *Guaratuba*, *S. João*, and *Cubatão* into the bay of *Guaratuba*.

The basin of the *Paraná* has already been described: the rivers *Paranapanema*, *Ivahy*, *Iguassú*, and *Pikiri* flow into it in the province of the same name.

As it is easy to be comprehended, the volume of waters is vastly and incomparably greater which from the western slopes of the *Serra do Mar* pours down on its way to the basin of the Paraná; in like manner the great rivers of the province are the confluents of this latter.

The *Paranapanema*, offspring of the Serra do Mar, to the west of *Itanhaem*, collects 14 affluents: but the grandeur of its waters is broken up by numerous rapids.

The *Ivahy* collects 4 affluents: the Iguassú 14, flowing into the Paraná with a mighty force of waters, after precipitating itself in a cataract of 200 feet in height about 10 miles from its embouchure.

All these rivers flow from east to west crossing the centre of the province, whence they go on receiving from the right and from the left their tributaries which they bring on to the *Paraná*.

The Uruguay, which has also been already described, receives in the province the *Chapecó* and the *Pepery Guassú*.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* By progressive discovery, it presents mines of iron, gold, copper, antimony, mercury, and precious stones, such as diamonds, emeralds, topazes, agates,

cornelians, &c., can boast of beautiful marbles, and other calcareous formations, &c. A spring of mineral (sulphureous) water has already been discovered in the colony of Thereza, district of *Guarapuava.*

*Vegetable kingdom.* The magnificence of the forests is only equalled by the variety of the vegetable kingdom which is of surpassing excellence. For all sorts of building purposes, most valuable timber is to be found in abundance: the pine tribe abounds and offers a most luxuriant development; *ebony* is also to be met with, although less abundant. The clove, cinnamon, the gissára pine, the cangerana, the baunilha, the angico, are in small quantities.

The province derives wealth from the herb mate, and fruit-bearing trees and shrubs are numerous.

The almecega, the jabotá, affording an excellent varnish, and the pine tribe already mentioned take the first place among the resinous trees; the liquorice of the Itararé, its pecacuanha, abutua, douradinha, and espelina, as well as many others are to be recommended for their medicinal properties.

*Animal kingdom:* is the same as that of the other provinces; but remarkable for the number of the larger quadrupeds, which flying from the more densely populated provinces there seek refuge. Tapirs, ounces, and the so-called *lions* and *tigers*, the latter only differing from the former in colour, size, and greater daring and ferocity, wild pigs, ant-eaters, &c. are found in great numbers in the woods.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRIE AND COMMERCE.

The province of Paraná looked upon as one of the least important of the Empire, being so thinly populated, is so favoured in her climate, so remarkable for the fertility of her land, and so deserving of praise for the industry and activity of her inhabitants, that not a doubt can be entertained as to the spirited and progressive deve-

lopment of her powerful resource. Her agricultural produce is already to be recommended for its variety, consisting of cotton, sugar cane, coffee, tobacco, rice, arrow-root, mandioc, yams, beans, maize (Indian corn), of the two latter there are more than fifty varieties, Indian pepper, wheat, oats, barley, hay, hops, also potatoes of the best quality, known by the name of *English*, and yielding excellent crops. It cannot be denied that this variety of agricultural produce, which is but little taken advantage of for exportation, merely shows the surprising richness of this highly favoured soil; this simple mention of it, however, is the brilliant beacon to lighten the path to a future of opulence and which cannot be far distant.

The energetic industry of the inhabitants of Paraná, compared with many provinces which are more advanced, deserves to be mentioned, with a kindly feeling and with encouragement: it cultivates, as the principal source of the provincial wealth the herb *maté*, — it possesses saw mills, manufactories of cotton and woollen stuffs (although of coarse texture)—of wines and liqueurs made from different fruits,—of sweetmeats, cheese, dried peaches for consumption in the interior; nor does it neglect agriculture, refining the wax, and of the honey making excellent sweetmeats.—Besides all these, the rearing horned cattle, horses, sheep, &c. yields so great a profit, that this branch of industry so important from its fruitful production is left entirely to the care of prodigal nature, and to the pasture lands, which require neither care or cultivation. The important advantages which the extraordinay abundance of the fine trees of Paraná offers for building and other industrial purposes, have already proved a stimulus to the formation of an important company, who procure that wood, having established saw mills on a large scale, and having made an energetic start in this business, they will, as is most natural, in time exclude from the markets of

the Empire foreign deals which most certainly are not superior to those of this country.

In addition to this branch of industry, the company „*Progressista*" pushes forward steam navigation between the different ports of the province, giving by the great increase of passengers, and the still more important transport of merchandize, a flattering testimony to the progress and energetic activity of the people of Paraná.

Its commerce is on a par with its production, and with the scantiness of its population, which otherwise is distinguished for its industry, activity and morality. The herb maté forms the most considerable source of its exportation,—it is the river swelled by a hundred streams, and these hundred streams are productions at present of small, but of immense future value for the fitness and variety, and uncommon productive force of its soil.

In an agricultural, industrial, and commercial point of view, the province of Paraná may be compared to an unfledged eagle, which to-day soars not,—but she is an eagle which to-morrow will dare the rays of the sun in her audacious flight.—Incontestably the most brilliant future smiles on, and hails the infant pupil of S. Paulo, the rival of S. Catharina, the very opulent province of Paraná.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 100,000 inhabitants, of which 90,000 are free and 10,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 1 senator, 2 deputies of the general, and 20 of the provincial assembly, the province forming one electoral district, having 202 electors and 15,508 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force*: *national guard*, 6 superior commands, 7 battalions and 1 section of infantry, 1 section and 1 battalion of artillery, 11 corps and 6 squadrons of cavalry on active service, and 1 battalion of reserve, forming a

total of 13,239 national guards on active service, and 3114 of reserve, total 16,353.

*Police corps:* 88 men (effective force).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary:* 52 schools for boys, containing 890 scholars and 25 for girls with 403 scholars. *Private primary:* 8 schools for boys, 127 scholars, and 2 for girls with 63 scholars. *Public econdary:* 3 establishments for boys with 118 scholars. *Private secondary:* 1 establishment for boys with 20 scholars.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Paraná is divided and sub-divided into districts, municipalities and parishes, as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Coritiba | 1. Coritiba (cap. and city) | 1. N. S. da Luz de Coritiba. |
| | 2. S. José dos Pinhaes (t.) | 1. S. José dos Pinhaes.<br>2. N. S. dos Remedios de Iguassú. |
| | 3. Votuverava (t.) | 1. N. S. do Amparo de Votuverava. |
| | 4. Arraial Queimado (t.) | 1. S. Antonio do Arraial Queimado. |
| | 5. Campo Largo (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade do Campo Largo |
| 2. Lapa | 1. Lapa (c.) | 1. S. Antonio da Lapa. |
| | 2. Rio Negro (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus do Rio Negro. |
| | 3. Palmeira (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Palmeira.<br>2. S. João do Triumpho. |
| 3. Paranaguá | 1. Paranaguá (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de Paranaguá.<br>2. S. Bom Jesus de Guarakessava. |
| | 2. Antonina (c.) | 1. N. S. do Pilar de Antonina. |
| | 3. Morretes (c.) | 1. N. S. do Porto de Morretes. |
| | 4. Guaratuba (t.) | 1. S. Luiz de Guaratuba. |
| | 5. Porto de Cima (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião do Porto de Cima. |
| 4. Guarapuava | 1. Guarapuava (c.) | 1. N. S. de Belem de Guarapuava.<br>2. S. Bom Jesus de Palma.<br>3. S. Thereza da Therezina. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 5. Castro. | 1. Castro (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Castro. |
| | | 2. N. S. dos Remedios do Tibagy. |
| | | 3. S. Bom Jesus de Jaquariahiva. |
| | | 4. S. José do Christianismo. |
| | 2. Pitanguy (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Pitanguy. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Coritiba*, city and capital of the province, is situated on the platform of the Cordilheira of Cubatão 950 metres above the level of the sea, and 13 leagues from the port of Antonina, and 15 from Paranaguá; it contains good churches, respectable looking dwelling houses, paved streets and a spirit of progression; in its municipality agriculture and the breeding of cattle are in a flourishing state. *Paranaguá*, maritime city, situated at the mouth of the Tiberé, and on the most important place of the province for its commerce, harbour, fine buildings and custom house. *Antonina*, also a sea port city, on the inlet of *Itapema*, at the most western extremity of the bay of Paranaguá; it has a good anchorage ground, and a board of revenue, is commercial and encreasing in prosperity. *Morretes*, a central city, situated on the right bank of the *Nhundiaquára*, 3 leagues from Antonina, 7 from Paranaguá, and 12 from Coritiba; it exports large quantities of maté, by which staple it acquires wealth. *Ponta Grossa*, another central city, situated in the „*Campos Geraes*" and in such a favourable locality, that at some leagues distant it makes itself conspicuous and hailed as the princess of her beautiful district;—it holds a first place for agriculture and cattle breeding. *Castro*, another central city, founded 84 years ago on the upper part of the river Ciapó, thirty leagues from *Curitiba;* its district attractive on account of its auriferous soil, and precious stones, did not fall into decay on account of its mineral treasures being exhausted, and like the preceding ones increases and progresses by the potent

resources of mines which never become exhausted, namely the industry of agriculture and cattle breeding.

Besides the cities there are many *towns* and *villages* awaiting a certain and approaching state of prosperity in a province which is so highly favoured.

## COLONIZATION AND CIVILIZATION OF THE INDIANS.

Scarcely called into existence, yet colonization begins to smile on Paraná.

The colonies of *Assunguy*, *Thereza* and *Jatahy*, the latter no longer retaining its military character, and the establishments at the *Bacachery*—offer an incontrovertible proof of a hopeful future—shewn by the fact of many European immigrants having passed over from the very fertile province of S. Catharina to that of Paraná.—Yet with still a little more favour, a little more patient solicitude, a few more sacrifices, which will be as it were seed most advantageously sown, and the development in project, and already set on foot for the construction of good and extensive roads will give to the magnificent but hitherto poorly appreciated province a very numerous European immigration, which cannot fail to resort to a territory so rich, so fertile with a climate so favourable and mild, so extensive as to enable tens of thousands of laborious families easily to become proprietors of lands, the very fertile soil of which offers health, long life, freedom and opulence.

Some settlements of Indians, those of *S. Jeronymo*, *S. Pedro d'Alcantara* and *Palmas* for example, who have already intercourse and labour in common with the civilized people, should be an incentive for incurring a greater expense in the task of civilizing the Indians.

As a proof of the salubrity of the climate and the healthly state of this province, the following official information suffices.

The village settlement of S. Pedro d'Alcantará consists of 11 Brasilians and 838 Indians, and in this village, and in that settlement and in that of the colony of the Jatahy, containing 211 individuals—there were in the year 1869—2 deaths.

# CHAPTER XVII.

## PROVINCE OF SANTA CATHARINA.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

While the king Dom Manuel neglected the colonization of Brazil, and limited his efforts to sending to this region two small exploring squadrons to examine the coast, and even so, this continued in great part unknown,—the court of Madrid had its eye on the southern coast of the new land which from its remarkable inclination to the west might possibly be disputed with Portugal, as being comprised within the Spanish hemisphere, according to the convention of Tordezilhas.

This idea, and the importance which the *Caranaguaçu* (river Plate) took—at which place João Dias de Solis and Vicente Yanez Pinçon arrived in 1508; at once reckoning on their being able to pass through to the Indian seas, determined Carlos V. to send, in 1515, this same Solis to go up and explore the great river, it is known how the Spanish chief was killed by the savages, in that undertaking; but what should be related here is, that in that voyage he penetrated a bay which he called "los perdidos" (the lost ones) and disembarked on its beach, on land belonging to the province of Santa Catharina.

After Solis, two Spanish navigators, Sebastião Cabot in 1525 and Diogo Garcia in 1526 disembarked and stayed on the island called by the Indian inhabitants *Carijós*,

*Juriré Mirim* (is the island of Santa Catharina); the Europeans, therefore of that nation are the real discoverers, or at least, the first visitors of this province of the Empire.

In 1532 Pedro Lopes de Souza, detached from the squadron of his brother, the chief Martim Affonso, on returning from the river Plate which he had ascended and explored, much further up than the mouth of the Uruguay, also landed on the beautiful *Juriré Mirim* which *appears* to have then received the name of the island *dos Patos* (if not later), so called from the abundance of that fowl (Gomara called them *canards noirs*) in a spacious lake in the interior. Some will have it that Pero Lopes had met in the island and had expelled therefrom, a small number of Spaniards, already established there in a colony.

The division of Brazil into captaincies little benefited Santa Catharina, which long remained without an appreciable colonization. Although the date is uncertain, it is still an undoubted fact, that the Paulist *hunters* of Indians, on invading that territory in early times, already encountered their rivals the Jesuits; beyond this information all else is in confusion and obscurity in the history of the sixteenth century and is still so for many after years.

It is said that pirates, corsairs and fillibusters explored during that time, on their own account, the island "dos Patos", and the neighbouring continent. The abusive harvest seized on, could not have been, in such ease, anything beyond the most spontaneous and easily gathered from nature.

In 1650 Francisco Dias Velho Monteiro with four children, established their residence in the island dos Patos, and erected a chapel dedicated to our Lady of the *Desterro*; from this name and from other circumstances the conclusion was drawn, that Dias Velho Monteiro was *banished* and positively is indicated that he did not receive

the island as a grant, for eleven or twelve years after that date, the island dos Patos was granted as a premium of fidelity to Agostinho Barbalho, although it is also pretended that in 1654 Dias Velho had obtained the same favour from Dom João IV.

At all events the island *dos Patos* began to receive colonists; but all information referring to almost the whole remainder of that century is vague and badly elucidated. It is known that a Dutch vessel which had sprung a leak arrived there and discharged on the beach at *Canavieira* a good part of the silver which she brought, and which Monteiro seized, he with his two sons and with the Indians of the colony attacked and put to flight the Dutch; and that these, returning the following year, according to some, or a few weeks afterwards, as others have it, demanded and obtained restitution of their silver and other valuables taken from them, but also attempted to outrage, or in fact did deflower the two daughters of Monteiro who was killed in defending them nobly.

The two sons of the unfortunate assassinated man, took their sisters to the neighbouring continent together with the Indians who were willing to follow them; and took up their residence near to a lake which they called *Laguna*, which was therefore the first place on the continent of the province of Santa Catharina which was peopled.

Agostinho Barbalho had lost, from carelessness, the grant of the island of Santa Catharina, which reverted to the crown, having proved the inconstant senhorial right of the captaincy of Santo Amaro till 1709, which really contradicts the right of the king to the grant made to Barbalho; but be it as it will, it became territory of the province, for the exclusive dominion of the sovereign.

Towards the end of the seventeenth century the inhabitants of S. Paulo, who till then only went into the in-

terior, and near to the small rivers Caveira and Carahá an agricultural hamlet which for years was called *dos Prazeres*, because they erected their church under the name of our Lady *dos Prazeres*, and which hamlet afterwards took the name of Lages, under which name it was raised to a township in 1774, taking from its antiquity the title of the second populated place on the continent of the province.

The establishment of the colony of Sacramento on the left bank of the Plata, and the political rivers of the king Dom Pedro II. inherited by his successors relative to the southern boundary of the great Portuguese colony of America, and finally the situation and the conditions, under every point of view, so favoured and recommendable as were those of the island of Santa Catharina called the attention and were the object of consideration of the government of the metropolis.

It is said and it is very probable, that before the commencement of the eighteenth century, a colony of people coming from S. Paulo, whether by the order of the court of Lisbon or not, established themselves in the beautiful, and afterwards so coveted island. Dom João V. sent at sundry times, from 1720 forwards, colonists from the Açores and Madeira to people the island and the continent of Santa Catharina; by a provision of Government, dated 24th March 1728, that island was garrisoned by a detachment of soldiers: ten years later, the territory of Santa Catharina received the title of captaincy subaltern to that of Rio de Janeiro, and the Brigadier José da Silva Paes entered into possession of its first governorship on the 7th March 1739. This captaincy spread its jurisdiction to the south over the whole extent of Rio Grande.

In 1762 the Spaniards, at the same time that Cevallos, availing himself of the incapacity or of the cowardice of the Portuguese chief, was taking the colony of Sacramento,

invaded the island of Santa Catharina, which soon quit of them, saw its fortifications increased, which nevertheless did not prevent its sad and complete conquest by the same Cevallos in 1777. The peace, and the treaty of S. Ildefonso, which are both of the same date, restored to Portugal the important island.

The captaincy of Santa Catharina advanced but feebly and found itself soon inferior in natural development and military stimulus, to Rio Grande do Sul, which was under its jurisdiction, and which separated from it as early as 1760, and rising on the 25th February 1807 to a captaincy general, took Santa Catharina, as a dependent and subordinate captaincy; but after the proclamation of the independence, and of the foundation of the Empire, it assumed its grade of province, and its brilliancy of a star in the political firmament of Brazil.

Inhabited in the greater part, during early times by the *Carijós*, the Indians who are less ferocious and easier to submit to civilization, to the living together in villages, and to the dominion of their conquerors, or whether from its mild and temperate climate, and its fortunate natural conditions, or the effect of whatever other causes, which may have escaped the observation of the philosophers and the statesman, the captaincy, afterwards province of Santa Catharina, recommends itself by the pacific, moderate and mild spirit of its population.

In 1839 the haughty and terrible rebellion of Rio Grande do Sul, crossing the serra, invading the municipality of Lages, and the plains of Vaccaria, took possession of Laguna to strengthen itself by a sea port; but the aid of the people was wanting, they withdrew from it with antipathy: Canavarro, the invading chief rebel, had to retreat, seeing that Laguna was restored by means of the loyal forces, and evacuated the territory of Santa Catharina, in whose inhabitants he had encountered only faith-

ful devotion to the institutions and to the integrity of the Empire.

Save that episode of a civil war, the flame of which was lighted up in the neighbouring province, there is not to be found in Santa Catharina, an example or any account of revolt and disturbances which might threw a doubt on the docility, the hospitable and friendly spirit and amiable character of the inhabitants of Santa Catharina, so accessible and mild, so affable and cheerful, like the climate, happy, mild, and generous, of their province.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

Latitude southern, the province lying between the parallels of 26° 30′ and 29° 18′. The longitude is all west and is comprised between 5° 8′ and 11° 2′.

The province is 68 leagues in its greatest extent from north to south from the right bank of the *Sahy-guassú* to the left bank of the *Mampituba*, and from east to west 103 leagues from the point of Mondoy to the left bank of the *Pipiri-guassú*, and 45 leagues from the same point to the left bank of the river *Canôas* at the confluence of the Morombas. Its superfice is 2580 square leagues: its coast is more than 90 leagues in extent.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by Paraná, at the rivers *Sahy-guassú*, *Negro* and *Iguassú*, to the south by the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul at the rivers *Mampituba*, *Sertão*, *Barroca*, *Touros*, *Pelotas* and *Uruguay*, to the east by the Atlantic, and to the west by the Argentine Confederation *(the general boundaries of the Empire)*, and by the provinces of Paraná, and of S. Pedro by the serra of Cubatão or Serra Geral, between the sources of the river *Barroca*, the waters of which run into the *Uruguay*, and the sources of the *Sertão*, an affluent of the *Mampituba*.

## CLIMATE.

The climate is temperate, mild and very healthy: the regularity of its seasons, the mild temperature, the natural richness and fruitfulness of the lands, led some one to give the name of *Paradise of Brazil* to the province so endowed with favourable conditions.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface of this province is more or less undulating in its sea-board, which comprises besides islands (of which *Santa Catharina* and *S. Francisco* are the principal) the continent *below* the mountains, or the sea-board; and it is still undulated beyond the mountains over a vast space which stretches away to the west, although narrowing somewhat from what it is on the sea-board, and shewing sundry mountains which increase in height, extensive plains, numerous rivers, and beautiful forests.

## OROGRAPHY.

The *Serra Geral* or eastern mountain range continues to advance from north to south and traverses in that direction all the province, detaching from its range short branches or buttresses, as for instance the high mountain *Bahul* which rises behind *Porto Bello*, and which is a land-mark to mariners.

The *Serra do Espigão* to the north, and that of *Trombudo* to the south, the former stretching to the west and the latter running to the east of the great maritime chain or Serra Geral, should be considered as belonging to this system, to which they do not appear alien, notwithstanding beyond the *narrow* part, the mountain *Camberella* is higher than the *Bahul* and rises over the southern entry of the port of the capital.

Of the eastern mountain range and the Serra *do Espigão* to the west, there are sundry mountains of which

the directions, heights, connexion and independence require study because they lie in an immense space which civilized man has, as yet, no effective dominion over, save in a very small part.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The hydrographic system of the province of Santa Catharina may in general be determined by a knowledge of the great basins which command its waters which are in their course beyond the maritime range of mountains tributaries of the basin of the Plata through the *Uruguay*, and by confluents of the Paraná, such as the Iguassú; but the circumstantial estimate of the course of its rivers, which water and fertilize a vast territory to the west, still requires investigation in order to elucidate the subject. In this favoured, rich and magnificent province which boasts of both the characteristic natural Brazilian opulence, conditions of climate and temperature, which make it assimilate to southern Europe, the interior which extends to the west, is in a great part an unknown country, and a source of treasures which awaits discoverers.

In reference to its hydrography, that which is most elucidated, is the course of its waters in its maritime region, that is, of those which discharge themselves into the sea. It is evident that the rivers which run to the east must be of short extent.

The *Mampituba* disembogues, coming from the south to the north, at 3 miles distance from the Torres: it is more than 200 metres broad, and about 20 miles in length, and partly navigable for smacks. The *Araranguía*, navigable for 15 miles, is almost as broad as the former. The *Urussanga*, comes after, the *Tubarão* follows, and which discharges in the *Laguna*, which also receives the *Una*, which affords navigation for Canoes for some leagues: further on the *Piraquera* opens, which receives the outpouring of the

lake of that name; continuing on the *Garopaba*, beyond it the *Embahú*, the mouth of which barely measures 20 metres in width, being ten times as wide further in the interior: after this river comes the *Massambú*, broad and deep; the *Cubatão*, the *Maruhy*, the *Biguassú*, that of *Tijucas*, all of which deserve a like mention. The *Bapéba*, and the *Pirequé*, the large and the small, discharge into the bay of *Garopas:* after these the *Cambory-guassú*, 40 metres wide, and the great *Tajahy* being 110 palms narrower than the former, and navigable for smacks for 3 miles, and for launches and canoes for a much greater extent: the *Graváta*, or *Iriri-guassú*, the *Iriri-mirim*, the *Camboriú*, the *Tujubá*, the *Itapicú*, the *Sahy*, and some more are the chief rivers which carry to the Atlantic the waters below the serra of the province of Santa Catharina: the trend of all of them is with greater or less bends from west to east, obeying the slope of the mountain, and the immense parapet of the Serra Geral, which separates the waters of the east from those of the south, of the west and of the north, which to the north and to the west seek through the *Iguassú* and *Corrientes*, the *Paraná*, and to the south through the *Uruguay*, with the *Pelotas*, and meet the said *Paraná* with which already bringing with it the *Paraguay* it forms, out of Brazil, the magnificent estuary of the *Plata*.

To the south, seeking the Pelotas and the Uruguay, the fonts of the former, and the rivers *das Canôas, do Peixe, Chapocó, Apeterehy* besides others run: to the north seeking the basin of the Paraná, through the *Iguassú* and the *Negro*, the tributary of the latter, the rivers *Chopim, Timbó, Canoinhas* and many others run.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* In the general study (Chapter IX. of the first part) the mineral riches already known in this province have been mentioned, in which abound iron and coal, besides other produce of high value referred to.

*Vegetable kingdom*: is considerable; it possesses excellent wood for cabinet making, and for all kinds of building purposes, such as the páo doleo which is veined and close grained, the grapecique, the guarabú, ceder, laurel, &c., sassafras, paó d'arco (lance-wood), and other numerous trees of sterling wood. Ayres Cazal already praised the *Oak* tree — very different from *that of Portugal*, but *excellent for building*, and mentioned *the extraordinary quantity, in sundry districts, of Brazilian Pine trees.* The vegetables employed in medicine are many, and in a great part the same as in other provinces; that which feeds the *cochineal* is easily met with, and is abundant.

*Animal kingdom.* This does not differ from what is met with in the neighbouring provinces, and is only more conspicuous from its greater number; for the territory awaiting population and man's civilizing conquest is vast.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The agriculture of the province consists of sugar cane, which affords sugar and rum, coffee, cotton, flax, farinha of mandioc, cereals, besides garden stuffs, some of which is capable of being exported.

Besides the industry of agriculture, there is that of weaving cotton stuffs, jerking beef, hides &c., trul ylimited to works destined to favour friends, are some skilfully formed of feathers, and of fish-scales, fancy and ornamental articles, which might certainly be converted into a source of industry very lucrative, if obsequious delicacy were to transform itself into legitimate economical speculation so delicate, as offering material profit, and a resource for many families.

The trade of Santa Catharina is yet only what it can be, the modest representative of agriculture the most abundant from the fruitfulness of the soil, and trivial from the poverty of the people.

The province of Santa Catharina has a dazzling future before it: its lands most fruitful, signify wealth; its climate, temperate, mild, healthy, which means *health* and *prolonged life*, its temperature, its regular seasons, like, but without the rigour of southern Europe, which render it milder and much more bounteous than southern Europe, in Brazil call for, excite, and will oblige friendly and incentive torrents of immigration, charmed by the certainty of easily obtaining property by te enchanting life enjoyed from health, and the prospect of enriching themselves, as a sure and certain payment of their diligence and their labour.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 140,000 inhabitants, of which 125,000 are free and 15,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 1 senator, 2 deputies to the general assembly, and 20 provincial, the province forming one sole electoral district with 213 electors and 14,181 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force*: *national guard*, with 3 superior commands, 8 battalions and 3 sections of battalions of infantry, 1 battalion of artillery, 7 corps and 4 squadrons of cavalry on active service, and 3 battalions and 5 sections of battalions of reserve, presenting 10,149 national guards on active service and 3923 of the reserve; total 14,072.

*Police corps:* 95 men (complete state).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary:* 62 schools for males with 2007 pupils, and 41 for females with 1105 pupils. *Private primary:* 32 schools for males with 581 pupils, and 7 for females with 157 pupils. As to secondary instruction, both public and private, the statistics followed in this work say nothing, for want of information.

The province of Santa Catharina had a lyceum in its capital, which became extinct, doubtless from want of pupils, or from some reason of like importance: the College

of S. Salvador under the direction of Jesuit priests took upon themselves in 1864, the charge of secondary instruction, assisted by the provincial government who in 1870 had to rescind the contract made with those priests who refused to give an account of the profits arising from the pupils, and of the expenses incurred in buildings and accommodations made in the college, for which they had received 13,000$000 from the provincial treasury. This information is official.

They are now about to re-establish the ancient lyceum in the capital of the province.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Santa Catharina is divided and sub-divided into districts, towns and parishes, as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Desterro | 1. Desterro (c. and cap.) | 1. N. S. do Desterro. |
| | | 2. S. Sebastião da Praia de Fóra. |
| | | 3. N. S. das Necessidades. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Lapa do Ribeirão. |
| | | 5. S. João Baptista do Rio Vermelho. |
| | | 6. S. Francisco de Paula de Canavieiras. |
| | | 7. Santissima Trindade. |
| | | 8. N. S. da Conceição da Lagôa. |
| 2. S. José | 1. S. José (c.) | 1. S. José da Terra Firme. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario da Enseada do Brito. |
| | | 3. S. Pedro de Alcantara. |
| | | 4. S. Joaquim de Garopaba. |
| | | 5. S. Amaro do Cubatão. |
| | 2. S. Miguel (t.) | 1. S. Miguel da Terra Firme. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Piedade. |
| | 3. S. Sebastião das Tijucas (t.) | 1. S. Sebastião da Foz. |
| | | 2. S. João Baptista das Tijucas. |
| | | 3. S. Bom Jesus dos Afflictos. |
| 3. N. S. da Graça. | 1. N. S. da Graça de S. Francisco (c.) | 1. N. S. da Graça de São Francisco. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Gloria do Sahy. |
| | | 3. S. Pedro d'Alcantara e Virgem Immaculada da Conceição. |
| | | 4. Bom Jesus do Paraty. |
| | 2. Joinville (t.) | 1. S. Francisco Xavier de Joinville. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 4. Itajahy. | 1. Itajahy (t.) | 1. SS. Sacramento de Itajahy.<br>2. N. S. da Penha de Itapocorohy.<br>3. N. S. do Bom Successo de Cambriú.<br>4. S. Pedro Apostolo do Alto Bigoassú. |
| 5. Lages | 1. Lages (c.) | 1. N. S. dos Prazeres de Lages.<br>2. N. S. do Patrocinio dos Bagoaes. |
| | 2. N. S. da Conceição dos Coritibanos (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição dos Coritibanos.<br>2. S. João de Campos Novos.<br>3. N. S. do Amparo de Campo de Palmas. |
| 6. S. Antonio dos Anjos | 1. Laguna (c.) | 1. S. Antonio dos Anjos da Laguna.<br>2. S. João de Imaruhy.<br>3. Bom Jesus do Soccorro da Pescaria Brava.<br>4. Sant' Anna do Merim.<br>5. Sant' Anna de Villa Nova. |
| | 2. Tubarão (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade do Tubarão.<br>2. N. S. Mãe dos Homens de Araraguá. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Desterro* or *Nossa Senhora do Desterro*, or as it is generally called *Santa Catharina*, city and capital of the province, advantageously situated on the island of *Santa Catharina* on a tongue of land which extends, to the west, in the bay already opportunely mentioned and facing a point of the continent which it governs.

It is humble and poor in buildings: its government palace and chamber of the municipality have no merit as architectural buildings: of late years the style of building has improved very much, as has also the paving of the streets; the barracks and military hospitals, and other public establishments give it a more important appearance; its commercial development is however noticeable, as also a certain consciousness of its own worth as the head of a province prodigiously rich in natural treasures, and in a most favourable climate, besides the insurpassable importance of its commanding situation.

*S. José*, a maritime city, situate on the bay of the name of the province and in the inlet of its continent, about one league west of the capital. The agriculture of its municipality, and its fishery maintain it. As early as 1839, a mine of coal was discovered in its district.

*S. Francisco* or *Nossa Senhora da Graça de S. Francisco*, a city in the interesting island of its name, flourishing, and actively exporting cereals, tobacco, coffee, *imbê* cordage, &c., lies in the bay or on the banks of the river Babitonga, and at a distance of two leagues from the sea.

*Lages*, a central city, the princess of the interior, where cattle is bred, most rich in timber, in agricultural produce, and irrigated by numerous streams in its district. *Laguna*, a city on the eastern bank of the lake from which it takes its name, is conspicuous as an exporter of the agricultural produce of its municipality, and of other neighbouring places which carry to it their tribute of produce.

And besides these modest cities, still smaller towns, parishes, nascent places of population, an immense interior, where all the riches of nature, a most beneficient and enviable climate, and the most fertile of soils are calling for civilized and laborious man.

## COLONIZATION.

Of the colonies founded in the province of Santa Catharina, of their development, of the fortunes, and the state of each one of them, with the date at which they were established, has already been treated as far as was admissible in the last chapter of the first part of this book: it is therefore not necessary to repeat information which has already been written.

This is incontestably one of the provinces where the colonies and nuclei of spontaneous immigration, both from

the south as well as the north of Europe, can best prosper: every thing conduces thereto; the climate both temperate, and most healthy, the soil most fertile, the natural riches of the country, rivers which afford navigation, and lands sold for such a price and with such conditions, that they are almost a gift, are incentives which ought to satisfy the utmost exigency.

The general government has spared no expense or pains to aid European colonization, and is not less earnest in its endeavours to open roads and to facilitate the means of communication, which are the surest elements of the prosperity of the colonies; for the health of the colonists, and the abundance of the produce are exclusively on account of most beneficent nature, and of a most prodigal soil.

Nevertheless, it is not less certain that divergencies have taken place, intrigues formed, and disagreeable disputes have broken out: all, however, concerning the administration, and the intercourse of the colonists or of some of them with the respective European directors, as they could not have any complaint against either the general government or the authorities of the province; but with all that, they are but passing vexations, and the colonial establishments go on prospering.

# CHAPTER XVIII.

## PROVINCE OF S. PEDRO DO RIO GRANDE DO SUL.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The lands of this province were not included in the grants of the hereditary captaincies, into which Dom João III. divided Brazil, nor had they any donee after that period. They were in possession of savage tribes who were distinguished under the names of *Minuanos*, *Tapes*, and *Charruas*, all of them speaking the Guarany tongue.

The coast very flat and even without an anchoring place, even a dangerous one, this coast, afterwards called Rio Grande, was the cause which gave rise to this interesting part of the Portuguese colony of America to be entirely forgotten for more than two centuries by those whose duty it was to found towns, by order and at the expense of the Government, and also to free them from the attacks of enterprising foreign adventurers.

But it so happened that a *power* possessing no geographico-political limits on the Spanish peninsula (where notwithstanding it had some influence) now in the American colonies of the two monarchies in question, that power known and recognized by the name of the company of *Jesus*, very quickly obtained a footing and extended far and wide its important conquests in the countries of Uruguay, Paraná and Paraguay, establishing the celebrated *Missions*,

seven of which close to the eastern bank of the Uruguay, and called by the names of S. Francisco de Borja, S. Lourenço, S. Miguel, S. Nicolão, S. Luiz de Gonzaga, S. João Baptista and S. Anjo, remained after sanguinary struggles, and with varied fortune appertaining to the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, or rather under the dominion of the Portuguese crown from the year 1801.

Nor was it a work of few years, of little labour, or of insignificant sacrifices, that such a theocratic government of the Jesuits over the Indians of an immensely important territory in the basins of the Plata was acquired. Those Jesuit Fathers had to conquer the animal instincts, the habits, and the boundless love of free action of the savage, by civilization, patience, self-denial, and at the cost of long and painful suffering; reverses they experienced, their rising nuclei of catechumens were destroyed, as in the missions of *Guayra* attacked by the Paulistas invaders of the interior, and persecutors of the Indians, and even of those who were already established in villages, and under the protection and jurisdiction of the Jesuits; these latter, however, succeeded in uniting, disciplining, and bringing under an absolute, blind, obedient control, fettered without appeal, without the right to claim what to them belonged, without even the liberty of thought or action—upwards of one hundred thousand savages, who became, heart and soul, devoted to them.

In a work so limited and of necessity so succinct as is this present one, it is difficult to form a just appreciation of the theocratical system of the Jesuit Fathers in those their important *missions* in the lands of the basins of the Paraná, and the principal fluvial dependencies of the Plata. The opinion of Raynal may be accepted: this system, this theocratical form of government of the Jesuits would have been the best, had it been possible to preserve it in its pristine purity: at all events the religious instruction and

the moral and religious influence for the poor Indians, was far better; but carefully and kindly modified by the Fathers who were denominated directors, their temporal, and spiritual sovereigns, and in reality they were such in every way, in view of the sufferings, the brutal, cruel life they were made to lead by the terrible backwoodsmen of S. Paulo, from whose power and out of whose most harsh bondage the miserable savages were transferred to the slave market, where they found themselves the objects of barter, an example and proof of martyrdom to the new lords of slavery, a slavery not only tolerated, but made lawful by the colonial government of Brazil.

But at least it must not be forgotten that under the pretext of repelling the aggressions of the Portuguese, the Jesuit procurator of Paraguay, Father Montoya, petitioned in 1649 the government of Madrid to be allowed to instruct the Indians already christianized in the use of fire arms; later the inspecting father André de Roda conferred military rank on the missions of that country, so that the Jesuits might be enabled to organize their military force in such a manner as, later, to offer a serious armed opposition to the execution of the treaty of Madrid.

Here however we must go back to take up and follow the chronological thread of the historical sketch of Rio Grande do Sul.

The impulse given to colonization in Rio Grande in the 18th century, as in S. Catharina, is owing to the foundation of the colony of Sacramento and to the contest with the Spaniards.

In 1715, by order of the governor of Rio de Janeiro Francisco de Tavora, five exploring colonists accompanied by some slaves set out from Laguna, in order to survey the country to the south, as far as the colony of the Sacramento, and to see whether it was occupied at any point by foreigners; they arrived as far as the village of the

*Charruas* of S. Domingos Soriano; but on their way home they fell into the hands of the savages, from whom after some time they succeeded in escaping. A more numerous expedition traversed the plains, and on their return brought with them cattle which they penned in the neighbourhood of Maldonado, and about 40 Indians who had been converted by the Spaniards, who declared that they were sent by their priests to choose localities for the establishment of new villages: the captain general of Laguna sent away those Indians with a letter for the said missionaries, intimating to them that all that territory was under the dominion of the Portuguese crown, and that it was not permitted them to lay it waste, still less to establish hamlets thereon. The same captain general Francisco Brito Peixoto in order to prevent invasions of the Jesuits sent his son-in-law João de Magalhães with about thirty men, whom he was to leave and establish in those deserts, it being also recommended to him to form an alliance with the *Minuanos*: this difficult commission was executed in such manner, that to it were owing the friendly relations of the Minuanos with Laguna, and the creation of the first *estancias* (cattle farms) in those southern plains.

The Paulistas everywhere conspicuous for their energy and adventurous spirit of enterprise caused their name to be included in the history of Rio Grande, and in the cause of the Portuguese in the extreme south of Brazil. A road from S. Paulo to the captaincy of the south, the march of the commander Manoel Dias in 1735 with a war party through the interior to pass beyond the Rio Grande and to bring about by force of arms the separation of the Spanish forces who were besieging the colony of the Sacramento, the Portuguese standard raised by him in the plains of Vaccaria, and other services rendered by him assisted in a high degree, the work of colonization of that

territory destined to be the inexpugnable fortress of the south of the Empire.

In 1737 was founded by the brigadier José da Silva Paes, commissioned for that purpose, the first garrison, and regular township at the mouth of the Rio Grande de S. Pedro with the name of *Jesus Maria José*, and also two forts, that of S. Anna, half a league in the interior, and that of S. Miguel on the serra of the same name. These precautions of a military character were coincident with the siege of the colony of the Sacramento and the battles of the Spanish and Portuguese on the left margin of the Plata from 1735 to September 1737 when news of the armistice arrived at the two rival colonies, as it had previously at their capitals, signed by these in Paris on the 16th March of that year.

The armistice did not cause any inactivity on the part of Dom João V., who favoured with encouraging incentives and skilful policy the immigration of families from the Azores and Madeira to Rio Grande de S. Pedro do Sul, whose population by this means went on increasing and extending itself over the interior.

But Rio Grande do Sul, whose colonization arose from the calculation of the war, owed its existence to the war, and had to be cradled, to grow, and to be educated by the sound and alarum of the cry to arms, and to the onslaughts of the war. In this lies the secret of its haughty and warlike spirit so strongly pronounced even to this day.

In 1750 the treaty of Madrid was made, inaugurating a lasting peace between the colonies of the two Iberian capitals.

This treaty fixed the boundaries which should separate from south to north the two immense American territories: the essential point was wanting, that of laying down the line of demarcation: competent commissioners from Portugal and Spain destined to find themselves at variance, and in

opposition (lamentable on the part of the Portuguese) in the Paraná, although agreed as far as the Uruguay, were thwarted and attacked by the Jesuits, who sent into the field, in armed revolt, their Indians of the missions of Uruguay, whom they commanded in person.

In 1756 by noble exertions Gomes Freire de Andrade overcame the resistance of the missionary hosts; but shortly after questions arose which placed the boundary commissioners at variance, the two capitals arrived at a conclusion by annulling in 1761 the treaty of 1750, and in the year following, war again broke out in the Plata and in Rio Grande do Sul.

From 1762 to 1777 short were the intervals between the cessation of hostilities, fortune sometimes smiling on the Portuguese, sometimes on the Spanish contending colonies; but in that last year, however, so disastrous for Portugal, the balance inclined decidedly towards Spain, who by the treaty of S. Ildefonso became mistress of the colony of the Sacramento, as well as of the missions of Uruguay, and of a large portion of the territory of Rio Grande.

The peace of 1777, which lasted between the two colonies until 1801, was taken advantage of for the development of agriculture and the peculiar industry of the inhabitants of the lands of Rio Grande de São Pedro do Sul, which otherwise had already been separated from the captaincy of Santa Catharina since 1760, it possessing a distinct form of government, but subordinate to that of Rio de Janeiro.

Population had increased considerably in the new captaincy; on the banks of its most important rivers, and on the borders of its two very richly gifted lakes, nuclei of population rose up full of life and energy; the exuberant fertility of the soil had begun to nourish with a great variety of articles the commerce of maritime exportation;

the very prolific breeding of horses *cavalhadas* (the denomination is a local one) and of horned cattle, scattered throughout the plains those vast cattle-breeding estates *(estancias)*, herculean founts of nourishment of the celebrated cavaliers, energetic, indefatigable in action and on the march, dauntless in combats, but lately shining conspicuous amongst the populators of those southern lands, as officers and soldiers of the army, whom retirement or leave of absence permitted to exchange the barracks for rural establishments, and who retained in their new mode of life, and imbued the population around them with the military spirit, customs, audacity, and that Portuguese enmity towards their Spanish neighbours, in 1777 the conquerors, and in Europe and America enemies, or at least rivals marked out by an angry tradition.

The news of the war declared by Spain against Portugal in the manifest of 27th February 1801 was hailed by the troops stationed in Rio Grande and by the warlike population who burned to take revenge for the cruel reverses of 1777; the retaliation was brilliant: in a few days a handful of brave voluntee rsreconquered the seven establishments of the missions, whilst the regular army firmly established the Portuguese power to beyond the Jaguarão, and Santa Tecla. The peace of Badajoz celebrated on the 6th June 1801 was only known on the 17th December in the warlike captaincy, which in spite of the Spanish reclamations kept the fruits of their victories.

By the decree of the 25th February 1807 Rio Grande de São Pedro do Sul was raised to the rank of a captaincy-general, its capital then passing from the town of Rio Grande to that of Porto Alegre.

In the easy campaign of 1812 (but easy as it was, barren as to results), in the exhausting war of policy of the king Dom Pedro II., carried on in inheritance by his successors until Dom João VI., the war of 1816 to 1820,

the consequence of its termination being the voluntary incorporation of the Banda Oriental with Brazil under the denomination of Cisplatine Province, Rio Grande de São Pedro do Sul formed by the exertions of its intrepid cavalry an important element in its splendid victories.

Rio Grande de São Pedro do Sul was created a province of the Empire from the foundation of the latter and paid her civic tribute of glorious blood in the war of independence of the Cisplatine province.

In the political convulsions which shook the Empire during the minority of the present Emperor, the haughty province, in common with others, in her turn threw herself into the arms of rebellion: in 1835 there broke out in the province a tremendous civil war, which lasted ten years at the expense of more than enormous sums of money, namely that of most noble blood poured out like water, and that of the lives of some thousands of valiant soldiers. The submission of the rebels extenuated and wearied out by such a long continuance of fighting, and the amnesty wisely granted by the Emperor pacified and brought together in peace and good will all the Rio-Grandenses, who during ten years had been engaged in sad and lamentable encounters and fratricidal battles. For a short time, the celebrated soldier of fortune, the Italian Garibaldi, fought in the ranks of the rebels, and he, undoubtedly a first rate authority in appreciating acts of bravery, bears testimony to the cavalry of Rio Grande as being the first even in comparison with the valiant and impetuous cavalry of the most warlike nations of Europe.

The thundering eloquence of subsequent facts would dispense with this impartial testimony.

In 1851 the province of Rio Grande de São Pedro do Sul bore a considerable part in the war, by which the Empire in concert with her allies saved the independence of

the republic of Uruguay, and annihilated the dictatorship and despotism of Rosas in the Argentine Confederation.

In the war with Paraguay the Rio Grande cavalry covered itself with glory, rendered the most eminent services, and amongst heroes, which in the army and navy almost all the provinces of Brazil consider it an honour to reckon in relating the prowess and gigantic feats of those five years of battles and combats, that of Rio Grande points with the most pardonable pride to the Marquis d'Herval (the Ozorio of legendary fame), the Viscount de Pelotas (general Camara), the baron Ijuhy (general Bento Martins Menezes) and others who like them happily still live, and amongst the slain the generals Menna Barreto, and the baron do Triumpho (José Joaquim de Andrade Neves).

In the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, a bishoprick was created by a bull of the Pope Pius IX. in virtue of the decree of 27th August 1847 thus separating it from that of Rio de Janeiro.

The temperate climate of the south of Brazil, and the fertility of the soil of Rio Grande offers very considerable incentives to European emigration.

In 1824, as already mentioned, was established a colony of Germans on the lands situated between the rivers Sinos and Cahy, about 7 leagues to the north of Porto Alegre; it was called S. Leopoldo from the name of the Empress Leopoldina, under whose protection it was created, and began to develop itself.

Labour gave abundance to all the colonists; by application and economy many of them became beyond belief wealthy. This encouraging example did not give the result which was hoped would be carried out, that is, a successive flow of German emigrants, and the establishment of other colonies; for the Cisplatine war soon after supervened, to which followed in quick succession the inevitable shock produced by the grave occurrences of 1831, and the

stormy period of the 10 years rebellion, which was also very prejudicial to the until then increasing prosperity of the infant S. Leopoldo.

But to war succeeded peace, and the colony of S. Leopoldo as well as the entire province presented the most encouraging and smiling picture of prosperity, and of agricultural, commercial and industrial development, always maintaining its noble character and energetic attitude of a high spirited and valiant sentinel of the southern boundary of the Empire.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

Latitude all south: the province lies between the two parallels of 27° 5′ and 33° 45′, the longitude all western is between 6° 22′ and 14° 10′.

Its greatest extent from north to south is 130 leagues from the mouth of the *Mampituba* to the Chuy stream, and from east to west 115 leagues from the Ocean to the left bank of the Uruguay. Its superfice is 8204 square leagues. The coast exceeds 140 leagues in extent.

## BOUNDARIES.

The province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul is bound on the north by Santa Catharina, on the south by the Oriental republic of Uruguay, on the east by the Atlantic and again by the province of Santa Catharina, and on the west by the republic of Uruguay and by the Argentine Confederation.

The boundary line with the sister province was set down in the preceding chapter: the limits already marked out: with the Oriental republic are to be found in the second chapter of the first part, in the general study of the boundaries of the Empire, and those of the west with the

Argentine Republic are by the thalweg of the river *Uruguay* from the mouth of the river *Pepiry-Guassú* to that of the *Quaraim*.

## CLIMATE.

In the province to the extreme south of the Empire the climate is an exact continuation of that which begins to pronounce itself in S. Paulo beyond the Tropic; temperate and mild as in the south of Europe, and the seasons of the year being clearly marked out, in winter it freezes in some parts of the province, but in the summer intense heat is experienced. This state united to the salubrity of the climate is highly prized and is admitted as such by the Europeans who find themselves perfectly at home, living in this part of the Empire.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The surface is in general even, and spreads out into plains of immense extent to the south and to the west; with which the Serra do Mar forms a contrast, and other small ranges which rise to a modest height in the western part of the province.

## OROGRAPHY.

The Oriental range or *Serra Geral*, is exclusively the predominant one: it comes from the north, accompanies the sea-coast about 27 leagues, turns to the west, and with an inclination to the north-west, and at the end of 80 leagues more or less, finishes close upon the *Uruguay*, having crossed the province in that direction, which thus separates the territory into the upper or northern part, and the lower or southern.

The haughty cordillera, as though it had a presentiment of its end, bends itself to its destiny and loses its pride of height, which it carried through other provinces, and goes on lowering until, through the inconstancy of fortune, that same *Serra do Mar* dies away, very far from the sea and near the bed of its most powerful and majestic son, the river *Uruguay*.

Studying the orographic system of the province, and the ramifications and dependencies of the Oriental mountain range, the Bachelor Antonio Eleutherio de Camargo in his work *Quadro Estatistico e Geographico da provincia de St. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul*, elucidates the matter well, he writes and teaches, as follows:

„*1st Group*: *Serra do Mar* properly so called, with its different local denominations of *Serra das Antas*, *dos Ausentes*, and *de Taquary*.

„Of this section of the *Serra Geral* form part the serras and mountains which extend to the south and are known under the following denominations in their locality: *Serro Agudo*, of the *Fortaleza*, *Forno*, *Cruzinha*, *Ferrabraz*, *Santa Cruz*, *Escadinhas*, *Sapucaya*, *Dois Irmãos*, *Morretes*, *Torres*, *Itacolomy*, *Cristal*, *Antonio Alves*, *Matheus Simões*, and *Negro*.

„*2nd Group: Serra Geral*, which from the parallel above indicated takes a westerly direction, being a continuation of the *Serra do Mar*, and with the local denomination of serra of *Butucarahy*, of the *Pinhal*, *S. Mortinho*, *do Paschoa*, *do Pinheiro Marcado*, of *Santa Cruz*, *S. Jacob*, *S. Pedro*, and *S. Xavier*.

„*3d Group: Serra de Herval.* In the parallel of 29° 30′ and from the geographical point in which the cordillera lays aside its denomination of *Serra do Mar* to take that of *Serra Geral*, and in the section known by the name of *Serra de S. Martinho*, the great elevation of the ground or *Coxilha Geral* descends, and which in the centre of the

province after establishing the distribution of waters to the basins of Santa Maria, to the west, of Jacuhy and Camaquam to the east, by the right banks of the former and the second, and the left of the third, proceeds east, in a ramification of the *Serra Geral*, receiving the local names of *Serra de Batovy*, *de Caçapava*, *da Encruzilhada* and *do Herval*.

„Isolated as this serra shows itself, it appears to the simple observer to be an orographic system without conjunction as we have described it. But the *Serra do Herval* is a ramification of the *Serra Geral*, to which it is connected by the *Coxilha Grande* which serves as its buttress.

„These groups are connected with the high mountains and hills known under the denominations of *Santa Maria*, *Oiro*, *Carreiras* and *Caveiras*.

„*4th Group*: *Serra dos Tapes*. The *Coxilha Grande* extends still further to the south, parting forth at the geographical point of lat. 31° 20′ and long. 0° 11′ 35″, a branch of the *Serra Geral*, which takes the direction to the east, after having distributed the waters on the right bank of the rivers Santa Maria or Ibicuhy Grande, of Camaquam, and the streams running to the river Negro do Estado Oriental and the Jaguarão.

„This prolongation of the *Coxilha Grande* is the buttress that connects the *Serra dos Tapes* to the *Serra Geral*. In its development it receives the name of serra of *Santa Tecla*, while the local names of the serra of the *Asperezas* and of the *Velleda*, are applied to a bifurcation of the *Serra dos Tapes*.

„To this group belong the mountains of Roque, Pavão, Taboleiro, Bahú, Arvores, and Serro Partido.

„*Western ramification:* From the *Serra de Santa Tecla*, a ramification or buttress goes to the west, by the local names of Sant' Anna, Serrilhada and Haedo, separating the waters of Pirahi Grande (an affluent of the river Negro) from those of Santa Martha, and extending in a north-

westerly direction becomes annihilated in the proximity of the river Uruguay, between the Ibicuhy and Quarahim, bifurking in other branches, of which that of the north takes the name of Coxilha do Japejú, being that of the Caverá, the branch which separates itself between the points of Ibirapuytan and Ibicuhy da Armada.

„To this group are connected the mountains called Ivaiacú, Jaráo, Vacaquá, Trindade, Cruz, Palmas, Chapeú, Itaquatiá, Xafalote, Irajasse and Chato."

It is right to mention that in the province of São Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, the chains of hills of greater or less extent and giving pasture to cattle are called *Coxilhas*. It has already been said also, that the *Cordilheira Oriental* is much less lofty in this province, where according to the worthy engineer above cited (Senhor Camargo) it does not preside at the *divortium aquarum* of the two great basins: the secondary serras and branches are, in general, low and paltry.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

It is the *Coxilha Grande* which crosses the province from north to south and determines the distribution of the waters to the basin of the Uruguay, or Occidental basin, and to the Atlantic, which receives the oriental or that which represents the Oriental basin. The following flow into the Ocean. The river *Mampituba* to the north, here being a boundary of the province, having its source in the Serra do Mar', also called *Verde*, up to the bar of the river Sertão, and having for its tributaries, the *Monteiro*, *Sertão*, and that floodgate of the lake *Sombrio*, *Tramandahy* which also runs from the serra, becomes enriched by the waters of sundry lakes, and after a course of 11 leagues enters the Atlantic at about 11 leagues from Mampituba. To the south, *Rio Grande* has already been studeed; the little stream *Chuy*, is important as a boundary to the Empire. Of these

it is the River "Grande" or great canal, which is the only one that permits the entrance or exit of vessels, under difficulties, however, which in its competent place were mentioned in the first part of this book.

But besides these, the rivers which carry their waters to the Ocean through the channels and outlets of important lakes are numerous and more notable.

The *Jacuhy* the greatest width of which is 200 meters, navigable, and winding, receives the *Juahy Ingahy*, nearly 20 others, and among them the important *Vaccacahy*, and *Taquary*, and forms the *Guahyba*, that discharges into the Lagôa dos Patos with the *Gravatahy*, *Tinos* and *Cahy*, secondary rivers.

The *Camaquam* which comes from the Serra de Santa Tecla, and opens into the Lagôa dos Patos, by three bars, bringing with it 15 tributaries.

The *S. Gonçalo* river or canal, of which the navigation is important to commerce, with its tributaries, the small stream *Pelotas*, also navigable, river *Piratinim* of more modest pretensions as to navigation; the small streams *Meio*, *Tamandua*, *Santa Maria* and the small stream *Pedras*.

The *Jaguarão* having its source in the *Serra de Asseguá*, a vassal of the Lagõa-mirim, with 13 tributaries and an unimpeded navigation to the city bearing its name, and even free for one league above it. The geographico-political importance of this river cannot be unknown and it is already marked in the general study of the boundaries of the Empire.

On account of their lesser importance, other rivers which find outlets in the channels of lakes are left in oblivion.

In the western basin, or that of *Uruguay*, a river which was studied in the general hydrographical system of Brazil, notable rivers discharche themselves; the simple

mention of their names would be very easy; the Uruguay, however, is so interesting, not only in a point of view purely geographical, but also in its character of a boundary and therefore political, that the following notice from the *Quadro Estatistico e Geographico* already cited, should be permitted to be quoted, and that thankfully. He says:

„*Western basin, or that of Uruguay.* This great and majestic river has its source in the *Serra do Mar*, in the province of Santa Catharina, flowing under the name of Pelotas as far as the bar of the small stream which separates the province of Santa Catharina from that of Paraná. The chief water courses that feed it at its head waters are the small streams Correntes, Marombas, Cachorros, and Canôas, all of which have their origin in the *Serra do Mar*.

„Under the name of Pelotas it separates the province of Rio Grande from that of Santa Catharina, and under the name of Uruguay it separates the province from that of Paraná and from the Argentine Confederation.

„Its course is estimated at 250 leagues, of which 150 in the territory of Brazil, having its mouth opposite to the island of Martim Garcia, and forming with the waters of the Paraná the river Plata. It runs in a general westerly direction as far as Salto Grande, which lies at a distance of 1 league and 300 fathoms below the bar of Pepiry-guassú. From this point forward, it runs in a south-westerly direction, as far as the ancient populated place of S. Marcos, where it takes a southwardly direction to its mouth. In various parts of its course, the Uruguay has the following breadth.

„At the pass of Goyen, at where this province communicates with that of Paraná, 113 fathoms. Facing the bar of Xapecó, 200 fathoms, facing the bar of Pepiry-Guassú, 219½ fathoms.

„There are in the Uruguay two points sufficiently notable, which divide it into two parts very distinct, in relation to

its geography and its qualifications for navigation; the *Salto Grande*, 1 league and 300 fathoms below the mouth of the Pepiry-Guassú, and the *Salto Oriental* below the Uruguayana. The first is comprised within the parallels of 27 to 28 degrees, and the latitude by observation, 27° 8′ 18″5, and longitude 0° 11′ 1″ 7 west of the Meridian of Porto Alegre.

„The second between the said Salto Grande, and the Oriental which lies in 31 ° 12′ south latitude.

„From the *Salto Oriental* downwards, the level of the waters of the Uruguay is said to be the same as that of the sea.

„The tributaries of the Uruguay are, counting from their origin: l. Silveira, Divisa, Sant' Anna and Socorro. r. Canôa. l. Passo-Fundo, Forquilha, Lageado. r. Timbó, division between Santa Catharina and Paraná. l. Uruguay-Mirim, or Rio do Passo-Fundo, that descends from the parallel of 28° south and discharges in the Uruguay in 27° 15′, small stream do Tigre, small stream das Ariranhas. r. Xapecó, or Novo Pepiry-Guassú of the Spaniards, which internates through the province of Paraná, and that was considered by the Spanish commissioners of 1789 and 1790, as the boundary river between the Portugueze and Spanish possessions; Negro—so called recently, and which penetrates into the province of Paraná. l. Uruguay-Puytan, or Rio da Varzea, which has its source in the parallel of 28°. r. Two rivers, the names of which are not known; Rio Sertão. l. Rio Pardo, Cebollaty ou Guarita. r. Apeterehy. l. Arroyo-Pary. r. Pepiry-Guassú in lat. 27° 9′ 53″ 9, boundary between the province of Paraná and that of Corrientes, Arroyo Itajoá. l. Rio Turvo or Albery, which has its rise in latitude 27° 29′ 13″ 9 and 0° 9′ 0″ 9 longitude west of Porto Alegre, Nhocorá, Santa Rosa, Santo Christo or Pindahy, Boa Vista, Com-mandahy or Albutuhy, Ijuhy formed by the two branches, Ijuhy

Grande and Ijuhy Pequeno: it has its rise in lat. 29° 2′ 47″ 6 south, and in 0° 10′ 36″ 9 west longitude, of the meridian of Porto Alegre, and discharges in the Uruguay in lat. 27° 55′ south. The Salto de Pirapó is in the Ijuhy. Piratinim, has its rise in the Serra Geral, and discharges in the Uruguay opposite the ancient village of Conceicão, Arroyo Omanohá, Arroyo Urucutahy, Camaquam, Arroyo da Estiva, Arroyo de Santa Luzia, Arroyo Butuhy, Ibicuhy, this great river rises beyond the Serra de S. Martinho, from whence it comes with name of Ibicuhy-Mirim, running on till it becomes confluent with the river Toropi in the direction of south-east, and taking at this point a western direction.

„It has for tributaries: r. Rio Toropi. l. small stream of Gaugeupy, river of Santa Maria, which rises in the branch of the *Serra Geral*, which has the local name of *Coxilha de Sant' Anna*. It runs generally in a northerly direction, receiving the following tributaries: l. stream of Ponche verde. r. Stream of S. Anna. l. Stream of Don Pedrito. r. River Vaquarembó, river Jaquary, which has as tributaries: r. stream Sauce. l. Stream Ibaró, stream Santo Antonio, *Ibicuhy-Mirim* or *da Armada;* it has as tributaries: Upicarahy, Upamoratim, Itaquatiá, Vacaquá. r. Stream Caceguay, l. Stream Saican, stream Tapevy. r. river Jaquary, principal tributary, Jaquary-Mirim. l. Stream Iguaquá, stream Carahy-Passo, river Ibirapuitan; it has for its tributaries: l. stream Pai-Passo. r. Caverá or Ibirapuytan-Chico. l. Inhanduy. r. S. Francisco. l. Stream Itapororó, river Ibirocahy, Jiquaqua or Sonchorim, stream Toropasso, stream Imbáa, two streams Salso, the town of Uruguayana lies between these two small streams, stream Itapitocay, stream Guarapuytan, stream Quarahim-Chico.

„River Quarahim. This river has its rise in the *Coxilha Grande*, in the ramification of the *Serra Geral*, which is called Coxilha de Haedo, and discharges in the Uruguay

in lat. 30° 11′ 12″ south, and longitude 14° 29′ 20″ west of the observatory of Rio de Janeiro. It serves as a boundary between the province of Rio Grande do Sul and the Republic of the Oriental State of Uruguay: it runs in a north westerly direction as far as the mouth of the small stream Camuatim, taking as this point a south westerly direction and afterwards runs west to its mouth.

„Its tributaries are: l. the stream da Invernada, by which is prolonged the divisional line with the Oriental state. r. Stream Catim; tributary: l. stream Sarandim; r. stream Areal, stream Quarahim-Mirim, stream Garopá, stream Camuatim, stream Caguaté, stream Capivary, stream Guapitanguy.

„Tributaries on the left bank: or oriental streams Invernada, Sepulturas, Catalan, Pintada, Tres Cruzes, Guaró, Rio Jucutuá."

Of the principal lakes of the province of S. Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul we have treated in the eighth chapter of the first part—in the study of the general hydrography of the Empire.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* Is one of the richest and already made much mention of in the general study; there is gold, silver, pyrites, iron in its different compositions, copper, galena, lead, kaolin, porphyry, marbles of excellent quality &c., topazes, cornelian, opals, emeralds, most beautiful rock crystal and in great quantity, &c. Coal abounds in many places.

*Vegetable kingdom.* In the *Serra Geral*, and in its ramifications which extend through the centre of the province, and in the valleys of the great rivers, there are forests and woods, which excellent timber for building purposes offer, such as rosewood, ipé, canella preta and parda, iron-wood,

cedar, vinhatico &c. In the upper part of the region of the Uruguay (river) vast pine forests are met with.

Salsaparilla, ipecacuanha, cipó mucunã, and many other vegetables employed as medicines are found. The immense plains of the province, which occupy a territory or area much more considerable than that covered with woods and forests, are distinguished by being *clean* plains, where there are no woods, no clumps of forest trees, scrub, &c. and *serrados*, where appear those limited *capoes*, woods of small growth and extent.

*Animal kingdom.* Is the same as in the other provinces.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The province of São Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul, could equal in quality and exceed in variety of agricultural produce the richest provinces of the Empire: for its most fertile soil lends itself admirably to the cultivation of all plants that the farmer explores in the other provinces, and to those which belong to its natural conditions, and to the climate of Europe, and principally southern Europe; but that most productive industry of cattle breeding restricts agriculture, which notwithstanding flourishes relatively, owing to the industry of the inhabitants of the serras, and of the forest-zone, and by the vivifying aid of colonization. Sugar-cane and the cereals, that are common allover the Empire, linseed, barley pearl and common, rye, wheat, oats, lentils, painço, raps (colza), amendoim, potatoes of the Country, and English, cotton, flax, hemp, tobacco, &c. are cultivated with the greatest advantage. In the gardens which supply markets and avail in a very small way of exportation, almost all the indigenous fruits of Brazil are to be picked out, as well as others, and without exception, the *best* European fruits and in exceedingly great abundance.

The predominant industry which occupies the greatest part of the population of the interior is that of the breeding of cattle — which is divided into the work of the *Estancias*, and of the *Charqueadas:* the *Estancias* represent the breeding and the living animals; the *Charqueadas*, the killing of the oxen, and the preparation of the meat, and the processes of preparing the hide, the horns and the other produce of those animals, condemned to serve the interests and utility of man. The breeding industry finds great advantage from the sale and export into the interior of horses and mules.

The gathering and preparing of the herb *Maté* is another industry by which the population of the *serras* of the north, as well as those of the south, and centre of the province gain very considerably.

Mineral wealth opens new and flattering *views* to this beautiful part of the Empire; the coal mines announce sources of wealth: an English company is exploring the mines of *Arroyo dos Ratos*, another company, also English, those of *Candiota*, and are endeavouring to connect them to the Rio Grande by a railway. Besides these, concessions have been made for mining sulphate of copper and other minerals on the banks of the river *Quaraim*.

Besides those chief sources of industry and of *extractum carnis*, which is of great importance, the province has manufactories of sundry kinds of wine, rum, liqueurs of the finest kind of peach, limes, water melons, &c. of red and white wine (in the colonies), of soap, snuff, cigars, woven fabrics, and many others.

The trade is considerable and most lively: besides its subsidiary resources, the sundry productions from the breeding and rearing of cattle, give to the province the chief article of export revenue, while in the interior, the colonies which live regularly by agriculture and horticulture, and the agricultural population of the *serras* benefit by all the

fruit of their labour in the consumptive requirements of the cities and of the neighbouring municipalities.

The importance and high value of the commerce of the province of São Pedro do Rio Grande do Sul may be calculated by its great extent compared with the ungratefulness and the danger of its only artery of communication directly with the Ocean—the river or canal of Rio Grande. Besides this, as a palpable proof of progress there are the railroads, either being constructed or contracted, *of the South of the province:* of *Rio Grande or Candiota* (an English company): *Railroad to Santa Catharina*: that of *Porto Alegre to Hamburger-Berg by S. Leopoldo*, &c.; the development of the electric telegraph line must not be forgotten. Finally the banks and banking houses, and English and Italian bank agencies established in the capital and in the most considerable cities, bear testimony to the greatness of the commerce, and to the riches of the province.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 440,000 inhabitants of which 360,000 are free and 80,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 3 senators, 6 deputies of the general assembly, and 39 of the provincial, the province being divided into 2 electoral districts, with a total of 566 electors, and 39,671 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard*, with 17 superior commands, 5 battalions, and 2 sections of battalion of infantry, 1 section of battalion of artillery, and 50 corps and 8 squadrons of cavalry on active service, and 12 battalions, and 22 sections of battalion of reserve, presenting 15,833 national guards on active service, and 10,780 in reserve, total 26,613.

*Police corps:* 356 men (effective force).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary*: 165 schools for males with 4715 pupils, 90 for females with 2878 pupils; *private primary*: schools for both sexes, 109 with 2935 pupils (males) and 1467 females. *Public secondary:* 3 establishments for males with 47 pupils, and 3 for females with 97 pupils.

The schools of both sexes of primary private instruction, are not mentioned separately, because many of them are mixed.

Information is wanting on secondary private instruction.

Among the schools of secondary public instruction should be particularly mentioned the *Lyceo Rio-grandense* and the *Escola Normal.*

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Rio Grande do Sul is divided and sub-divided into districts, towns and parishes, as follow:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Porto Alegre | 1. Porto Alegre (city a. cap.) | 1. N. S. Madre de Deos. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario. |
| | | 3. N. S. das Dôres. |
| | | 4. N. S. de Belém. |
| | | 5. N. S. da Conceição do Viamão. |
| | | 6. N. S. dos Anjos d'Aldêa. |
| | | 7. N. S. do Livramento das Pedras Brancas. |
| | 2. S. Leopoldo (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de S. Leopoldo. |
| | | 2. S. Christina do Pinhal. |
| | | 3. N. S. de Sant' Anna do Rio dos Sinos. |
| | | 4. S. José do Hortencio. |
| | | 5. S. Miguel dos Dous Irmãos. |
| | 3. Camaquam (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista de Camaquam. |
| | | 2. N. S. das Dôres de Camaquam. |
| | 4. Triumpho (t.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus do Triumpho. |
| | | 2. S. João do Monte Negro. |
| | 5. S. Jeronymo (t.) | 1. S. Jeronymo. |
| | 6. Taquary (t.) | 1. S. José do Taquary. |
| | 7. S. Amaro (t.) | 1. S. Amaro. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 2. S. Antonio da Patrulha | 1. S. Antonio da Patrulha (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Patrulha. |
| | | 2. S. Francisco de Paula de Cima da Serra. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Oliveira da Vaccaria. |
| | | 4. S. Paulo da Lagôa Vermelha. |
| | 2. Conceicão do Arroio (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Arroio. |
| | | 2. S. Domingos das Torres. |
| 3. Bagé. | 1. Bagé (c.) | 1. S. Sebastião de Bagé. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Pedrito. |
| | 2. S. Anna do Livramento (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista de Quarahy. |
| | | 2. Sant' Anna do Livramento. |
| 4. Alegrete | 1. Alegrete (c.) | 1. N. S. d'Apparecida do Alegrete. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario de Saican. |
| | 2. Uruguayana (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Uruguayana. |
| 5. São Borja | 1. S. Borja (t.) | 1. S. Francisco de Borja. |
| | | 2. S. Luiz de Missões. |
| | 2. Itaqui (t.) | 1. S. Patricio de Itaqui. |
| | | 2. S. Francisco de Assis. |
| | | 3. S. Thiago do Boqueirão. |
| 6. Cruz Alta | 1. Cruz Alta (t.) | 1. Espirito Santo da Cruz Alta. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio da Palmeira. |
| | | 3. S. Angelo. |
| | 2. Passo Fundo (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Passo Fundo. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Soledade. |
| 7. Rio Pardo | 1. Rio Pardo (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario do Rio Pardo. |
| | | 2. S. Cruz. |
| | 2. Cachoeira (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Cachoeira. |
| | 3. Encruzilhada (t.) | 1. S. Barbara da Encruzilhada. |
| | | 2. S. José do Patrocinio. |
| 8. Rio Grande | 1. Rio Grande (c.) | 1. S. Pedro do Rio Grande. |
| | | 2. N. S. das Necessidades do Povo Novo. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição do Tahim. |
| | | 4. S. Victoria do Palmar. |
| | 2. Pelotas (c.) | 1. S. Francisco de Paula de Pelotas. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio da Bôa Vista. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição do Boquete. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição do Boqueirão. |
| | 3. S. José do Norte (t.) | 1. S. José do Norte. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Estreito. |
| | | 3. S. Luiz de Mostardas. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 9. Piratiny | 1. Piratiny (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Piratiny. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Luz das Cacimbas. |
| | 2. Jaguarão (c.) | 1. Espirito Santo do Jaguarão. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Graça do Arroio Grande. |
| | | 3. S. João Baptista do Herval. |
| | 3. Cangussú (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Cangussú. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario do Cerrito. |
| 10. Caçapava | 1. Caçapava (c.) | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção de Caçapava. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio das Lavras. |
| | | 3. Sant' Anna da Bôa Vista. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição de S. Sepé. |
| | 2. S. Gabriel (c.) | 1. S. Gabriel. |
| | 3. Bôca do Monte (t.) | 1. S. Maria da Bôca do Monte. |
| | | 2. S. Martinho. |
| | | 3. S. Vicente. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Porto Alegre*, the city and capital of the province, advantageously situated on the right bank of the Guayba in a peninsula that extends from east to west; it is of great commercial importance, and the emporium of commerce of all the north of the province, having besides this sundry industries and factories well mounted. Its streets are built in line: its best buildings besides elegant private houses are the provincial Lyceum, the palace of the Government, the palace of the assembly and that of the municipality, the parish church of Nossa Senhora das Dores, and the gothic Church of the Menino Deos (infant Jesus) a fine theatre, a prison, a house of charity, the war hospital, and the custom-house: it moreover recommends itself from its fine situation.

*Rio Grande*, city and ancient capital of the captaincy, is situated on the river or rather canal of its name, at 3 leagues from the bar of the same name; it is the first commercial *entrepot* of navigation to and from foreign ports, and the seat of foreign commercial intercourse. Its port, notwithstanding is has been improved by art, it neverthe-

less scanty and does not satisfy the necessities of navigation on a great scale and of large vessels which seek it. *The city is closed* on the south side by trenches with parapets; it has a custom-house, good buildings belonging to private persons, and, in an agreeable position, it is beset all round by the sands.

*Pelotas;* an interesting city on the left bank of the *S. Gonçalo*, regularly traced on a well drawn plan, it occupies a very important position in its relation with the principal places of population on the divisional line of this province with the Oriental State.

Around this town are the most considerable establishments for preparing the jerked beef. It has a daily line of steamers which communicate with Rio Grande from which it is distant 9 leagues.

It is commercial and rich.

*Jaguarão,* a city situated on the left bank of the river of its name, and facing the town of *Artigas*, of the Oriental State, situated on the opposite bank of the same river. It appears on a slightly elevated hill; it has buildings of the regular pattern, and by its position maintains commercial relations with the neighbouring state, and with the cities of *Rio Grande* and *Pelotas*, by steam navigation through the *Lagôa Mirim.*

*Bagé*, a city which rises on the frontier of the Empire adjoining the Oriental State, at 50 leagues distance from the city of *Rio Grande*, with which and with *Pelotas* it keeps up a large trade, and not less so with the neighbouring state; it is the centre of intercourse of the Rio Grande estate proprietors established in the Oriental plains, and a notable strategic point of the divisional line, having for that reason greatly increased, which promises its becoming one of the finest cities of the interior of the province.

*Alegrete*, a city on the left bank of the *Iberapuitá*, a tributary of the *Ibicuhy;* it had for its cradle a military encampment, without a plan of permanent population or industrial conditions, and is situated in a rough soil and which is incapable of culture, and even so, it goes on increasing, for it is the centre of great cattle breeding estates, and of the wealth arising from that industry; its commerce is limited to the necessities of the local consumption.

*S. Gabriel*, a city on the river *Vaccacahy* in a smiling and agreeable situation, but where the Vaccacahy is not navigable; it presides over a territory abounding in breeding estates, and maintains commercial relations of some importance with the cities of *Rio Grande* and *Porto Alegre.*

*S. Leopoldo*, a modern city on the left bank of the river *dos Sinos;* it was born a German colony in 1824, and from the greatness of its population, from their customs, and from the natural and benign influence of this population over the immigration of the same nation which continues arriving at the province, it still preserves a certain Germanic character. It is in a progressive state and prospers by the agriculture and the industry of its district: it is built regularly and it has many well mounted factories, and extracts from its horticulture, from its fabrication of wines and liqueurs, from its tanneries and other industries, considerable advantage.

*Rio Pardo*, a city on the left bank of the river Jacuhy, one of the most ancient cities of the province, connected to the capital by a line of steamers, which at the high floods of the river go as far as Cachoeira. Its parish church is an important temple, and remarkable for the perfection of its images. It has a spacious Misericordia hospital. In Rio Pardo was established the military school of the province, now extinct.

*Cachoeira*, a city situated on the left bank of the *Jacuhy* fell greatly into decay during the war with Paraguay; it has a fine parish church and a good municipal chamber and jail.

*Caçapava*, a city situated on a steep eminence, and is considered the most strategic position in the province.

*Uruguayana*, is a commercial town with a custom-house, and a good port on the Uruguay at the frontier, and the door of commerce of the province through the basin of the Plata. Estigaribia, a general of Lopes, the dictator of Paraguay, having in 1865 invaded the province of Rio Grande do Sul, occupied *Uruguayana*, and being surrounded without the possibility of retreat, he gave himself up as a prisoner of war, together with the corps of the army under his command, to the Emperor of Brazil Senhor Dom Pedro II. and to the generals of the Brazilico-Platense alliance.

*São Borja*, a town at a little more than a kilometer from the left bank of the river Uruguay, on the western frontier of the province. It was occupied by the Paraguayans under Estigarribia on the 16th June 1865. Its municipality forms a part of the territory which constituted in former times the western jesuitical missions of Uruguay. In its suburbs, the French botanist Bonpland, the companion of Humbold in his voyage to the equatorial regions of America, lived for some years, in a rustic cottage.

*S. José do Norte*, a town on the canal called Rio Grande, about 2 leagues to the east of this city; it therefore rises between the "Lagôa dos Patos", and the Atlantic, or rather between the city of Rio Grande and the navigation by sea; it does not suffer a little from the obstruction of the bar: it is, however, more accessible to vessels which do not draw more than 12 feet of water, it flourishes relatively as a vassal, or as availing itself of the disadvantages of the navigation of the canal of the city of

Rio Grande, with which city it is far from being able to compete. It has an encouraging commerce, good houses, excellent water for drinking: but suffers considerably from the oscillation of the sands constantly kept up by the prevailing winds.

Besides these cities there are many towns, besides the three pointed out, which merit distinguished mention, but which are passed over for want of space.

Each one of those cities and towns mentioned and unmentioned have a more or less remarkable, a more or less brilliant or mournful story for the page of history; for all of them retain the remembrance of struggles, and some of them of battles, without exception lamentable for humanity, some, however, horrible, for they were fratricidal, and others sad and always causing compunction on account of the accursed recourse of war, but at all events brilliant from the splendid victories obtained by the Brazilian arms, whose worth and glory were never sullied, even in *Ituzaingo*, where the enemy, upon that only occasion, unexpectedly master of the field, confessed that he was about to fall back vanquished, and dit not dare to attack the Brazilian battalions who retired sad but calm and tranquil, and so calm and high spirited were they that they awaited, in vain, attacks which must have been pregnant of consequences, if there had been a real conqueror on the 20th February 1827. *Ituzaingo* was a shadow, and not a rout of the Brazilian army, it was a simple retreat in a battle which was almost won, and in which the enemy *did not take a single colour* from the battalions which fought, and only boasted of *some standards seized* among the baggage which his cavalry managed to surprise and pillage without a struggle. The trophies which Brazil boasts of are not of that nature; they are other and much nobler. Those Brazil could have already torn from them with the conquering hand, where they, vaingloriously, are exhibited,

but left them without giving importance to the ridiculous boasting.

## COLONIZATION AND CIVILIZATION OF THE INDIANS.

The province established and maintains seven colonies, with the denominations, population and area, as follows:

| *Colonies.* | *Area.* | *Population.* |
|---|---|---|
| Santa Cruz . . . . | 18 square leagues . . | 4474 |
| Santo Angelo . . . | 4 » » . . | 1426 |
| Nova Petropolis . . | 15 » » . . | 1420 |
| Mont' Alverne . . . | 1½ » » . . | 389 |
| Conde d'Eu . . . . | 16 » » . . | 50 |
| D. Izabel . . . . . | — » » . . | — |
| S. Feliciano . . . . | 3¼ » » . . | — |

There are 2 private colonies: that of *S. Lourenço*, of which Jacob Rheingantz is the founder, and that of *S. Luiz:* of the former, information is wanting: in the second, the produce increased, and there had been no complaint up to 1872.

The colony *Caseros* is military, it was founded in 1859 and has had no increase.

The European immigration to Rio Grande do Sul was 470 Persons in 1870 and 369 in 1871; this diminution in lieu of increase of immigrants was owing to the opposition of the Prussian government, against which the Germans established in the province protested.

The ancient colony of S. Leopoldo, the history of which has already been lightly sketched in another place, is the best incentive and the great encourager of German immigration; for the informants are Germans unbiassed in declaring the salubrity of the climate, the fertility of the soil and the friendly hospitality which the province offers. The immigrants who continue to arrive, are at once the recipients of those kind and great favours of the country

and the population, and find roofs to shelter them, temples and a religion, that they follow, schools for their children, lands of which they can easily become proprietors, and besides that the Imperial government assists with a large sum of money the introduction of families of immigrants.

The religious instruction and civilization of the Indians still continues very discouraging. There barely exist in the divers *toldos*, and under some caciques 690 savages, approaching toward civilized life, being 198 men, and 253 women, and 239 minors under 14 years, of the ancient villaged Indians of Nonohay, from which they went scattering themselves with their respective caciques over the municipalities of the *Passo Fundo* and *Cruz Alta*, and living upon the produce of their hunting, fishing and some on that of farming.

# CHAPTER XIX.

## PROVINCE OF MINAS GERAES.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

The first knowledge of the territories which form a part of this great province was obtained in 1573, the year in which Sebastião Fernandez Tourinho, an inhabitant of the vicinity of Porto Seguro, went up the river Doce, and afterwards went as far into the interior as the *Jequitinhonha*, which river he descended, bringing with him accounts of emerald mines. To ascertain the truth of this auspicious news, Antonio Dias Adorno, taking with him one hundred and fifty colonists, and four hundred Indians, six or seven years afterwards went up the *Cricaré*, and advancing by land as far as beyond the mountain ranges, went as far as the lake *Vupabussú* and returned as Tourinho did by the *Jequitinhonha*, to give the Governor General Lourenço da Veiga most animating information respecting the riches of those deserts.

The backwoodsmen of S. Paulo made frequent incursions into those and into neighbouring places; but exclusively given up to hunting down the savage Indians, who were worth gold and precious stones to them, whose minds being preoccupied, could not see them in the rivers which they crossed, and in the interior which they scanned. In 1598 they were incited by the Governor General Dom Francisco de Souza to undertake expeditions for the dis-

covery of mines; little, however, was obtained by the same; and he was not more fortunate in 1608, in which year he returned to Brazil to be the governor general of the captaincies of the south, purposely to animate the reconnoitering and exploration of the mines, of which he had already commenced to be named the superintendent in 1607.

That there were mineral treasures in the already famous interior, was certain: there were wanted intrepid and daring discoverers, who could then only be found among the race and legendary spirit of the inhabitants of S. Paulo: and it was they: for in 1662 Augusto Barbalho, and Fernando Dias Paes, with intrepid bands they penetrated into the bosom of immense deserts to the north of the town of S. Paulo; the first gathered a harvest of emeralds; the second made known the river *Itamarandiba* (it was either he or his son-in-law, Borba Gato, if it be certain that he had died before arriving at S. Paulo, on his return) in whose sands gold was commingled with precious stones.

There are confused traditions which tell of another and a more important exploration of the same Fernando Dias, who went as far as the Serro Frio, obtaining still much greater advantages, again in the *Itamarandiba*, and in the *Anhonhecanhuva*, the death of that chief of backwoodsmen taking place on his return journey, which appears more likely and to be founded on better grounds; for his brother Garcia Rodrigues Paes, in complement to the deceased backwoodsman, received in 1683 the title of captain general of the emerald mines:

The impulse was given to the indomitable and impetuous Paulists. Amongst others Bartholomeo Bueno, who being reduced to poverty, *from his extravagance*, as Ayres Cazal tells us, went together on an *exploring expedition* in search of mineral riches with some more chiefs of bands of men in 1694; Manoel Garcia, and Colonel Salvador

Fernandez followed soon after, and the gold which they brought with them was the cause of the establishing a smelting house in *Taubaté*: the gold, the emeralds, the treasures which the rivers and the earth offered to them as an easily gathered harvest, cooled their feverish ardor of hunting the Indians, which commenced to become subordinate, and afterwards barely incidental in the overpowering effort to become wealthy through the natural riches, and exuberant auriferous and diamantine soil, and brought about the rampant creation and development of a multiplicity of hamlets in those places, in which the precious minerals most abounded.

Riches were attainable by all, and for that reason, unbridled covetousness began to shew itself and there immediately commenced the gold war. Numerous bands of adventurers, naturally for the most part Portuguese, among whom there were even two friars, who set an example of most riotous conduct—flocked to those lands which were then called *Minas Geraes dos Cataguás* (name given to them by the Coroado Indians who inhabited them). The coming, and the excesses practised by such companions displeased the Paulists, to whose labour and sacrifices alone was owing the first and most difficult and dangerous discovery of the mines; they considered themselves insulted by the arrogance, and even by the simple pretension of the new comers to compete with them on equal terms. Hatred was engendered, and bloody fights soon took place between the backwoodsmen of S. Paulo, and the Portuguese, whom the former called *emboabas* or strangers.

In both factions excesses were committed, as well as condemnable violence, and rough actions: the Paulists had all the defects of their high qualities, and immoderate pride based on their inexceedable prowess: their then chief in Minas Geraes, the valiant and terrible Domingos da Silva Monteiro, who boasted of being more powerful than the

Pope, because the latter took great pains to get a soul into paradise, where as he without fatiguing himself sent many souls to hell: the strangers without the boasting precedents of the Paulistas, abased themselves by their low habits and by the demoralization proper to people without any moral check, or order, and only impelled by the ardent desire of suddenly making a great fortune, men of straw who dreamed of opulence: their chief was Manuel Nunes Vianna, intrepid, daring, ambitious, and so false as to be treacherous.

Both went on fighting till 1708, carrying on a hot struggle on the bank of the river, which then, and for that reason, received the name of Rio das Mortes (river of the death): the strangers were put to the rout, and left the field covered with their dead; but immediately after Nunes Vianna sued for peace and reconciliation, deceived the Paulists by his apparent humiliation of a conquered man, and catching them unawares routed them and pursued them pitilessly, obliging them to fly to S. Paulo, where, tradition says, and it is received by history, the mothers and the wives of the backwoodsmen, for the first time conquered, refused to embrace their sons and husbands, telling them to seek prompt and immediate vengeance, which might wash out the stain of their defeat.

It is certain and positive that Nunes Vianna took upon himself in Minas Geraes such importance, that besides being acclaimed by his people governor general of the Mines, he repulsed the governor of Rio de Janeiro, Dom Fernando Martins de Mascarenhas, who came with some troops with the intention of re-establishing tranquillity and of placing the territory of Minas Geraes dos Cataguás under legal authority. And it is also certain and positive that the Paulists commenced returning to the charge thirsting for vengeance, and that fresh combats were about to begin, when opportunely the court of Lisbon pardoned all

the insurgents, and by Royal letters patent of 3rd November 1709, created the captaincy of S. Paulo, and made Minas independent of that of Rio de Janeiro, and gave it for governor the energetic and able Antonio de Albuquerque, to whom Nunes Vianna made obedience in the village of Caeté, and the Paulists, and the whole population already great subjected themselves without opposition or ill will.

About this time began the administrative, and regular life of this vast territory of Minas Geraes then already populated and flourishing, so much so that Antonio de Albuquerque considered that he ought to create in 1711 the towns of Ribeirão do Carmo, and Villa Rica (Ouro Preto) and Sabará, and a regiment of cavalry of the line to do duty in all the district of Minas; and his successor, Dom Braz da Silveira, raised to the categories of towns in the year 1714 the villages of *Caeté*, *Principe*, and *Pitangui*, and a short time afterwards divided the immense part of those lands belonging to his government, into four districts, with the names of Villa Rica, Rio das Mortes, Sabará, and Serro Frio, names which call to mind, as well as those of other towns and villages, most rich auriferous soil, where exploration, and justifiable greed raised with electric ardor, spots of population flatteringly brilliant, but of precarious future opulence, for as a source of opulence they had the mines of gold which could not be inexhaustible.

In the mean time, when any of the old mines became less lucrative, ten new ones were discovered which yielded still more than that had, and thus the population of Minas augmented, which not taking warning from the disturbances and fights of 1708, again in 1720 revolted in order to prevent the establishment of smelting houses, and against other measures: the Governor of S. Paulo and Minas, who was, then, the Count Assumar, managed to quell the revo-

lutionary declaration, and seize some of the principal chiefs —the creation of the captaincy of Minas Geraes followed this in the same year — independent of S. Paulo, ti was a matter of great and immediate advantage to it.

The diamonds and other precious stones were fresh incentives for the extraordinary development of the captaincy, which, already so rich, thought itself so strong, and already counted so many enlightened men in the second half of the eighteenth century, that in 1788 certain illustrious "Mineiros" commenced getting up a conspiracy to proclaim the independence and a republic in that part of Brazil, calculating also certainly on the adhesion of other parts, and perhaps of other captaincies: in 1789 that conspiracy was denounced, the chiefs in prison tried and sentenced to death in 1792, a penalty which was commuted to the harshest banishment for all of them, except only for the Ensign Joaquim José da Silva Xavier, nick-named *Tiradentes*, who ascended the scaffold on the 21st April of that year, leaving behind him a legendary name, which has justly been glorified in the Empire since 1822, and which for thirty years before that again had been glorified in the hearts of those Brazilians who aspired to the independence of their country.

The terror of 1792 did not smother the liberal sentiments of the Mineiros: in the brilliant public manifestations of the first months of 1822, the discordancy which made itself felt between some of the patriots of Minas Geraes, merely shewed a spirit of liberty of a more exalted and exigent nature, which otherwise became quieted under the influence of a rapid journey, and the fleeting but enthusiastically hailed presence of Dom Pedro, the prince regent, the then chief of the national Brazilian revolution.

During the first reign the province of Minas rendered itself notable by the rise of liberal ideas, preached up in its press, and by its deputies in parliament, and to its

glory sending to the temporary chamber of parliament, as its representative, a native of Rio de Janeiro, Evaristo Ferreira da Veiga, who was a model of *good sense*, of patriotism, and of virtue; a man who had few emulators, and not one superior in the pantheon of our worthies: at the time of the minority of the present Emperor, from 1831 to 1840, this same province shone forth preponderant through the influence of its renowned and distinguished parliamentarians, like Evaristo, with a conscientious feeling of duty, a heart centred in his country, and a heavenly mind; Bernardo de Vasconcellos, the first and till now—unequalled statesman since 1822; the priest Ferreira de Mello, who made up for the mediocrity of his learning by his indefatigable political activity, and by the strength of an iron will: Honorio Hermeto (afterwards Viscount and Marquis of Paraná) with his miraculous intuition, and unsurpassable memory, a devotion both exacting and also inexorable, and an imposing energy allied to despotism in the fervor and will of adopting any measure, and of triumph in the idea which he cherished; and besides those, many others illustrious aged men who still live and who being the objects of our veneration, have not yet, thank God, the sad right of death, in order to be likewise mentioned and their qualities not disputed by the party spirit of cotemporaries.

In 1833 there broke out, on the 22nd March, in the city of Ouro Preto, the capital of the province, a sedition among the soldiers and people, which was contagious in those feverish times, and which without bloodshed, or painful sacrifices, or their consequent vengeance, was quelled, and whose chiefs imprisoned and prosecuted, and some wandering about, received a pardon in the following year.

In 1842, two years after the proclamation of the majority of the Emperor Senhor Dom Pedro II., the same causes which then caused the Paulists to revolt, drove the

liberal party of Minas Geraes, into making illegal and armed demonstrations, which after some engagements of secondary importance, lost heart from the easy and complete overthrow and submission of its own party in S. Paulo, saw its forces beaten, and routed in Santa Luzia, on the 20th August, some of the principal chiefs of the revolutionary movement, and the remainders put to flight and hidden in places of shelter afforded by the devotion of friends, until in 1844 the enchanting balsam of amnesty put an end to the action of the law, and extinguished the political remembrance of the revolt, and of its consequences before the tribunals.

Since that time the province of Minas Geraes (and 30 years have now elapsed) has become more developed, and goes on its tranquil way, animated and hopeful of a splendid future.

Its gold mines are not yet exhausted, its immense desert plains still raise hopes of mineral treasures, its brooks, its diamantine sands, still afford stones which are a fortune in themselves; but better still than this its most fertile soil, its grassy meadows, fruitful and vivifying, have already laid the foundation of its not precarious or transitory opulence in the open field of industry and agriculture, more sure and invariable than the exploration of mines, which is, however, followed, and the occupation of cattle breeding, which supplies both the province itself, and the populous capital of the Empire, its obliged and dependent colony, as far as is concerned a supply of the principal and indispensable article of food for both rich and poor.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude of this province is all southern, and embraces the parallels of 13° 55′ and 23. The longitude is from 3° 33′ east, to 7° 48′ west.

Its greatest extent from north to south is 180 leagues from the right bank of the river *Carunhunha*, to the Borda da Matta on the southern frontier of S. Paulo; and from east to west 225 leagues from S. Clara on the river Mucury to the embouchure of the river Paranahyba in Rio Grande or Paraná. Its superficial extent is 20,000 square leagues.

## BOUNDARIES.

The province of Minas Geraes is bounded on the north by Bahia, on the south by the provinces of S. Paulo, and Rio de Janeiro, on the east by those of Bahia, Espirito Santo, and Rio de Janeiro, on the west by S. Paulo, Goyaz, and Matto Grosso.

The frontiers, concerning which however there are disputes as to territory, run, save sundry rights or pretensions, according to the following lines, in accordance with what may be read in the *Atlas do Imperio do Brazil* by Senator Candido Mendes.

## CLIMATE.

The great elevation above the sea of the greater part of the province makes this climate both very pleasant and healthy; it is only in the lowlands of the great rivers where the heat makes itself felt, and in places on the banks in less favourable situations for health, where intermittent fevers shew themselves in certain periods of the year.

The seasons are reduced to summer and winter, or the season of the rains, and the dry season. In the winter the temperature becomes considerably lower, and in the high valleys it freezes. In the summer, says Mr. Henry Gerber, "the temperature preserves a higher degree of heat, and reaches its extreme, ordinarily at the *veranico*, a certain time of cessation from rain and comparable to the dog days of Europe".

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The province of Minas Geraes, is the Queen-province for mountains, and as such takes the lead in the general orographic systems of the Empire: immense mountain ranges traverse it or stretch out on sundry sides: the mountain range of the *Espinhaço* gives it craggy valleys; that of the Vertentes from its ramifications, and from its lower elevation affords *plateaux* or high plains, some of which are very extensive. Great and numerous rivers divide the province, fertilize the valleys, and far stretching plains.

## OROGRAPHY.

With excellent method and proficiency Mr. Henry Gerber, in his work entitled *Noções Geographicas e Administrativas da Provincia de Minas Geraes*, makes this subject clear, so that it is necessary to follow him very close.

The Cordilleira of the *Espinhaço* crosses the province, and with its ramifications separates the basin of the River Grande or *Paraná* on the western side from those of São Francisco, and of other rivers which flow to the east; it bifurcates in the Serra do Mar of S. Paulo, and extends itself in a north-easterly direction, as far as the heights of Barbacena, with the generic name of *Mantiqueira*, continuing from thence, almost straight to the north, as far as the city of Diamantina; and again takes a north easterly direction passing on to the province of Bahia, in the neighbourhood of the town of Rio Pardo.

The mean elevation of this Cordillera does not much exceed 1000 metres above the level of the Atlantic. Its principal ramification is the mountain range which joined at the point called *Alto das Taipas*, a few leagues to the north of Barbacena, runs through the province, in an irregular manner, but in general from east to west, and divides the waters of the river S. Francisco from those of Rio Grande, having the ancient name of *Espigão Mestre*,

there are still others, and that of *Vertentes* which suits it better, for in its continuation to Goyaz and Matto Grosso, it forms the division of the great basins of Paraguay and Paraná to the south, and of S. Francisco and Amazonas to the north.

Each one of these two trunks of the Orographic system of Minas is composed of various groups and ramifications of serras, which Mr. Gerber has studied and sufficiently developed, but which cannot serve for the limited proportions of this book.

Let the groups, however, be remembered.

The system of mountain range of *Espinhaço* comprises 4 groups.

1st the group of the serra of *Mantiqueira;* 2nd of the serra of *Itacolomi;* 3rd of the Serra *Frio;* 4th of the Serra do *Itacambira.*

The system of the mountain range of the *Vertentes* to the rivers of *S. Francisco,* and *Grande,* comprises 4 groups; 1st, group of the *Serra das Vertentes,* properly so called with sundry other local names; 2nd, the *Serra da Canastra;* 3rd, the *Serra da Matta da Corda;* 4th, the *Serra dos Pyrenees,* which, however, comes from Goyaz.

Each one of these 8 groups of the principal mountain ranges, is composed of ramifications, and secondary serras, which are to be found in the orbit of the predominant range which gives its name to them; but their numbers are to be counted by tens.

The study made by Mr. Gerber is even clear and most useful in its account of those serras together with that of sundry rivers of the province.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

In his lucid work Mr. Gerber is as happy in the hydrographic description, as he has been in the orography; he gives 9 basins to the numerous rivers, that run through

the province of Minas Geraes: of those, that of the rivers *Grande*, *S. Francisco Jiquitinhonha*, and *Doce*, have already been either il or well or rapidly considered in the *first part* of this book.

It is necessary then only to mention the others.

Basin of the river *Pardo:* this river rises in the *Serra das Almas* (of the 3rd group of the *Vertentes*), it runs from the west to the east, receiving on its way sundry rivers of small importance, such as the *Preto*, *Agoa fria*, *S. João*, and *Mosquito*, in its course of 60 leagues; it leaves the province, runs on still for another 60 leagues in that of Bahia, and enters the sea opposite Canavieiras.

The basin of the *Mucury:* this river has from its source to the falls of *Santa Clara*, where it leaves the province, a course of barely 50 leagues, having received on its left the river of the *Americanas*, on the right the *Todos os Santos*, and the *Urucú*, and on the left the *Pampam*.

The other basins, which are those of *S. Matheos*, *Itabapuana*, and *Parahyba*, belong by right to the provinces of *Espirito Santo*, and *Rio de Janeiro*, in which these rivers were duly considered.

According to Mr. Gerber, the distribution of the superfice of the province of Minas Geraes by the sundry hydrographic basins is the following:

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| The basin of the river S. Francisco comprises . . . . . | 8800 | square | leagues. |
| That of the river Grande compr. | 4900 | » | » |
| » » » » Parahyba » | 700 | » | » |
| » » » » Itabapoana » | 80 | » | » |
| » » » » Doce » | 2300 | » | » |
| » » » » S. Matheos » | 100 | » | » |
| » » » » Mucury » | 400 | » | » |
| That of sundry rivers that disembogue in the sea between Porto Seguro, and Porto Alegre (in the province of Bahia) | 100 | » | » |

That of the river Jequitinhonha compr. 2200 square leagues.
» » » » Pardo . . » 420 » »
Superfice of the province 20,000 » »

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Saint Hilaire*, a wise and impartial judge, gave the following opinion on the nature and resources with which the Almighty gifted the province of Minas Geraes: "S'il existe un pays que jamais puisse se passer du reste du monde, ce sera certainement la province des mines".

Mr. Gleber, a distinguished German adds, being quite of the opinion of the communicative andjus t St. Hilaire: "It would, doubtless, only be to repeat a truth which is well known, by speaking of the riches and the power of producing with wlrich providence endowed this blessed soil of Minas, in whose bosom, and in whose extensive woods and plains an immense capital lies dormant, only awaiting labour, and intelligence, to call it forth to the benefit of society."

After these authorised appreciations of two distinguished foreigners, the humble Brazilian writer may well withdraw from eulogizing deservedly the province of Minas Geraes, limiting himself to the most succinct exposition.

*Mineral kingdom.* An immense deposit of all kinds of Minerals, above all of gold, and precious stones; almost all the territory of Minas, but principally that in which the formation is metamorphic, has already been treated on in the 9th chapter of the first part, in reference to its extraordinary mineral wealth, and for that reason a repetition is unnecessary: it is sufficient to add that in produce of this natural kingdom no country in the world, and none of the other provinces of Brazil, can compete with that of Minas Geraes.

*Vegetable kingdom.* Mr. Gerber distinguishes in Minas Geraes three zones of vegetation, the zone of the *wood*, that of the *plains*, and the *alpine*, and says that it would be

more than bold to attempt to classify and number all the vegetables that are to be met with in one of these zones.

The Cordilheira of the Espinhaço, forms, generally speaking, the division of the region of *woods* which is found to the south and to the east, with that of the *plains*, which extend to the north. The third region which can be compared to the *Alpine* of Europe, occupies the heights of the mountains from 1100 metres upwards: the woody region comprises a territory of almost 6000, and the plains and the alpine zone take up 14,000 square leagues. It is in the low parts contiguous to the great rivers, that Ayres Cazal and others point out, besides other vegetables employed in medicine, the ipecacuanha, columba, liquorice and jalap plants, a species of spikenard, &c., and trees of copal gum, the angica, gums mastic, benjamin and others. The copahyba (capivi) is not wanting. Fine flavoured fruits abound, as also much more so shrubs creepers and climbers, parasites bearing most beautiful flowers, the bromelias and orchids with their bunches of magnificent flowers being in countless numbers: the forests are both luxuriant and majestic.

All the naturalists who have visited this province have expressed their admiration of the vegetable kingdom.

Among the most notable timber for building purposes should be mentioned the ipê, the braúna, several kinds of rosewood, the sapucaia, the black and the brown canella, the peroba, cedar wood, the laurel, the licurana, the massaranduba, the sassafraz, &c.

The zone of the plains is humble in its vegetation, and save its *clumps* of wood, and isolated trees which, however, are found in sufficient variety, the soil is covered with grasses. The alpine zone presents a much poorer vegetation than that of the plains, according to what Mr. Gerber teaches us on this subject.

Ayres Cazal writing on this subject, without a precise knowledge of science, mentions, however, some other vegetables of considerable worth.

*Animal kingdom.* The distinguished German Engineer, already occasionally cited in the study of this province, says that the *fauna* of the same is still more admirable than the *flora:* nevertheless the fauna of Minas Geraes is more or less the same as that of the neighbouring provinces.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The culture of coffee, cotton, tobacco, and sugar-cane is prosperous in the province; that of Indian corn is remarkable for its extraordinary consumption, serving as food for man, when made into "farinha", and for animals in its crude state; that of beans, rice, mandioc, potatoes (of the Country as well as those called English), garden stuff, and indigenous fruits, and many exotics are produced in considerable quantities; which in general are not exported: corn, rye, indigo, and the grape vine are also cultivated, but on a small scale.

The chief sources of industry, besides that of agriculture, are the following: mining, cattle rearing, and cotton weaving. In textile fabrics, incontestibly, Minas Geraes exceeds Rio de Janeiro and Bahia in the merit of its productions; its towels, coverlets and saddle cloths, its cloth woven for trowers, imitating kerseymeres, has not its equal in Brazil, nor in the fabrics *purely* of *cotton*, from the factories of Europe and the United States of North America. In the industry of cattle rearing, there is that of the *bovine* race, with an annual export of 80,000 heads; that of *swines*, of which 80 to 100,000 are exported yearly; it is estimated that more than 4 millions are fattened every year, and that nearly 300,000 arrobas of fat bacon (toucinho) is exported: of *sheep*, which are less attended to, about 20,000 heads are

sent out of the province. The exportation is to Rio de Janeiro. Besides the breeding of these animals as the chief occupation, on a much smaller scale, that of horses, mules and goats is also carried on. To the industry of cattle breeding is joined that of making the cheeses which take the name of the province, which exports them in immense quantities, and that of hides, tanned half hides, which amount to considerable value. Some other humbler industries are not wanting, such as sweet preserves, and game preserved, apiculture, &c.

Being a central province, Minas Geraes has merely an export commerce dependent on her maritime neighbour; she latterly sought, and did not obtain what she had calculated on, or at present she has not for some of her municipalities a maritime mouth through the Mucury, between the provinces of Espirito Santo and Bahia, she exports a very small part of her produce through S. Paulo, through Bahia, and in the greatest and predominant part through the province of Rio de Janeiro, and capital of the Empire; through the former by the basin of the Parahyba, and in the direction of S. Fidelis and Campos, and into the latter by divers general roads which gave and still give it four directions, more or less in a state of depression owing to the patent and conquering influence of the Pedro II. railway. Such circumstances cast in the shade the immense commerce of Minas Geraes, which does not possess cities in its province worthy of its riches and its progress; for the great mass of its agricultural and industrial produce, comes direct and principally to Rio de Janeiro.

To form an idea of the commercial relations of the province of Minas, it is sufficient to remember that in 1868, the number of its agricultural and grazing estates exceeded 20,000, without reckoning on what the industrial textile and other less important factories ought to produce.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 1,500,000 inhabitants of which 1,200,000 free, and 300,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 10 senators, 20 deputies to the general assembly, and 40 to the provincial; the province being divided into 7 electoral districts with a total of 2987 electors and 161,596 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard* having 36 superior commanders, 105 battalions of infantry, 19 squadrons and 3 corps of cavalry in active service, and 12 battalions and 31 sections of battalions of reserve, shewing 71,929 national guards on active service, and 13,946 in reserve, total 85,875.

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary:* 399 schools for males, with 10,424 pupils, and 85 for females with 1778 pupils. *Private primary:* 78 schools for males, with 853 pupils, and 39 for females with 580 pupils. *Secondary public:* establishments for males 51 with 314 pupils.

Information is wanting on the private establishments of secondary instruction, which doubtless exist in Minas Geraes.

This province was very notable for its severe and careful study of the Latin tongue much better and more cultivated than it is now, and even for music, for it sent to the capital of the Empire, singers and instrumentists of well merited celebrity.

*Civil judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Minas Geraes is divided and sub-divided into districts, towns and parishes as follow:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Ouro Preto. | 1. Ouro Preto (city a. cap.) | 1. N. S. do Pilar do Ouro Preto<br>2. N. S. da Conceição de Antonio Dias.<br>3. S. Bartholomeu.<br>4. N. S. da Conceição de Antonio Pereira. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Ouro Preto | 1. Ouro Preto (city a. cap.) | 5. S. Antonio da Casa Branca. |
| | | 6. Conceição do Rio de Pedras. |
| | | 7. N. S. da Boa Viagem da Itabira do Campo. |
| | | 8. N. S. de Nazareth da Cachoeira do Campo. |
| | | 9. S. Antonio do Ouro Branco. |
| | | 10. N. S. da Piedade de Paraopéba. |
| | 2. Queluz (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Queluz. |
| | | 2. Capella Nova das Dôres. |
| | | 3. S. Amaro. |
| | | 4. S. Antonio de Itaverava. |
| | | 5. N. S. da Conceição de Congonhas do Campo. |
| | | 6. S. Gonçalo de Cattas Altas de Noruega. |
| | | 7. N. S. das Grotas do Brumado de Suassuhy. |
| | | 8. S. Braz de Suassuhy. |
| | | 9. Piedade da Boa Esperança. |
| | | 10. Lamim. |
| 2. Piranga | 1. Piranga (c). | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Piranga. |
| | | 2. S. Caetano do Chapotó. |
| | | 3. S. José do Chapotó. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Oliveira da Piranga. |
| | | 5. N. S. da Conceição do Turvo. |
| | | 6. S. Antonio do Calambáo. |
| | 2. Marianna (c.) | 1. N. S. d'Assumpção de Marianna. |
| | | 2. S. Sebastião dos Afflictos de Marianna. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição de Camargos. |
| | | 4. N. S. de Nazareth do Infeccionado. |
| | | 5. N. S. do Rosario do Sumidouro. |
| | | 6. S. Caetano do Ribeirão Abaixo. |
| | | 7. N. S. da Cachoeira do Brumado. |
| | | 8. Bom Jesus do Monte do Forquim. |
| | | 9. N. S. da Saúde. |
| | | 10. N. S. do Rosario de Paulo Moreira. |
| | | 11. S. José da Barra Longa. |
| | 3. Ponte Nova (c.) | 1. S. Sebastião da Ponte Nova. |
| | | 2. S. Cruz do Escalvado. |
| | | 3. S. Sebastião da Pedra do Anta. |
| | | 4. S. Simão. |
| | | 5. S. Helena da Cabelluda. |
| | | 6. N. S. da Conceição do Casca. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 2. Piranga | 3. Ponte Nova (c.) | 7. Jaquery.<br>8. Abre Campo.<br>9. S. José da Pedra Bonita. |
| 3. Pitangui | 1. Pitangui (c.) | 1. N. S. do Pilar de Pitangui.<br>2. Onça do Rio de S. João Acima.<br>3. N. S. do Bom Despacho.<br>4. Maravilha.<br>5. S. Gonçalo do Pará.<br>6. Sant' Anna do Rio de S. João Acima.<br>7. N. S. da Conceição do Pompeu. |
| | 2. Curvello (t.) | 1. S. Antonio do Curvello.<br>2. N. S. da Piedade dos Bagres.<br>3. Sant' Anna de Trahiras.<br>4. N. S. do Carmo do Taboleiro Grande.<br>5. Papagaio. |
| | 3. Indaia (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres de Indaiá.<br>2. N. S. do Patrocinio da Marmellada.<br>3. N. S. do Loreto da Morada Nova.<br>4. S. Antonio dos Tiros. |
| 4. Paraopeba | 1. Bom Fim (c.) | 1. S. do Bom Fim.<br>2. S. Sebastião do Itatiacossú.<br>3. N. S. da Piedade dos Geraes.<br>4. S. Gonçalo da Ponte.<br>5. N. S. das Necessidades do Rio do Peixe.<br>6. N. S. das Dôres da Conquista.<br>7. S. Antonio de Matheus Leme. |
| | 2. Pará (t.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade do Pará.<br>2. S. Miguel do Cajurú ou Carmo do Pará. |
| 5. Piracicava | 1. S. Barbara (c.) | 1. S. Antonio do Ribeirão de Santa Barbara.<br>2. S. Gonçalo do Rio Abaixo.<br>3. S. João Baptista do Morro Grande.<br>4. N. S. do Rosario de Cocaes.<br>5. Bom Jesus do Amparo do Rio de S. João.<br>6. S. Miguel de Piracicava.<br>7. Cattas Altas de Matto Dentro.<br>8. S. Domingos do Prata. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 5. Piracicava | 2. Itabira (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario do Itabira. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Carmo. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição do Cuithé. |
| | | 4. Sant' Anna dos Ferros. |
| | | 5. S. Maria. |
| | | 6. Parahyba do Matto Dentro. |
| | | 7. N. S. de Nazareth de Antonio Dias Abaixo. |
| | | 8. S. José da Lagôa. |
| | | 9. Sant' Anna do Alfié. |
| | 3. Conceição (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Matto Dentro. |
| | | 2. S. Domingos do Rio do Peixe. |
| | | 3. Capellinha das Dôres de Gunhães. |
| | | 4. S. Antonio da Tapéra. |
| | | 5. N. S. do Porto de Gunhães. |
| | | 6. N. S. do Pilar do Morro de Gaspar Soares. |
| | | 7. N. S. da Oliveira do Itambé. |
| 6. Rio das Velhas | 1. Sabará (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Sabará. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Lapa. |
| | | 3. S. Quiteria. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição de Raposos. |
| | | 5. N. S. do Pilar de Congonhas. |
| | | 6. S. Antonio do Rio Acima. |
| | | 7. N. S. da Boa Viagem do Curral d'El Rei. |
| | | 8. N. S. do Carmo da Capella Nova do Betim. |
| | | 9. S. Gonçalo da Contagem. |
| | 2. Caethé (c.) | 1. N. S. do Bom Successo de Caethé. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Madre de Deos de Roças Novas. |
| | | 3. SS. Sacramento de Taquarassú. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição do Jaboticatubas. |
| | 3. S. Luzia (c.) | 1. S. Luzia. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Saúde da Lagôa Santa. |
| | | 3. Senhor de Mattosinhos. |
| | 4. Sete Lagôas (t.) | 1. Sete Lagôas. |
| | | 2. SS. Sacramento do Jequitibá. |
| 7. Rio Pardo | 1. Grão Mogol (c.) | 1. S. Antonio de Itacambirissú da Serra do Grão Mogol. |
| | | 2. S. José de Gorutuba. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 7. Rio Pardo | 1. Grão Mogol (c.) | 3. Brejo das Almas. |
| | | 4. S. Antonio da Itacambira. |
| | 2. Rio Pardo (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Rio Pardo. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio das Salinas. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Graça do Tremedal. |
| 8. Jequitinhonha | 1. Minas Novas (c.) | 1. S. Pedro do Fanado de Minas Novas. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Graça da Capellinha. |
| | | 3. Santa Cruz da Chapada. |
| | | 4. N. S. da Conceição de Sucuriú. |
| | | 5. N. S. da Piedade de Minas Novas. |
| | | 6. N. S. da Conceição da Philadelphia. |
| | | 7. N. S. da Conceição de Agua Suja. |
| | 2. S. João Baptista (t.) | 1. S. João Baptista. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Penha de França. |
| | | 3. S. José de Jacury. |
| | | 4. SS. Coração de Jesus das Barreiras. |
| | 3. S. Antonio d'Arassuahy (t.) | 1. S. Antonio do Arassuahy. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio de Itinga. |
| | | 3. S. Sebastião do Salto Grande. |
| | | 4. S. Domingos do Arrassuahy. |
| 9. Gequitahi | 1. Montes Claros (c.) | 1. S. José e N. S. da Conceição de Montes Claros. |
| | | 2. S. do Bomfim. |
| | | 3. Sant' Anna d'Olhos d'Agua. |
| | | 4. Sant' Anna de Contendas. |
| | | 5. SS. Coração de Jesus. |
| | 2. Januaria (c) | 1. N. S. das Dôres da Januaria. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Amparo. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição de Morrinhos. |
| | 3. Guaicuhy (t.) | 1. N. S. do Bomsuccesso e Almas de Guaicuhy. |
| 10. Serro. | 1. Serro (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Serro. |
| | | 2. S. Antonio do Rio do Peixe. |
| | | 3. N. S. dos Prazeres do Milho Verde. |
| | | 4. S. Sebastião de Correntes. |
| | | 5. S. Antonio do Peçanha. |
| | | 6. N. S. da Penha do Rio Vermelho. |
| | | 7. São Miguel e Almas. |
| | 2. Diamantina (c.) | 1. S. Antonio da Diamantina. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Rio Manso. |
| | | 3. S. Gonçalo do Rio Preto. |
| | | 4. S. Antonio de Gouvêa. |
| | | 5. Santa Cruz da Chapada. |
| | | 6. N. S. da Conceição de Curimatahy. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 11. Rio de S. Francisco | 1. S. Romão (t.) | 1. S. Antonio da Manga de S. Romão.<br>2. S. José da Pedra dos Angicos. |
| 12. Paracatú | 1. Paracatú (c.) | 1. S. Antonio da Manga de Paracatú.<br>2. Sant' Anna de Burity.<br>3. Catinga.<br>4. Sant' Anna dos Alegres. |
| 13. Prata | 1. Uberaba (c.) | 1. S. Antonio e S. Sebastião da Uberaba.<br>2. S. Pedro da Uberabinha.<br>3. N. S. do Carmo do Frutal. |
| | 2. Prata (t.) | 1. N. S. do Carmo do Prata.<br>2. Boa Vista de Rio Verde.<br>3. S. Francisco de Salles.<br>4. S. José do Tijuco. |
| 14. Paranahyba. | 1. Bagagem (c.) | 1. N. S. da Mãe dos Homens da Bagagem.<br>2. N. S. do Amparo do Brejo Alegre.<br>3. N. S. do Carmo.<br>4. Sant' Anna do Rio das Velhas. |
| | 2. Araxá (c.) | 1. S. Domingos do Araxá. |
| | 3. S. Antonio dos Patos (t.) | 1. S. Antonio dos Patos.<br>2. N. S. do Carmo do Arraial Novo. |
| | 4. Patrocinio (t.) | 1. N. S. do Patrocinio.<br>2. Coromandel.<br>3. S. Sebastião da Serra do Salitre. |
| 15. Sapucahy | 1. Tres Pontas (c.) | 1. N. S. d'Ajuda de Tres Pontas.<br>2. Espirito Santo da Varginha.<br>3. Carmo do Campo Grande. |
| | 2. Lavras (c.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Lavras do Funil.<br>2. S. Bom Jesus dos Perdões.<br>3. S. João Nepomuceno de Lavras.<br>4. N. S. da Cachoeira do Carmo da Boa Vista. |
| | 3. Formosa (c.) | 1. S. José e Dôres de Alfenas.<br>2. S. Antonio da Sacra Familia do Machado.<br>3. N. S. do Carmo da Escaramuça.<br>4. S. João Baptista do Douradinho.<br>5. S. Joaquim. |
| | 4. Cabo Verde (t.) | 1. N S. d'Assumpção de Cabo Verde.<br>2. S. José da Boa Vista.<br>3. Conceição da Boa Vista. |
| | 5. Dôres da Boa Esperança (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres da Boa Esperança.<br>2. Espirito Santo dos Coqueiros.<br>3. S. Francisco do Agua Pé. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 16. Baependy. | 1. Baependy. (c.) | 1. S. Maria de Baependy. |
| | | 2. N. S. da Conceição do Rio Verde. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Conceição de Pouso Alto. |
| | | 4. Sant' Anna de Capivary. |
| | | 5. S. Thomé das Lettras. |
| | | 6. Passa Quatro. |
| | 2. Campanha (c.) | 1. S. Antonio da Campanha. |
| | | 2. Espirito Santo da Mutuca. |
| | | 3. Aguas Virtuosas. |
| | | 4. S. Gonçalo da Campanha. |
| | | 5. Tres Corações do Rio Verde. |
| | | 6. Lambary. |
| | 3. Ayuruoca (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Ayuruoca. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario da Lagôa. |
| | | 3. N. S. do Bomsuccesso dos Serranos. |
| | | 4. S. Domingos da Bocaina. |
| | | 5. S. Bom Jesus do Livramento. |
| | 4. Porto do Turvo (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Porto do Turvo. |
| | | 2. S. Bom Jesus do Bom Jardim. |
| | 5. Christina (t.) | 1. Espirito Santo da Christina. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Carmo do Pouso Alto. |
| | | 3. S. Sebastião do Capituba. |
| | | 4. S. Catharina. |
| | | 5. Varginha de Pouso Alto. |
| 17. Jacuhy | 1. Jacuhy (t.) | 1. S. Carlos de Jacuhy. |
| | | 2. S. Francisco do Monte Santo. |
| | | 3. S. Sebastião do Paraiso. |
| | | 4. N. S. das Dôres do Guaxupé. |
| | 2. Passos (c.) | 1. S. Bom Jesus dos Passos. |
| | | 2. N. S. das Dôres do Atterrado. |
| | | 3. S. Sebastião da Ventania. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Carmo do Rio Claro. |
| | | 5. S. Rita de Cassia. |
| | | 6. S. Rita do Rio Claro. |
| 18. Rio Grande | 1. Piumhy (c.) | 1. N. S. do Livramento do Piumhy. |
| | | 2. S. João Baptista da Gloria. |
| | | 3. S. Roque de Piumhy. |
| | 2. Tamanduá (c.) | 1. S. Bento de Tamanduá. |
| | | 2. S. Bom Jesus de Campo Bello. |
| | | 3. Espirito Santo de Itapecerica. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Desterro. |
| | | 5. N. S. das Candêas. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 18. Rio Grande | 3. Formiga (c.) | 1. S. Vicente Ferrer da Formiga.<br>2. Arcos.<br>3. Sant' Anna do Bambuhy.<br>4. N. S. do Rosario da Pimenta. |
| 19. Rio das Mortes | 1. Oliveira (c.) | 1. N. S. da Oliveira.<br>2. S. Francisco de Paula.<br>3. N. S. da Gloria do Passatempo.<br>4. Japão.<br>5. S. Antonio do Amparo.<br>6. N. S. da Apparecida do Claudio. |
| | 2. S. João d'El Rei (c.) | 1. N. S. do Pilar de S. João d'El Rei.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição das Carrancas.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição da Barra.<br>4. N. S. de Nazareth.<br>5. S. Miguel do Cajurú.<br>6. Madre de Deus.<br>7. N. S. do Bomsuccesso. |
| | 3. S. José d'El Rei (c.) | 1. S. José d'El Rei.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição de Prados.<br>3. S. Antonio da Lagôa Dourada.<br>4. N. S. da Penha de França da Lage.<br>5. S. Thiago.<br>6. S. Rita do Rio Abaixo. |
| 20. Jaguary | 1. Jaguary (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Jaguary.<br>2. S. José de Toledo.<br>3. N. S. do Carmo de Cambuhy.<br>4. S. José do Picú. |
| | 2. Itajubá (c.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Itajubá.<br>2. S. Caetano da Vargem Grande.<br>3. Soledade do Itajubá.<br>4. S. Rita da Bôa Vista. |
| | 3. Pouso Alegre (c.) | 1. Bom Jesus de Pouso Alegre.<br>2. Sant' Anna do Sapucahy.<br>3. N. S. da Apparecida da Estiva.<br>4. S. José do Paraiso.<br>5. S. João Baptista das Cachoeiras. |
| | 4. Ouro Fino (t.) | 1. S. Francisco de Paula do Ouro Fino.<br>2. Bom Jesus do Campo Mistico.<br>3. N. S. do Carmo da Borda da Matta. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 21. Cabo Verde | 1. Caldas (c.) | 1. N. S. do Patrocinio de Caldas.<br>2. N. S. do Carmo do Campestre.<br>3. S. Sebastião do Jaguary.<br>4. S. Rita de Cassia. |
| 22. Parahybuna. | 1. Barbacena (c.) | 1. N. S. da Piedade de Barbacena.<br>2. S. Rita de Ibitipoca.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição da Ibitipoca.<br>4. N. S. das Dôres do Rio do Peixe.<br>5. João Gomes. |
| | 2. Juiz de Fóra (c.) | 1. Juiz de Fóra (S. Antonio).<br>2. S. Pedro d'Alcantara.<br>3. N. S. da Conceição do Chapéo d'Uvas.<br>4. S. José do Rio Preto.<br>5. S. Francisco de Paula do Parahybuna.<br>6. Espirito Santo do Piáu. |
| | 3. Rio Preto (t.) | 1. Senhor dos Passos do Rio Preto.<br>2. S. Rita de Jacutinga.<br>3. S. Barbara do Monte Verde. |
| 23. Rio Novo | 1. Pomba (c.) | 1. S. Manoel do Pomba.<br>2. Espirito Santo do Pomba.<br>3. N. S. das Mercês do Pomba.<br>4. S. do Bomfim.<br>5. S. Bom Jesus da Canna Verde.<br>6. S. José do Paraopéba. |
| | 2. Leopoldina (c.) | 1. S. Sebastião da Leopoldina.<br>2. N. S. da Madre de Deus do Angú.<br>3. S. Rita de Meia Pataca.<br>4. S. Francisco de Assis do Capivará.<br>5. Sant' Anna do Piratininga.<br>6. Curato de N. S. da Piedade.<br>7. Curato de N. S. da Conceição da Bôa Vista. |
| | 3. Mar d'Hespanha (c.) | 1. S. Antonio do Mar d'Hespanha.<br>2. S. José do Parahyba.<br>3. Curato do Espirito Santo.<br>4. N. S. dos Remedios.<br>5. Curato de S. Antonio do Aventureiro.<br>6. Curato do Rio Pardo. |
| | 4. SS. Sacramento (t.) | 1. SS. Sacramento.<br>2. N. S. do Desterro do Desemboque. |
| | 5. Rio Novo (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Rio Novo.<br>2. S. João Nepomuceno. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 24. Muriahé | 1. Muriahé (c.) | 1. S. Paulo de Muriahé. |
| | | 2. Curato de N. S. das Dôres da Victoria. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Gloria de Muriahé. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Patrocinio de Muriahé. |
| | | 5. S. Francisco da Gloria. |
| | | 6. S. Luzia do Carangola. |
| | | 7. N. S. da Conceição dos Tombos do Carangola. |
| | | 8. S. Sebastião da Cachoeira Alegre. |
| | | 9. S. Sebastião da Matta. |
| | 2. Ubá (c.) | 1. S. Januario de Ubá. |
| | | 2. S. João Baptista do Presidio. |
| | | 3. Sant' Anna do Sapé. |
| | | 4. Curato dos Bagres. |
| | | 5. Curato de S. José do Barroso. |
| | 3. S. Rita do Turvo (t.) | 1. S. Rita do Turvo. |
| | | 2. S. Miguel dos Arripiados. |
| | | 3. S. Sebastião dos Afflictos. |
| | | 4. Sant' Anna da Barra do Bacalhau. |
| | | 5. S. Sebastião de Coimbra. |
| | | 6. S. Miguel do Anta. |
| | 4. Monte Alegre (t.) | 1. S. Francisco das Chagas de Monte Alegre. |
| | | 2. Santa Maria. |
| | | 3. N. S. d'Abbadia do Bomsuccesso. |
| | 5. S. Antonio do Monte (t.) | 1. S. Antonio do Monte. |
| | | 2. N. S. das Dôres do Atterrado. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

In Minas Geraes, the exploration of the auriferous land and deposits of precious stones raised up suddenly numerous hamlets which attained in a few years a considerable degree of progress and riches, so that in time, more or less limited, they became stationary or fell into decay, in proportion as the mines became exhausted or impoverished, and others more productive were discovered, improvising fresh centres of mining population.

This fact, the vastness of the province, dependent, on account of its central situation, on its maritime

neighbours, and the communication having become relatively easy with the great commercial emporium, the city of Rio de Janeiro, influenced, and still influence the existence of cities worthy of note in the opulent province of Minas Geraes; but none of them correspond to the high general importance of the province. The Pedro II railway will modify and alter greatly these economical conditions; even so, however, or yet more so for that reason, Minas Geraes always continuing to have its administrative and political capital in its centre, will continue to have for its economical capital, that is, industrial and commercial, the city of Rio de Janeiro, save and except its relations with Bahia, and S. Paulo, and in all probability—through Mucury—with the province of Espirito Santo, which taken altogether, represented the smallest part of her exportation. This dependency is a fraternal and common bond of interest, which makes Minas Geraes and Rio de Janeiro like two brothers, more naturally and closely bound in the provincial family of the Empire.

Nearly fifty cities are to be seen in the territory of the province, which however thinly populated in comparison to its dimensions, is nevertheless the most populous in the Empire. There would be no room in this book for the consideration of each one of those cities in particular, and they were all pointed out in the article of the civil division. Let some, however, be mentioned. *Ouro Preto*, the capital, the ancient Villa Rica, in the serra of that name, in former times very prosperous and proud, and at the present time still important, from its condition of head administrative of the province, it preserves the remembrance of the house of *Tiradentes*, which was destroyed by judgment passed, aud which rendered infamous the ground where it stood, otherwise glorified in 1822; and of other houses, among which that in which lived and died the beautiful lady *Marilia de Direco*, so much sung about in the lyrics of Gonzaga, one of the proscribed in the conspiracy of Minas. *Marianna*,

the ancient town *Leal do Carmo*, created an Episcopal city in 1745 by D. João V., who gave it the name of his *beloved consort*, situate close to the right bank of the rivulet of the Carmo, a neighbour, and lying to the east-north-east of Ouro Preto, handsome but in a decadent state: its chapels and bridges are worth of mention, and the palace, and episcopal seminaries, although beyond its walls. *S. João d'Ebrei* on the rivulets Tejuco and Barreiro, 62 leagues to the north-north-east of the capital of the Empire: it was in its early commencement much put upon by the famous dissensions between the Paulists and the strangers; it immediately became a great place upon the mines being explored, and afterwards by the agricultural produce of its fertile municipality: it is commercial and rich and has extensive mercantile relations. *Sabará* on the right bank of the river *das Velhas* below the confluence of the rivulet *Sabará-bussú*, enriched by mineral produce, and by agricultnral industry. *Diamantina*, an episcopal city, 56 leagues to the north-east of *Ouro-Preto;* it is sheltered in a vally encircled by high mountains, and intersected by numerous auriferous und diamond yielding streams, which have already given extraordinary mineral harvests, and still withhold riches: the climate of the district is temperate, and very healthy, the soil fertile, and the city flourishing. *Barbacena*, *Serro*, *Paracatú*, *Januaria*, and others, are sister cities in fortune and conditions.

## COLONIZATION AND CIVILIZATION OF THE INDIANS.

The number of colonists is considerable in Minas Geraes, principally from the Açores islands, who are employed as labourers in the estates of the municipalities of the south, who congratulate themselves on the excellence of the climate which thei enjoy, and on the fortune that smiles on their labour.

Besides that, there are some nuclei of colonization that await further development; but the country would gain much more by spontaneous immigration, which would find in the country an excess of land, and where the climate is temperate and most salubrious, and the soil astonishingly fertile.

The hords of savages are numerous, but pecuniary sacrifice, persistent patience, and a knowledge of the art of reclaiming them, has been wanting. The proof of the results which all this would afford, is in the fact of not a few of the hordes, who have settled in villages, having occupied themselves in agriculture, and many of the Indians who live among the civilized inhabitants. Latterly, the provincial government of Minas planned and commenced putting in execution practical means of rational efficacy for the civilizing of the Indians; but in this matter, constant persistency is worth more than determination in the choice of system.

# CHAPTER XX.

## PROVINCE OF GOYAZ.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

In 1647 Maoel Correa, a native of the town of S. Paulo of Piratininga, started with a band on the trail of the Indians, and penetrating far into the interior, in a westerly direction, he arrived at the land of Goyaz, and from thence brought ten "oitavas" of gold, which he gave towards making a diadem with which some devotees crowned the sacred image of Our Lady "da Penha de Sorocaba". He related, in a journal found after his death, that that gold had been taken with a pewter plate from the river *dos Aracys* or *Araes*, and that before coming to that river he had crossed another much more winding.

Many years afterwards, in 1682, Bartholoméo Bueno da Silva, taking with him a son of 12 years old, and a numerous following, started from the town of S. Paulo, and advanced into the interior, endeavouring to follow the route taken by Correa, and got as far as the river *Vermelho* in the neighbourhood of the site where, later on, Villa Bôas (the present city of Goyaz) was founded: he was at once encouraged, seeing that the *Goyaz* Indian women used, as ornaments, leaves of gold, and in order to lord it over the savage tribe, whose assistance he was so much in need of, it is related of him that he poured a portion of rum in a plate, and setting fire to it, threatened

the astonished savages by means of that phenomenon, that he would put all the rivers in flames: the poor *Goyá* or *Goyaz* savages took Bueno for a magician, or on account of his evil genius, called him *Anhanguera,* and having become obedient, led him to where he could collect most gold. Unfortunately the Paulist chief did not content himself with the precious metal of which he carried away a great load, but on the eve of his departure the ungrateful wretch fell upon the Indians and took a number of them as slaves.

In 1722 Bartholomeo Bueno da Silva, the son and companion of the preceding backwoodsman, left S. Paulo by order of the governor, taking with him 100 men, in search of the gold and emerald mines in the land of Goyaz: in this expedition, which was otherwise not successful, great was the confusion of rivers discovered, and whose sites at the points marked appear contrary to subsequent geographical knowledge. It would be useless labour on account of its sterility, to desire to clear up doubts and contradictions which are wanting in importance to history, and even if they possessed it, they would continue in the darkness of the past.

Three years afterwards the same backwoodsman ventured to make a second expedition, and arrived at the land of *Goyaz;* he was recognized by some of the older Indians, as the son of *Anhanguera*, suffered from the hostility and attacks of the savages, who still remembered and resented the cruel and unpardonable conduct of his father, and more skilful and prudent than the first, the second Bueno da Silva flattered and attracted the Goayazes, seduced them, promoted the union of some of the backwoodsmen with the Indian women, and having begun the foundation of the hamlets of Ferreiro, Sant' Anna, Barra and Ouro fino, returned to S. Paulo, where he presented to the governor eight thousand oitavas (1000 ounces) of gold. The richness

of the soil of Goyaz strongly impressed the metropolitan government: the royal decree of 14th March 1731 conferred on Bartolomeo Bueno da Silva the patent of captain general with the government of the lands discovered by him, and with power to distribute in portions the auriferous lands: adventurers flocked to them: the hamlet, of Meia Ponte, Santa Cruz, Crixá and others rose up, the mines being richest in those places; like in Minas Geraes, disturbances, insubordination, risings of adventurers, and great demoralization made themselves felt: the poor Goyaz Indians underwent a barbarous extermination: two successive ouvidores (Judges) of the country of Goyaz, raised to a district dependent on the governor of S. Paulo the 11th of February 1736, could not restrain the rush conduct of the population divided into inimical fractions; the people of Sant' Anna, raised to a township by the name of Villa Bôa, were at the head of this ungovernable body of men. Finally the proper governor, D. Luiz de Mascarenhas, visited Goyaz in 1739, installed the senate of the chamber, caused a force to be raised, a jail to be built as also a church of hewn stone. The most culpable of the disorderly persons fled, alarmed at the force, and perhaps also fearful of the Church, and went and raised dwellings on the banks of the Maranhão until then a desert, while under the impulsive influence of Mascarenhas were founded the hamlets of Cavalcante, Conceição and Natividade in the northern part, and the villages of Lanhosa, Rio das Pedras, and Sant' Anna in the south, where the friendly *Bororó* Indians placed sentinels against the *Caiapós* who used to attack and murder travellers in the road already opened to S. Paulo. In Villa Bôa, and in S. Felis were then established smelting houses for gold on which the "quinto" (fifth part) was collected.

Order and regular administration were established: the kings letter patent of 8th November 1744 separated from Minas Geraes, and raised to a captaincy general, the

district of Goyaz, giving it for its capital Villa Bôa, later the city of Goyaz, as already made known, and in 1746 the bull of 6th December, created in the new captaincy a bishoprick, which otherwise lay dormant for not a few years.

Some small diamonds having been met with in the rivers *Claro* and *dos Pilares*, in 1749, the extraction of gold was prohibited in that district and Gomes Freire de Andrade, governor of Rio de Janeiro, S. Paulo and Minas, arrived in Goyaz and there installed the contractors of the diamond washings of the rivers above mentioned, Joaquim Caldeira Brant and his brother Felisberto. In the mean time many of the inhabitants withdrew, injured by the order which forbade the extraction of the gold, when in the same year Dom Marcos de Noronha, afterwards Conde dos Arcos, the first governor General of the captaincy of Goyaz, came to take possession of his charge and found the government in Villa Bôa.

Dom Marcos de Noronha caused the boundaries of the captaincy to be marked by the river *Arrependidos* to the east, the river *Grande*, and the *Paraná* to the south, the river *das Mortes* and the *Araguayá* on the frontiers of Matto Grosso to the west, and remaining without any boundary to the north on account of the fierce Indian tribes which infested the lands on that side: besides that and other services, he made alliance with the *Acroás* and *Chaeriabas* Indians who established themselves in the *aldeas Duro* and *Formiga*.

In the sequence of other governors, the regularity of administration went on gradually extending itself, and the military organization of a line regiment and of a militia, although of modest proportions, were added; manyfold were the discoveries of rich gold mines, of which one alone, that of Cocal, in the time of Dom Marcos de Noronha, yielded in one year, one hundred and fifty arrobas (4800 lb. Por-

tugueze) of that metal: in 1773 the navigation of the Tocantins was effected as far as Pará: various hordes of Indians came to live in villages, of which that of *Nova Beira* is worthy of separate mention, which village at the end of the lamentable war against the *Chavantes* on the banks of the Araguaya, the governor José de Almeida de Vasconcellos Sobral e Carvalho founded on the island of Bananal, or of Sant' Anna, with the tribes of *Javaes* and *Carajas:* the communication with Pará by the *Araguaya* and the *Tocantins* was kept up, and that with S. Paulo by the road through the interior, giving by this means all encouragement possible to commerce, increasing the population, until finally the captaincy through the declaration of independence took its place among the provinces of Brazil, its first president being Caetano Maria Lopes Gama, subsequently Visconde de Maranguape, whose honoured and venerated memory Goyaz was grateful to, and which they prove by generous tributes paid to that memory from beyond the grave after the lapse of more than thirty years from the cessation of his government, and of the absence of their noble, able and docile administrator.

The province of Goyaz was raised to a bishoprick by a bull of Leo XII. of 15th June 1827: its prelacy created, as has been said, in 1746, was not occupied by installation in consequence of the refusal of two, and the death of two other prelates elected.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

Its southern latitude comprises the parallels of 5° 10′ and 19° 20′, its longitude, all west, shuts the province between 3° 54 and 9° 58′.

Its greatest extension from north to south is 288 leagues from the left bank of the Tocantins at the *Pedras de Amolar* to the right of the river *Paranahyba* or *Corumbá* at the waterfall of Santo André, and from east to west 125

leagues from the right bank of the rivulet *Jacaré*, also to the right bank of the Araguaya, having more than 600 leagues of fluvial coast or boundary. Its superfice is 26,000 square leagues.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by the provinces of Grãn-Pará and Maranhão at the rivers *Tocantins* and *Manoel Alves grande*, and by the Serra das Mangabeiras; on the south by Matto Grosso and Minas Geraes at the serra of Santa Martha, or *das Divisões*, and by the thalweg of the *Paranahyba* or *Corumba:* to the east by Minas Geraes, Bahia, Piauhy and Maranhão by the same thalweg of the *Paranahyba*, the rivulet *Jacaré* and the serras of *Andrequicé*, *Tiriceca*, *Araras*, *Paranan*, *Taguatinga*, *Duro* and *Mangabeiras*, and by the thalweg of the Tocantins; and on the west by Grão-Pará and Matto Grosso at the *Araguaca* and *Apuré*, or *do Peixe* or *Cayapó do Sul* (according to some).

The mention of S. Paulo as a boundary of Goyaz to the south is wanting here; this omission, however, which would appear contrary to the respective boundary already given to the north of S. Paulo, had for its purpose the rendering more salient the most important doubt on such a point. The authorities on the matter, differ; many, such as the senator Pompeo Machado de Oliveira and others, give as boundaries the two provinces, others and among them the senator Candido Mendes, differ in opinion to the contrary.

This divergence of opinion is founded on questions and disputes concerning the territories of those provinces and the provinces of Minas Geraes and Matto Grosso, doubtless appreciated and judged very differently.

From opinions so opposed in this as in many other points of the same nature, of the multiplied provincial disputes as to territory—what is above all evident, is the

manifest necessity of the revision of the map of the Empire and a scrupulous and profound study to fix clearly and definitively the boundaries of the different provinces under a system which should also comprise the great necessity of creating some more, as well to the south as to the north, and even in the centre of the Empire.

## CLIMATE.

In so vast a territory it is difficult for one sole climate to predominate: it is in general dry and healthy; but on the banks of the principal rivers in certain places it loses its condition of great salubrity by the appearance of intermittent fevers. The rainy season commences in October and continues till April: this general rule is not absolute throughout the whole extent of the province.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

Mountainous to the east, and to the north, and still a little so to the south, the territory of this province is unequal, and in its greater part covered with scrub, to which is given the name of *catingas*.

On the banks of the *Corumbá* and of some other rivers, there are tall forests, and notable fertility of soil.

Between the *Meia Ponte* and the capital of the province, the forest called *Matto Grosso*, extends itself superbly.

## OROGRAPHY.

The mountain range of the *Vertentes* is the predominant one, and spreads itself out into different branches, separating the three great basins of the north, or Amazonas, of the south or Plata, and further, of S. Francisco: in the south it bears the names of the serras of *Santa Martha*, *Escalvada* and of the *Pireneos*, which commencing 15 miles to the east of the city of *Meia Ponte* advances

to the east; the *Serra dos Cristaes* in the direction of south to north, and that of the *Verissimo* from west to east lie to the south; then follow forming the divisional line to the east of the province, the serras of *Andrequicé*, *Tiririca*, *das Araras*, *do Paraná*, *da Taguatinga*, *do Duro*, *da Chapada* and *das Mangabeiras*, evidently of the same system: the *Serra de Santa Martha* throws out as it enters the province a considerable branch to the west, and between this and that which advances to meet the *Escalvada*, are the serras of *Sentinella*, *Dourada* and of *Rio Grande*.

In the territory that the Tocantins and the Araguayá irrigate, each river on its own side, running in a parallel line until they go on narrowing and bending to the north, the *Serras do Estrondo* or *Cordilheira Grande* develop themselves, leaving to the south the serras of *Fanha*, and *dos Picos*. To the east of the Tocantins is the serra of *Crixás*. To the east and west of the river Maranhão are those of the *Lavras*, and of *Mocambo* to the south of that of D. Felicianna, which sees the confluence, from whence the name of Tocantins begins to predominate in that magnificent river.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The principal basins of the province are those of the *Araguaya* and of the *Tocantins* which have already been studied in the eighth chapter of the first part, which treats of the general hydrographic system of Brazil. Besides those there is the basin of the south, or of the *Paranahyba*, tributary of that of the Parana. The river Paranahyba, of which mention has already been made, receives the *Apuré*, *Anicuns*, *Corrente*, *Meia Ponte*, *Corumbá*, *Verissimo*, *Catalão*, *S. Marcos* and *Jacaré*, which belong to the territory of the province, and increased in volume by the river *das Velhas*, which comes to it from Minas Geraes, goes further on to unite itself with the *Rio Grande*, which then, as already mentioned, flows on under the name of the

*Paraná*. The great ramification of the chain of the *Vertentes*, which under the names *Serra de Santa Martha*, or *das Divisões*, *Escalvada*, *Pireneos*, &c. stretch out in the direction which was pointed out above, carry out their general denomination, marking the boundary of the southern area of the province which belongs from the affluence of its waters to the basin of the Paranahyba.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom*. Gold, diamonds, and other precious stones, beautiful crystals, lime-stone, iron and other productions have already been mentioned in the general study. The vast territory of the province in a great part almost unknown, requires scientific exploration, which shed light upon its treasures still unknown, and perhaps most precious.

*Vegetable kingdom*. There is an abundance of Brazil wood, of Sebastião d'arruda, and of many other woods of the first order in its forests: trees whose bark is used for tanning, a rich variety of vegetables employed in medicine: the cochineal plant is common: the trees and shrubs which yield an abundance of fruit are very numerous. Ayres Cazal says that the grape vine fructifies abundantly, twice a year in some districts, the winter grape nevertheless is inferior. A great part of the province, in which vegetation is poor, offers in compensation most adventageous conditions for cattle breeding. The fertility of the soil does not need to be eulogized; for to place it in doubt would be to ignore the wonders of the margins and vallies of the *Tocantins*, of the *Araguaya* and of their gifted tributaries: *Goyaz* is almost a desert hidden away in the heart of the Empire; but from that heart go forth arteries of opulence which cannot lie as to the future, as to the destiny which providence marked out for it in the favours and dispositions of nature.

*Animal kingdom.* The zoology is most rich and numerous: in it however, no difference is observed in the natural production in relation to that in the other provinces, save in one or the other species or variety. The large animals of the chase, such as ounces, tapirs, wild boor, and guarás, called wolves, and among others, the antlered deer which have no superiors. The Emus are frequently met with in the plains; partridges in extraordinary numbers.

In the rivers the abundance of fish would appear marvellous, if a like abundance were not met with in other provinces.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY, AND COMMERCE.

The cultivation of sugar-cane, of cotton, of tobacco, of cereals, of vegetables is produced in considerable quantities: but of those which can be exported, the expenses of conveyance either by the *Tocantins* to *Pará* or by the immensely long road to *Rio de Janeiro* are so great as to preclude their being sent; the latter city maintains its principal commercial relations with Goyaz and the latter by roads to S. Paulo. This very consideration probably influences the want of exploration of the cultivation of the cochineal insect.

The industry of cattle breeding is that which prospers most; the exportation of greatest importance consisting of cattle, and gold. The commerce of Goyaz feels that same impediment, which weighs on its agriculture and other industries. Happily the enterprize of the navigation of the Araguay of which Dr. Couto de Magalhães is the chief director, will give to this province regular steam navigation, greatly facilitating its communication with Pará.

In 1870 commenced, with two steamers, the voyages, which the enterprize was bound to make between *Santa Maria*, *Leopoldina*, and *Itacaiú*.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 160,000 inhabitants, of whom 145,000 are free, and 15,000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 1 senator and 2 deputies of the general assembly, and 22 of the provincial: the province forms one sole electoral district, with 376 electors, and 22,234 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard,* with 8 superior commands: 18 battalions and 3 sections of battalion of a infantry, and 6 squadrons of cavalry on active service, and 2 sections of a battalion of reserve, presenting 17,333 national guards on active service, and 2621 of reserve; total 19,954.

In the absence of a police force, a corps of cavalry of the line does the respective duty.

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary:* 46 schools for males, with 1445 pupils, and 26 for females with 454 pupils. *Private primary:* 1 school for boys, the number which attends it not being known. *Secondary public instruction:* 5 establishments for boys with 99 pupils.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division:* The province of Goyaz is divided and sub-divided into districts, municipalities and parishes, as follows:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Goyaz (city a. cap.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Goyaz. |
| | | 2. N. S. do Rosario. |
| | | 3. N. S. do Pilar do Ouro Fino. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Rosario da Barra. |
| | | 5. S. Rita de Anta. |
| | | 6. N. S. do Rosario do Rio Claro. |
| | | 7. S. Sebastião do Allemão. |
| | | 8. S. Francisco de Assis de Anicuns. |
| | | 9. S. José de Mossamedes. |
| | 2. Curralinho t.) | 1. N. S. d'Abbadia do Curralinho. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 2. Rio Verde | 1. Rio Verde (t.) | 1. N. S. das Dôres do Rio Verde.<br>2. Espirito Santo de Torres do Rio Bonito.<br>3. Espirito Santo do Jatahy. |
| 3. Rio Maranhão | 1. Meia Ponte (c.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de Meia Ponte. |
| | 2. Corumbá (c.) | 1. N. S. da Penha de Corumbá. |
| | 3. Jaraguá (t.) | 1. N. S. da Penha do Jaraguá. |
| 4. Rio Corumbá | 1. Bomfim (c.) | 1. S. do Bomfim.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição de Campinas. |
| | 2. S. Luzia (c.) | 1. S. Luzia. |
| | 3. Pouso-Alto (t.) | 1. N. S. d'Abbadia de Pouso Alto.<br>2. S. Rita de Paranahyba. |
| | 4. Formosa (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição da Formosa.<br>2. N. S. do Rosario de Flôres.<br>3. Santa Rosa. |
| 5. Paranahyba | 1. Catalão (c.) | 1. N. S. Madre de Deus do Catalão. |
| | 2. Caldas Novas (t.) | 1. N. S. do Desterro de Caldas Novas. |
| | 3. Bella de Paranahyba (t.) | 1. N. S. do Carmo de Villa Bella.<br>2. S. Rita do Paranahyba. |
| | 4. S. Cruz (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição de Santa Cruz. |
| | 5. Entre Rios (t.) | 1. Divino Espirito Santo do Vaivem. |
| 6. Rio Tocantins | 1. Pilar (t.) | 1. N. S. do Pilar.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição de Crixás.<br>3. S. Antonio do Amaro Leite. |
| | 2. São José (t.) | 1. S. José de Tocantins.<br>2. N. S. da Conceição de Trahiras. |
| 7. Cavalcante | 1. Cavalcante (t.) | 1. Sant' Anna de Cavalcante.<br>2. S. Theodoro de Nova Roma.<br>3. S. Felix.<br>4. S. Sebastião do Forte. |
| 8. Rio Paranan | 1. Arraias (t.) | 1. N. S. dos Remedios de Arraias.<br>2. S. Antonio do Morro do Chapéo. |
| | 2. S. Domingos (t.) | 1. S. Domingos.<br>2. Sant' Anna da Posse. |
| 9. Palma | 1. Palma (c.) | 1. S. João da Palma.<br>2. Divino Espirito Santo do Peixe. |
| | 2. Conceição (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição.<br>2. S. José do Duro. |
| | 3. S. Maria de Taguatinga (t.) | 1. S. Maria de Taguatinga. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 10. Porto Imperial | 1. Porto Imperial (c.) | 1. N. S. das Mercês do Porto Imperial.<br>2. N. S. do Carmo. |
| | 2. Natividade (t.) | 1. N. S. da Natividade.<br>2. Sant' Anna da Chapada.<br>3. S. Miguel e Almas. |
| 11. Bôa Vista | 1. Bôa Vista (c.) | 1. N. S. da Consolação da Bôa Vista. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Goyaz*, city and capital of the province, ancient *Villa Bôa*, and at first the village of *Sant' Anna*, situated on the river *Vermelho* which divides it: its most notable edifices are the palaces of the Government, and of the Bishop, the parish church: the chamber of the municipality, and the building lately purchased for the episcopal seminary: it has a hospital of charity, bridges over the river, &c. *Meia-Ponte*, on the banks of the river das *Almas*, 26 leagues to the east of the city of *Goyaz;* is the most considerable in the province from the agricultural productions of its municipality, and from its commerce: it has good churches: in the district over which it presides are manufactured woollen and cotton factories. *Santa Luzia* is situated in a pleasant spot between the rivers of *Ponte Alta*, and of *S. Bartolomeo*, at 2 leagues distance from the road to Paracatú, 50 to the east-south-east of the city of Goyaz; like the others it had its rise in the goldmines: but in latter times, however, agriculture and cattle breeding enrich it much more than mining does: from their breeding farms they manufacture excellent Cheese. *Porto Imperial* on the right bank of the *Tocantins*, 150 leagues to the north of the city of Goyaz. *Bom fim*, 44 leagues to the south of the same capital, on the road which leads to S. Paulo and Rio de Janeiro. *Bôa Vista*, on the *Tocantins*, *Catalão*, and *Palma* are the cities, and consequently the centres of population of the province. With the exception of those which owe their prosperity to their being intermediaries, in commer-

cial intercourse, all the other cities (and even some of those) had a golden cradle in the mines, and a more ensured vitality gathered from agriculture, and cattle breeding, although mining continues to be carried on with animation in sundry municipalities.

## COLONIZATION AND RELIGIOUS CIVILIZATION OF THE INDIANS.

In *Goyaz* there is a vast field and abundant harvest of souls to reclaim, for the hordes of savages are numerous.

There are in the province 5 fixed dwelling places or villages, of Indians, which are as follow.

*Carretão*, founded in 1764 at 20 leagues from the capital: at present only a few *Cherentes* and *Chavantes* Indians inhabit it.

*S. José de Araguaya* on the right bank of the river Araguaya, founded in 1845 by Friar Segismundo de Taggia, who is the director: it numbers 321 *Cherentes* and *Chavantes* Indians, who occupy themselves in fishing and in farming.

*Pedro Affonso*, founded in 1849 on the banks of the river *do Somno* near to its confluence with the *Tocantins* by Friar Raphael de Taggia; it numbers more than 200 *Carabós* Indians, who occupy themselves in farming and fishing, and who engage themselves to drive cattle to Maranhão, for exportation.

*Thereza Christina*, founded in 1851 by Friar Raphael de Taggia: its situation is at the confluence of the rivulet Ipiabanha with the Tocantins: there were more than 3000 *Cherentes* and *Chavantes* Indians who employed themselves in fishing, in farming, and rendered their services to the navigation of the river.

This village decayed, owing to the unhealthiness of the situation, and from other causes, being reduced to 6 *Cherente* families; but at the distance of 24 leagues, another, with the local name of *Panella de ferro* (iron pot)

which has united about 1000 Indians of the same tribe, directed by the already civilized *Captain* Manoel da Mota, promises to become, in a short time, a flourishing population.

*Bôa Vista:* founded in 1841 by Friar Francisco do Monte S. Vito: situated at one league's distance from the city of Bôa-Vista do Tocantins: it contains 600 *Apinagés* Indians, who are employed in farming, in fishing, and in the river service.

Some hordes of *Apinagés*, *Gradaus*, and *Caiapós* Indians are becoming civilized, making their appearance in the village of *Panella de ferro*, and in the garrison town of Santa Maria, asking to have their implements mended, &c.

The college of *Santa Izabel* founded by the determination of the Imperial Government, and with which Dr. Couto de Magalhães was charged to give it a basis and impulse, was instituted in a house of the garrisoned town of Leopoldina, and in carrying out its exclusive ends, gives to Indian children primary, religious and professional instruction.

Information obtained by the author from the illustrious Dr. Couto de Magalhães himself do honour to the intellectual capacity, and relative docility of the young Indians who are being educated.

The college of Santa Izabel will be probably the seed sown which will give an extraordinary harvest of civilization, and is, at all events, one of the finest institutions of philanthropy.

# CHAPTER XXI.

## PROVINCE OF MATTO GROSSO.

### HISTORICAL SKETCH.

Still gold,—and ever the Paulistas!

Doubts, obscurity, the fear of falling into chronological errors, place in contestation the date of the first discoveries of the lands to the south of Matto Grosso: Charlevoix errs egregiously as to the date which he makes Aleixo Garcia depart from S. Paulo on an excursion which went far beyond Paraguay.

An expedition set on foot in 1516 or in 1525 by *Martim Affonso de Souza*, who otherwise arrived in Brazil in 1531, and it was only in the following year that he founded the colonies of S. Vicente and Piratininga; beyond which even in 1532 or 1533 such an entry by way of the interior would be improbable; even those persons who like Ayres Cazal do admit, that Aleixo Garcia, whether Paulista or Portuguese, had passed with a numerous accompaniment of domesticated Indians beyond the Paraguay, had penetrated even to the neighbourhood of the Andes, and had been in the *middle of that century* the first acknowledged discoverer of the southern part of this vast province, forget that it was not the custom to penetrate into the interior having only Indians for escort; it was not the custom, there exists not one single example of the Portuguese colonizers doing so, and that the Paulistas, the so-called

Mamelukes, had not as yet commenced the series of their celebrated pioneering expeditions; hardly had they made a beginning in S. Paulo when they commenced their conflicts with the Jesuits.

The daring act of Aleixo Garcia, whether he were Portuguese or Paulista, does not truthfully harmonise with the date otherwise vague, and not exact, which Ayres Cazal—with just reason in doubt—scarcely points out.

After Aleixo Garcia, in some years more than doubtful, followed a long time afterwards the Paulista, *like the former*, Manoel Correa, who went beyond the *Araguaya*; and in the same way proceeded other backwoodsmen, captains of bands, invading the interior in pursuit of the Indians until 1718; at the time that Antonio Pires de Campos, also a Paulist, went up by the river Cuyabá to hunt the *aborigines Cuchipós*, who were settled in the locality, where to-day stands the hermitage of S. Gonçalo, as Ayres Cazal informs us.

But now a clearer light shines upon history; and so also begins the golden era. In 1719 Paschoal Moreira Cabral (here again a Paulista) goes into the interior, ascending by the river *Cuchipó-Mirim*, finds, in a very short distance, particles of gold,—he proceeds onwards to the spot afterwards called *Forquilha*, and there meets with Indian boys adorned with small plates of the same metal,—which he finds in such abundance that, although unprovided with mining tools, he made, comparatively speaking, a fine collection; the gold was extracted from the sand, by hand; Cabral returns down the river with his companions to the village, which Antonio Pires had visited the previous year; huts are raised, fields sown; a new troop arrives; José Gabriel Antunes is sent off to announce the discovery to the governor of S. Paul; this same Cabral is proclaimed acting "Guarda-mor", nntil the orders of that governor should be received, drawing up from these last dispositions

minutes under date of the 8th April 1719, signed by 22 backwoodsmen,—for this was the number of the most influential of the town which had been founded.

Early in 1720 the news brought by José Gabriel caused to set out for Matto Grosso numerous adventurers, in companies so ill prepared, that they never reached their destination, many dying on the way for want of proper guides and arms, so that not only the diseases and the savages put an end to a great number of these unfortunate men, but some even were devoured by wild beasts. These serious disasters served as a warning to the expeditionary bands, who set out afterwards. In this year of 1720 Moreira Cabral finding a fairer promise of gold in the *Forquilha*, removed his encampment to that place.

In 1721 Miguel Sutil, a native of Sorocaba, who was commencing to make a plantation on the banks of the *Cuyabá*, sent two *Carijós*, his servants, into the woods to look for bees nests, and these presented to him in the evening 23 thin plates of gold weighing 120 oitavas; on the following day, Sutil and his companion, the Portuguese João Francisco, nick-named the *bearded*, accompanied by all their followers, proceeded on to the gold district, their guides being the *Carijós*, and there they collected so much gold with their hands, that Sutil on retiring home for the night found himself in possession of 16 pounds, and Barbado of 400 oitavas (50 onces) of the precious metal! .... It was in this place, where now stands (then in its infancy) the city of Cuyabá, and the spot where the two Indians discovered and took possession of the best of the bees nests, where now is situate the hermitage of Nossa Senhora do Rosario.

And naturally the inhabitants of *Forquilha* quickly removed to the site of the wonderful *manc a*, which according to the calculations made yielded in one month more than four hundred arrobas (12,800 lb.) of gold, although the excavations did not exceed a depth of four fathoms!

In 1721 the governor of S. Paulo, Rodrigo Cesar de Menezes, chiefly zealous as to collecting the royal *fifths* of those mining properties, appointed two brothers, Paulistas, Lourenço and Joãa Leme, the first to the office of procurator of the *quints*, and the second to that of ranger of the gold fields; the selection was an unfortunate one: both of them went beyond their duty practising acts of violence, and committing revolting abuses,—they created disorders, gave rise to scandalous acts, to such a point that the Government caused them to be arrested, Lourenço Leme ending by being shot in the interior, and João Leme sentenced and executed in the city of Bahia in 1724.

Through the midst of a thousand perils, and decimated as they were on their route to Matto Grosso, the backwoodsmen of S. Paulo and other advanturers rushed into those lands, where gold was in such abundance, and the riches of which appeared a dream of the imagination: The opinion as to the natural opulence of this soil was far from being exaggerated, but the exportation of the treasure met with formidable, terrible enemies in the waters of the Paraguay and of other rivers.

Two Indian nations lorded over the Paulistas and besieged, so to say, Matto Grosso; these were the *Payagoás*, the proud boatmen of the Paraguay, and the *Guaycurús*, who had become unsurpassed as horsemen, and who through their cavalry held sway over hundreds of leagues of the neighbourhood of the banks of this and of the other rivers, which form the basin of the Plata, on the banks of which the horses brought from Europe had multiplied prodigiously, in native and most fertile pastures.

For a long time at feud between themselves the *Payagoás* and the *Guaycurús* made common cause against the Portuguese, and these latter increased their influence by becoming as dauntless boatmen as they were intrepid and impetuous horsemen. This tremendous alliance made itself

felt from 1725 to 1768, when the *Payagoás* submitted to the Spaniards, settling in villages below and near to Assuncion.

The rupture of alliance on the part of the *Payagoás* did not at once discourage the *Guaycurús*, who even at that time as audacious combatants in their fleets of canoes as they were with their squadrons of headlong cavalry, disputed the supremacy and the navigation of the waters with the colonizers of Matto Grosso up to nearly the end of the 18th century, when their principal chiefs *Emavidi Channé*, who took the name of Paulo Joaquim José Ferreira, and *Queyma*, who altered his to João *Queyma* de Albuquerque, went in 1791 to offer and beg for peace in *Villa Bella* of Matto Grosso, where in the palace of the governor and in presence of the senate the treaty of perpetual friendship, and the terms of vassalage to his most faithful Majesty were drawn up.

In 1727 the governor of S. Paulo, Rodrigo Cesar de Menezes visited the new district of Matto Grosso, and arriving at the village, hardly founded six years, bestowed on it the title of *Villa Real de Cuyabá*, and retired in 1728, ascending, according to Ayres Cazal, by the *Tacoary*; to which the travellers changed in the following year the navigation of the *Embotatiá*, for the purpose of avoiding encounters with the hostile Indians, in which, however, they did not succeed.

Up to almost the close of the 18th century not a few disasters had the miners of Matto Grosso to register in their expeditions for remittances of gold; sometimes those disasters were followed by a bloody retaliation which nevertheless did not frighten the terrible savages. It would be tiresome and of no use to give a circumstantial and chronological account of those combats truly herculean, but all alike as to the means and resources of both sides, as to the endeavours and end, and character of the battles.

It is enough to say that the *flotillas* which went out from Cuyabá consisted of dozens of canoes; in 1736 the fleet exceeded one hundred canoes; on one occasion, the number of combatants of those "armadas" amounted to 600 men sent to pursue and destroy the foe; yet notwithstanding, the Payagoás and the Guaycurús dared to resist with obstinacy; they often took the offensive, opposing to those forces, and ever bringing to the attack of the fleets a much greater force of canoes and warriors. In the tremendous battle of 1736 fought in *Carandá*, and which lasted several hours, in spite of the expedition being numerous and composed of Paulistas, there were killed, among many others, the commander Pedro de Moraes, the Franciscan friar Antonio Nascentes, surnamed the *Tiger* on account of his strength and extraordinary daring, and above all the man of colour Manoel Rodrigues, who was called *Mandú-Assú* (the big Manoel), was distinguished for his enormous stature, and bulk, and for an arm and the resolution of an Alcides,—who having by his side, and for his only ally a wife worthy of him, performed such prodigies of valour, that on the victory being gained, and the Indians annihilated with horrible slaughter, he received on his return to Cuyabá a captains commission.

In spite of so many obstacles and contrarieties the backwoodsmen and adventurers hastened to the assistance of Matto Grosse, and with the discovery of other mines, new towns began to rise up; so in 1728 Gabriel Antonio Maciel and his companions discovered the river Diamantino, and made a commencement, at the confluence of the river Ouro with this former, of a settlement which was then called *Upper Paraguay*, which almost a century after was raised to a town under the name of *Nossa Senhora da Conceição do Alto Paraguay-Diamantino;* and in 1734 the two Sorocaban brothers Fernando and Arthur de Barros discovered extensive gold fields, which they divided

between them in the following year, founding on the right bank of the *Guaporé* the town of *Pouso Alegre*, the present city of Matto Grosso, besides that of *S. Francisco Xavier*, six leagues from the former. The soil was most fertile, but the neighbouring marshes were sources of marsh fevers which destroyed a great number of miners.

It must be mentioned that not only gold, but diamonds also abounded, and that to these incentives was added for the increase of the population the opening of a road to Goyaz, by which with less risk more than 1500 persons, with many horses and droves of cattle, were enabled to arrive at Matto Grosso.

In the year 1742 Manoel de Lima with only nine companions, of whom five were Indians, dared with fearful temerity to go down in a canoe by the rivers *Guaporé*, *Madeira* and *Amazonas* to the capital of Pará, which they got a sight of by chance! . . . . but inasmuch as he was not the only one to run the risk of such an extraordinary undertaking, in the same year Joaquim Ferreira with other traders went up by the same route, by the Amazonas, Madeira and afterwards by the Mamoré, as far as the Jesuit Mission of *Exaltaçao*. In 1743 either the same traders or others undertook a similar journey, and discovered the mission of *Santa Rosa*, also belonging to the Spanish Jesuits, like the former one, very recently established on the eastern margin of the *Guaporé*; the priest in charge wishing to prevent the navigation of the river, the immediate transfer of the *Mission* of *S. Miguel* to the same side coincided with that pretention, which, however, did not trouble the colonists of Matto Grosso, who continued to go up and down by the *Guaporé*.

In the month of October 1746, the earthquake, which filled Perú with ruins, levelling the city of Lima with the ground, and causing other great destruction, was felt in Matto Grosso; the panic, however, which it caused the

inhabitants, was but the forerunner of a prolonged calamity: already at that time the scarcity of rain was deplored; but this scarcity became a horrible drought which continued until 1749! Forests were burnt up as if by fire; clouds of smoke darkened the sky and the horizon; not a few miserable beings died of hunger, and the privations and misery, the want of resources, and to repeat the expression—hunger, the torture of hunger threw into agonies, into torments all the inhabitants, and extinguished the life of some of those sojourners in the land of gold and diamonds, and who sickened and died for want of bread, suffering and agonizing with gold at their feet, with diamonds in their hands! . . . .

It was during this period of most painful probation that in 1746 was created, as also that of Goyaz, the Bishoprick of Matto Grosso, which by Royal Charter of 9th May 1748, also like that of Goyaz, her infant sister in colonization and in rising administrative chronology, was raised to a captaincy separated from and independent of that of S. Paulo.

The Bishoprick of Matto Grosso was not inaugurated until 62 years later; for it was only in August 1808 that Luiz Castro Pereira arrived, urged by the Government to take charge of it, Matto Grosso having still in this case almost the same fortune as Goyaz.

The instalment of the independent captaincy was not deferred for so long a time; about the beginning of 1751 a numerous fleet arrived at Cuyabá, bringing besides Theotonio da Silva Gusmão, appointed judge of the district, two Jesuits, and a regiment of dragoons, Dom Antonio Rolim de Moura, afterwards Count de Azambuja, and the second vice-roy in the capital of Rio de Janeiro, governor, and in that year founder of the captaincy of Matto Grosso.

The rains and with the rains the sun which never could fail, had prepared a goodly reception for Rolim de

Moura; for more than a year the aspect of the country, and the spirits of the population had risen: the burnt up forests were covered with a renewed verdure of vegetation, the sky and the horizon shone out clear and resplendent with light, plenty exceeded the previous state of bareness, and misery which had been undergone, and the colonists deriving fresh courage from the abundance of the indispensable necessaries of life, and from the inexhaustible riches of the mines, hailed their first governor with the expansion befitting men who after such a very great calamity already considered themselves happy, and looked forward to a still greater happiness.

Don Antonio Rolim had brought instructions to establish a town on a fit site, with the task of expelling the Spanish Jesuits settled on the right bank of the Guaporé, and to promote that navigation which Manoel de Lima in 1742 so daringly carried into effect; and making choice of the town of Pouse Alegre for being in a good situation, he gave it the name of Villa Bella on the 19th March 1752, and soon after raised it to a capital, transferring to it the cathedral which until then was the hermitage of Santa Anna. The navigation which perhaps was thought easier than it really was, nevertheless was encouraged as much as possible; of much greater advantage, however, turned out the two roads which the governor caused to be opened, facilitating the communications with Rio de Janeiro and Bahia, it being certain, that even so, the intrepid Paulistas continued to traverse by the river *Camapoan* defying the hostile savages.

The Jesuits were obliged to withdraw from the places which they occupied intrusively and illegally, and Dom Antonio Rolim who during his governorship, which lasted fourteen years, placed the administrative order on a regular footing, encouraged and caused the development of the cultivation of the sugar-cane, attracted new colonists, in-

creased the resources of the royal revenue, and he would have done more, if from 1759 to 1764 he had not been obliged to defend at the swords point, on the frontiers of Santa Cruz de la Sierra, the boundaries of the Portuguese dominions.

In the succession of governors of Matto Grosso we ought not to forget Luiz de Albuquerque Mello Pereira e Caceres, who arrived travelling by land, from Rio de Janeiro, spending 14 months in going across mountains and through woods, of which he caused an itinerary to be made. This governor founded the village of Albuquerque, collecting together in it the Indians *Guatós* und *Quinquinados*, catechumens of the Italian Missionary José de Monserrate, laid down the line of demarcation of the boundaries of the captaincy in 1775, ordered a garrison fort to be built in the *Fecho dos Morros*, which nervertheless was erected much lower down, and the name of which—*Nova Coimbra*—or *Forte de Coimbra*, preserves and calls to mind the memory of heroic deeds.

In 1768 the *Payagoás*, as already mentioned, separated from the Guaycurús; the latter, however, haughty and brave continued to dispute the supremacy and to carry on hostilities against the colonizers of Matto Grosso, and in 1775 they had the audacity to ascend by the *Paraguay* up to *Villa Maria*, where they killed sixteen persons, carrying away others prisoners and captives. This daring determined the establishing of the fortified place of *Coimbra* with its inhabitants, before which place in 1780 the *Guaycurús* presented themselves in a friendly manner, bartering and doing a rough kind of business, which at least indicated a spirit of friendship about to be celebrated by mutual consent, but in the following year returning in greater number and apparently with the same friendly spirit, those same Indians fell unawares and treacherously upon

the inhabitants and killed about fifty of them, victims of an imprudent confidence.

In 1801 the first brilliant page of the *fort of Coimbra* was written. Dom Lazaro da Ribeira, who had sallied out from Asuncion with an imposing Spanish force, in vain attacked the fort on the evening of the 16th September, and on the following day, and taking advantage of the superiority of their resources, intimated to the commander Ricardo Freire de Almeida, that he should surrender; this latter, however, replied as the Portuguese heroes of the 16th century were wont to reply in Asia, and was enabled to save the glory and the honour of the Portuguese flag; he saw after a siege of nine days of frustated warlike efforts the hostile Spanish chief retire with loss and dismay.

The last attack of the Guaycurús worthy of mention, was that treacherously made in 1781: a few years afterwards followed the peace and vassalage already referred to. The repulse experienced by D. Lazaro appeared to suffice for the Spaniards.

From 1801 onwards the captaincy of Matto Grosso, at peace with the *Guaycurús*, free from the Jesuits and not attacked by the Spaniards, who a few years afterwards saw the beginning of the war of independence of their American colonies, began to prosper, much less impeded than before. In 1818 a royal letter patent of 7th September promoted the town of Cuyabá to a city of the same name, and bestowed an equal rank on Villa Bella under the name of Matto Grosso; this latter, however, lost two years afterwards the high position of capital, which passed over to Cuyabá: inasmuch as the prevalent endemic fevers in that locality of the Guaporé and in its neighbourhood declared themselves with even greater intensity in 1819 and 1820.

The last governor of Matto Grosso, Francisco de Paula Magessi Tavares de Carvalho, who had taken charge of the

administration in 1818 was substituted in 1821 by a *provisionary constitutional Junta*, which was indicative of the movement made by the revolution in Portugal in 1820.

Like her other sister captaincies, Matto Grosso passed to a province of the Empire of Brazil, declared independent and founded in 1822. Since that period, order and public tranquillity have been always maintained unaltered in the heart of this province with the sole exception of an unbridled and giddy act of anarchy of the scum of the population of Cuyaba, who, finding the Goverment without action, without force, or a will of its own, there ruled, and extended the ill to distant towns and villages, spreading terror, and soiling the land of their country with terrible murders from the 30th May to the 5th July 1854, when the colonel João Popino Caldas succeeded in putting down and finally overthrowing the anarchy. This fearful but temporary episode cannot discredit the mild character and peaceful disposition of the inhabitants of Matto Grosso, who during half a century of Brazilian nationality and of political life in the Empire has given no other example of disrespect for the laws, or of a revolting spirit, it being on the contrary incontestably acknowledged, that although little advanced in civilization, it is remarkable for its docility of disposition, its hospitable customs, which it retains with other patriarchal virtues.

But tranquil in the interior, the province of Matto Grosso must exist in a state of apprehension, on account of the boundary question between the Empire and Bolivia, and especially with Paraguay, which interested Matto Grosso so deeply. It is known in what manner diplomatic negotiations were so often frustrated in the endeavour to settle those international disputes; happily, however, they came to a peaceful and amicable termination with Bolivia by the treaty of 1868 (already mentioned in the proper

place) which took into consideration the interests and just right of both parties.

The same did not happen with Paraguay.

In 1864 a war broke out provoked and commenced without previous declaration by the Dictator Francisco Solano Lopes under circumstances of unbridled ferocity. Two provinces of the Empire, those of Matto Grosso and of Rio Grande were unexpectedly invaded.

There is not sufficient space in this place for the history or a brief mention of this war: its great campaigns, its memorable battles had other theatres than that of Matto Grosso; this province, however, suffered a cruel martyrdom. Unarmed and neglected it received the first blow in the 28th December 1864.

General Barrios commanding six thousand Paraguayans, destined for the invasion of Matto Grosso, arrived in sight of the port of Coimbra, landed artillery, planted batteries, and during forty-eight hours, swept the fort commanded by lieutenant-colonel Porto Carrero, who having at his disposal scarcely 155 soldiers, 17 convicts and some Indians, and with such a scarcity of amunition, that he was obliged to employ 70 of the soldiers' wives to make cartridges, resisted two days, repelled an assault, and on the night of the 30th December retired (secretly) in the steamer *Anhambahy* with all the garrison, making an admirable retreat after a glorious resistance.

Barrios then invaded the south of Matto Grosso with impunity, and his semi-barbarous hosts distinguished themselves by murders, useless destruction, and by the unjustifiable captivity of families, of poor women and children, who were sent to Paraguay to expiate *the crime of their Brazilian nationality.*

The province of Matto Grosso was not abandoned by the Empire; it could not, however, be the theatre of the war; the distance was enormous which the armies would

have to overcome in order to reach its territory; even so, at an immense sacrifice, a numerous and valiant column of soldiers came to the aid of the province, and who fearlessly advanced even beyond the territory of the south invaded by the Paraguayans, but another enemy against whom mortal valour avail nought, came to destroy the small and heroic army which had dared so much and with such fearlessness. A pestilence fearfully developed compelled it to a sad but glorious retreat, which was effected in the presence of Paraguayan forces and during a series of attacks and combats, in which the latter were always repulsed, and which was concluded with honour to the auri-verde banner untarnished, and saved by the remainders of the almost annihilated column, whose path the pestilence left strewed with their dead.

The history of that afflicting, terrible march, and which was marked by energy, and by the virility of manhood, has been circumstantially narrated in the excellent book "*La retraite de la Lagune*" by the major of engineers Dr. Escaragnole Tannay, an eminent Brazilian, well deserving of his country, sharing the martyrdom of that unfortunate but worthy and illustrious military column of Matto Grosso.

The victories of the armies of the triple alliance, and of the Imperial navy which threatened the power of the Dictator Lopes close to his capital, obliged the latter to call around him all his forces, thus freeing from the Paraguayan invasion the territory of Matto Grosso, tormented by its vandal-like incursions.

The war came to a conclusion by the extinction of all the power as well as of the life of Lopes, who had provoked it: the real cause of it was the blind ambition of Francisco Solano Lopes, who otherwise sought an imaginary pretext without any foundation; among its results, however, it afforded the one of a definitive solution of the

boundary question by the treaty of 1872, in which, it ought to be repeated a thousand times, Brazil, the generous conqueror, did not exact, nor desire from the conquered republic anything beyond what she had proposed, and insisted upon in a diplomatic and amiable manner for many years.

Another result of the war of great advantage to, and of much promise on the future for the province of Matto Grosso, is in the full liberty of navigation of the Paraguay, to which Lopes opposed ridiculous obstacles under the pretext of fiscal measures.

Eighty-one years after the creation and twenty one after the instalment of the Bishoprick of Matto Grosso, it was raised to that dignity by the bull of Leo XII., on the 15th June 1827.

## ASTRONOMICAL POSITION AND DIMENSIONS.

The latitude is all south, and the province lies between 7° 30′ and 24° 10′; the longitude all western includes the meridians of 7° 25′ and 22°.

Its greatest extent from north to south is 332 leagues from the mouth of the river *Fresco* on the right bank of the *Xingú* to the left bank of the *Igurey*, rivulet which opens into the Paraná, and from east to west 265 leagues, from the mouth of the river *das Mortes* in the left bank of the *Araguaya* to the right bank of the river *Madeira*. The river coast of this province is calculated at 1000 leagues, and its superfice is 50,175 square leagues; it is therefore the second in magnitude in the Empire as to dimension, and almost equal to that of the Amazonas, the only one which exceeds it.

## BOUNDARIES.

It is bounded on the north by the province of the Amazonas by the *thalweg* of the river *Giparaná* or *Ma-*

*chado do Mar*, which disembogues in the *Madeira*, and of the river *Uruguatás*, or *Ireguatús*, which runs into the Tapajós, and by the general Cordilheira; with that of Grão Pará by the rivers *Tres Barras* or of *S. Manoel*, which also opens into the *Tapajós*, and *Caray* and *Fresco*, affluents of the *Xingú*, and *Aquiquy*, which enters the *Araguaya* near the falls of *S. Maria*, and where begins the serra of the *Gradaús;* and with that of Goyaz, as already mentioned. To the south by the republic of Paraguay; to the east by the province of Goyaz by the *Araguaya* from its springs to the mouth of the *Aquiquy*, below the rapids of *S. Maria*, and where commences the mountain range of the *Gradaús;* by the province of Minas by the *thalweg* of the *Paranahyba* from the mouth of the river *Apuré* to the confluence of the *Rio Grande* or *Paraná*, and by the provinces of S. Paulo and Paraná, by the river of this last name, being with the first from the confluence of the *Paranahyba* with the *Grande* to the mouth of the *Paranapanema*, and with the second from the mouth of this last river to the great rapid at the Salto de *Guayrá* or *Sete-Quedas*. To the west by the province of Amazonas through the river Madeira from its confluence with the *Mamoré* to the mouth of the *Gyparaná*, and finally by Bolivia.

The boundaries with *Paraguay* and Bolivia are found mentioned in their appropriate places in the second chapter of the first part. The interprovincial boundaries are not free from disputes.

## CLIMATE.

Is variable according to the different latitudes and to local circumstances; in a large part of the province, where the land is more or less elevated, and principally in that which lies beyond the tropic, the climate is healthy and in some places mild; in the marshy places, and on the low and swampy banks of some of the rivers, intermittent fevers

prevail when the waters subside; it is certain, however, that the unhealthy localities and zones are well known and limited. In general the climate of the province is healthy, and in several distinct districts on a par with the most favoured.

## PHYSICAL ASPECT.

The land is hilly and elevated, including, however, vast plains; the mountain range which comes from the north, that of the Parecis, which advances from the west, and which precedes the vast plateau of the same name, called plains of the Parecis, and a series of serras and mountains give this province very unequal land, and most abundant irrigation.

## OROGRAPHY.

The *western* Cordilheira or *das Vertentes* is the principal one in this province and makes its influence felt over the principal courses of the rivers. To the east, and at the point where Matto Grosso, Goyaz and Minas Geraes touch, that Cordilheira extends itselfs under the name of serras of *Santa Martha*, *Sellada*, and of the *Sacco:* to the south-east the *Serra de Santa Barbara* is close to that of *Anhambahy* which lies to its west.

To the south with its important boundary line that of *Maracajú* bends in a semi-circular curve.

To the west the principal mountain-range, throwing out ramifications which end on the right bank of the Madeira, goes by the name of Cordilheira of *Parecis*, which precedes the immense plateau called *plains of Parecis;* the serras of the *Aguapehy*, *Tapirapuan*, of the *Pary*, *Arapares*, of the *Tombador*, of the *Mangubeira*, and of the *Roncador*, leaving to the north of that of the Pary the *Serra Azul*, proceed with different inclines from the west to the east until they come near to the *Sellada* and *Santa Martha*, with which

that of *Roncador* connects itselfs by a series of hills and elevated lands. Besides some other serras of minor importance to the west there is likewise the serra of the *Dourados*. To the north the mountain range of *Norte* enters into the province from which the serras of *Apiacas* and *Morena* indicate ramifications: to the north-east the *Serra do Gradaús* appears extending in the direction of the east.

Besides these there are other serras and all of them whether mentioned or not are remarkable more for their extent than their height.

## HYDROGRAPHY.

The Hydropraphic system of the province is important and most remarkable; it has been, however, studied in all its basins *in the eighth chapter of the first part.*

Six are the considerable basins into which the numerous rivers and all the waters of the province flow. To the north, those of the rivers *Madeira, Juruena*, which joins the *Tapajós*, and *Xiagú*; to the east, those of the *Araguaya*, and of the *Paraná;* to the west those of the *Madeira* and the *Paraguay.*

The *Paraguay* and the *Paraná* receive the waters which flow from the extreme south of the province.

The Cordilheira of the *Vertentes* forms the principal divisionary line of the waters, and in the plains of the Parecis is manifested the most considerable and predominant *divortium aquarum* of the general hydrographic system of Brazil, in relation to the two great basins of the north and of the south.

The numerous rivers of the province which throw themselves into each one of the six which form the basins above mentioned, were pointed out, when each one of those principal rivers were described, and to go beyond what had then been written, would be a task which would fill many pages. It is enough then to say, that the province

to Matto Grosso is one of the most favoured, and plentifully watered; that from its interior flow out to many basins rivers which are available for navigation hy canoes, boats, &c., and that at the north-east and west, it is plentifully furnished with magnificent water powers, which, where they are impeded by falls, can, assisted by works of art, or by the easier and more positive resource of intermediate railroads of short extent, avoid or do away with these and other obstacles, and offer frank, easy, and immense means of communication, uniting in fraternal and prodigious navigation the basins of the Prata and the Amazonas, and drawing closer its ties with the provinces of Paraná, S. Paulo, and Minas Geraes by the Paraná, which also connects it with that of Goyaz, which besides the latter possesses the mutual and splendid course of the Araguaya to unite its destiny to that of the central sister of Brazil.

This perspective is no vain dream, it is merely a future of which the onward movement of progress uniformly accelerated announces a nearer realization than the pessimists imagine, and those who care not to see the harmonious combination of an exceptional natural greatness with the positive interest and with the material economical advantages —incentives to man.

## NATURAL PRODUCTIONS.

*Mineral kingdom.* Has already been duly taken into consideration in the general survey: in the report of the president of the province in 1871 are to be found the following expressions of encouragement, which could not have been written by chance, or merely for flattery: *Gold, veins of which are frequently to be met with in many places; diamonds, mines of which perhaps even more plentiful, have yet been explored, and lastly copper, iron,* &c. The official information thereon cannot but be accepted, inasmuch as it indicates much less than the recognized and proved mineral richness of the province assures.

*Vegetable kingdom.* The Flora of the province is most rich, and luxuriant,—immense prests on the banks of the rivers and on the skirts of the serras display the most varied vegetation, and extraordinary abundance of the best timber for different building purposes: indigo and rice grow wild; the opuntia, Ipecacuanha, Jalap, Vanilha, Copahiba trees, gum mastic, manna, dragon's blood, India rubber, *maté*, the plant upon which the cochineal feeds, and many others of great utility are plentiful and at the disposal of man.

Guabirobás, Ground-Cajús, Goiava, Araçaza, Mangaba, Banana, and many other shrubs and trees, yielding highly prized fruits, are common.

*Animal kingdom.* Is also the same as that of the other provinces; but in numbers and quantity naturally on a large scale. Ayres Cazal says that there are tapirs of *all colours*: white deer are to be met with: ounces are numerous, and the Indians know how to hunt them with incredible boldness, attacking them face to face, and taking in one hand a small forked stick, which they allow the beast to take into his mouth,—and in the other hand a knife, with which they soon kill it.

## AGRICULTURE, INDUSTRY AND COMMERCE.

The soil of Matto Grosso is of a wonderful fertility; but the great expense of conveyance almost confines its agriculture to the wants of the consumption of the province. The sugar cane, tobacco, cotton, and mandioc, the common cereals of the country, wheat, all esculents are so advantageously cultivated as to appear incredible. The report of the President of the province, presented in 1871, states that there exist *sugar-cane plantations which without being replanted have yielded a crop during 40 years:* that Indian corn produces at the rate of $^1/_{200}$. No one plants rice, which only requires to be plucked by those who require it.

Ayres Cazal has already said that in Matto Grosso the orange trees bear fruit throughout the year, and now the report above quoted confirms it, informing us that *the immense orange orchards are constantly and promiscuously covered with blossoms, with unripe and with ripe fruit.* Cochineal and Erva Maté abound, but without industry shewing any inclination to turn it to profit by means of exportation, which is even now very expensive. The branches of industry which are prosperous and export their produce are confined to mining operations in gold and diamonds, and to the breeding of horned cattle, of which latter some thousand heads are sent out of the province yearly, besides what are slaughtered in the province, which is favourable to the exportation of hides. Ipecacuanha and one or two more articles of produce accompany these articles of provincial trade which has in them its modest quota.

The policy of the peevish isolation of the dictators of Paraguay, which closed to Matto Grosso the entrance to the Atlantic by way of the Plata, was put a stop to in 1870. For the Amazonas, another and more superb ocean door, it will, in a time not far distant, turn back upon its hinges and disclose the flight of this marvellous province, as soon as the railway completes the free navigation of some of its rivers, avoiding tremendous falls which impeded them.

Matto Grosso is an abyss of riches, the revelation of which will be splendid and dazzling in a future not far distant.

## STATISTICS.

*Population:* 64,000 inhabitants, of which 60,000 are free and 4000 slaves.

*National and provincial representation:* 1 senator, 2 deputies of the general assembly, and 22 of the provincial: the province forming one single electoral district, with 136 electors, 5768 citizens qualified to vote.

*Public force: national guard* with 1 superior command, 8 battalions, and 1 section of battalion of infantry on active service, 1 battalion of reserve, presenting 3351 national guards on active service and 814 of reserve; total 4165.

*Police corps:* 60 men (effective state).

*Primary and secondary instruction. Public primary*: schools for boys 19 with 796 scholars, and 6 for girls with 151 scholars. *Private primary:* 3 schools for boys with 36 scholars. *Public secondary:* 1 establishment for boys with 49 scholars.

According to the report of the president of the province of 1871 it appears that the establishment of secondary instruction mentioned in the statistic is that of the seminary of the Bishoprick. The same report informs us that there is (at least) 1 establishment or college of primary and secondary instruction for girls, established since 1870 in the city of *Cuyabá*, and in which is taught besides the elements, French, history, geography, and drawing, in addition to the accomplishments suitable to a girls education; it is frequented by 26 scholars.

*Civil, judiciary and ecclesiastical division.* The province of Matto Grosso is divided and sub-divided into districts, municipalities, and parishes, as follow:

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 1. Capital | 1. Cuyabá (city a. cap.) | 1. Bom Jesus de Cuyabá. |
| | | 2. S. Gonçalo de Pedro Segundo. |
| | | 3. N. S. da Guia. |
| | | 4. N. S. do Livramento. |
| | | 5. S. Antonio do Rio Abaixo. |
| | | 6. N. S. Sant' Anna da Chapada. |
| | | 7. N. S. das Brotas. |
| | | 8. Santa Cruz de Curumbá. |
| | | 9. N. S. do Carmo de Miranda. |
| | 2. Poconé (t.) | 1. N. S. do Rosario de Poconé. |
| | 3. Diamantino (t.) | 1. N. S. da Conceição do Diamantino. |
| | 4. Villa-Maria (t.) | 1. S. Luiz da Villa-Maria. |

| Districts. | Municipalities. | Parishes. |
|---|---|---|
| 2. Matto Grosso | 1. Matto Grosso (c.) | 1. SS. Trindade de Matto-Grosso. |
| 3. Miranda | 1. Sant' Anna do Paranahyba (t.) | 1. N. S. Sant' Anna do Paranahyba. |

## TOPOGRAPHY.

*Cuyabá*, city and capital of the province, situated near a stream, and at less than half a league from the river from which it takes its name; it is well populated, is proud of its churches, and of its arsenals both of war and marine; of a hospital of charity, of the palaces or houses of the provincial government and of the bishop, above all, however, it is to be recommended for its healthiness. *Matto Grosso*, formerly *Villa Bella*, the ancient capital, situated on the banks of the Guaporé, formerly prosperous, and afterwards in a state of decadency: its finest edifices are going to ruin, and its misfortune is principally owing to the intermittent and malignant fevers which are there prevalent at a certain season every year. *Corumbá* on the Paraguay, a simple parish; but bustling and promising, having a custom house, and the beginning of a promising commerce. *Villa Maria*, on the Paraguay, 7 leagues above the confluence of the Jaurú; agriculture supports it, and the abundant yield of Ipecacuanha is of no small assistance: its growth is relatively remarkable. *Miranda*, another parish, on the Mondego, is progressing with smiling and vigorous development. *Coimbra*, a simple garrison, but which *de rigueur* must be mentioned, inasmuch as it is a military port on the Paraguay, and still more so because it preserves the undying memory of the heroic defences of the last century, and in the recent period of the Paraguay war. It is on the hill where rises up the port of Coimbra, that the famous *grotto of hell* is to be seen, perhaps the most extensive and magnificent of the known world.

## CIVILIZATION AND RELIGIOUS INSTRUCTION OF THE INDIANS.

The report of the president of the province of Matto Grosso for 1871 mentions the existence of various hordes of Indians, who have intercourse with the civilized people, and of others who, hostile, do all the harm they can, at great distances from the towns, and where they are not afraid of meeting serious resistance.

Regarding the instruction of the Indians, information is wanting, but the example of those peaceable hordes of already holding intercourse is an encouraging incentive to intelligent missions, instructors of the savage tribes. In the task of colonization and in stimulating spontaneous immigration to this country, the Empire has expended enormous sums and with but insignificant results, and an expenditure very considerably smaller might have been much more productively employed for the purpose of instructing the Indians.

The Imperial Government which has thrown away so much money, making experiments of systems inviting European colonization and immigration, might and very well can, expose itself to a much smaller outlay, even although the result should be problematical, to call to society, to labour, to civilization, and to the general good many thousand savage Indians who are children of the soil and the land, of this climate and the natural conditions of their country, and therefore the fittest and most robust labourers which the soil of their country and ours can possess.

## CHAPTER XXII.

### PUBLIC REVENUE, AND COMMERCIAL AND MARITIME MOVEMENT OF THE PROVINCES.

It being advisable to present this statistic in a general table, it is obligatory on us to adopt the last financial year in the first article which treats of public revenue, of which there is full official knowledge of the items *Receipts*, and *Expenditure*, absolutely verified and closed; by which not a few provinces will remain backward in the respective statistical data of the year adopted, besides which they could be perfectly appreciated in the development of their riches.

The financial year which heads the table of this first article is that of 1868—1869, and the statistic is copied from the report of the minister of the Empire, presented in May 1872.

The tables of the commercial and maritime movement are also official and copied from the report of the minister of finance, also of May 1872. In these the knowledge and information acquired by the Government, go as far forward as 1869; there is in this a sensible discrepance, and irregularity of system, in the work of this chapter: but the excuse of such a defect is to be found in the endeavour to present the most recent statistics, and those already investigated.

# Public Revenues of the Provinces. Financial year 1868—1869.

| Provinces. | Receipt. | | Expenditure. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | General | Provincial | General | Provincial |
| Amazonas | 73.400$587 | 540.395$746 | 388.600$772 | 540.395$746 |
| Pará | 3.884.587$287 | 1.600.000$000 | 1.366.452$888 | 1.357.918$313 |
| Maranhão | 2.477.740$496 | 741.680$943 | 1.237.456$870 | 741.680$943 |
| Piauhy | 339.160$967 | 362.796$869 | 329.102$597 | 362.706$869 |
| Ceará | 1.502.356$331 | 792.000$000 | 615.668$274 | 787.703$167 |
| Rio-Grande do Norte | 277.473$984 | 357.678$169 | 235.202$379 | 357.678$169 |
| Parahiba | 626.428$341 | ..... | 371.475$101 | 549.932$759 |
| Pernambuco | 11.067.209$195 | ..... | 4.400.513$852 | 2.624.350$502 |
| Alagôas | 1.073.141$956 | 620.836$824 | 867.500$715 | 594.485$739 |
| Sergipe | 487.218$553 | 505.519$000 | 310.276$863 | 565.821$943 |
| Bahia | 9.996.126$631 | ..... | 3.750.925$905 | 1.890.399$700 |
| Espirito-Santo | 77.331$816 | 220.000$000 | 243.879$152 | 220.000$000 |
| Rio de Janeiro | 1.196.096$502 | 4.208.736$170 | 283.582$489 | 4.208.736$170 |
| Municipio-Neutro | 43.665.849$956 | ..... | 108.466.379$339 | ..... |
| São-Paulo | 3.560.493$999 | 2.430.000$000 | 1.048.948$628 | 2.435.209$252 |
| Paraná | 517.752$787 | 713.400$027 | 451.919$580 | 713.400$027 |
| Santa-Catharina | 338.146$109 | 267.418$427 | 939.211$808 | 267.418$427 |
| Rio-Grande do Sul | 5.132.174$968 | 1.793.632$989 | 4.958.449$628 | 1.793.632$989 |
| Minas-Geraes | 877.859$206 | ..... | 819.430$531 | 1.684.931$789 |
| Goyaz | 41.015$921 | 125.125$723 | 395.312$115 | 170.734$756 |
| Matto-Grosso | 177.619$251 | ..... | 2.566.446$830 | 264.099$840 |

Table of the fluvial navigation of the Amazonas between the ports of Manáos, Pará and the fluviatic Republics.

| Entries | | | | | Departures | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| From whence | Nationality | Vessels | Tons | N° of crew | Destination | Nationality | Vessels | Tons | N° of crew |
| Pará | Brasilian | 60 | 28.854 | 2.113 | Pará | Brasilian | 48 | 26.856 | 1.922 |
| Perú | Peruvian | 2 | 739 | 92 | Pará | Portuguese | 2 | 280 | 18 |
| Venezuela | Venezuelan | 8 | 228 | 56 | Perú | Peruvian | 2 | 739 | 92 |
| Venezuela | Bolivian | 1 | 140 | 9 | Venezuela | Venezuelan | 4 | 145 | 36 |
| | | 71 | 29.961 | 2.270 | | | 56 | 28.020 | 2.068 |

Observation. — This table does not embrace the movement of the merchandize between the provinces of Amazonas and the fluviatic republics, for nothing was said about it in the collectories of Manáos and Tabatinga, and only this table of navigation came from Manáos.

---

## A LAST REMARK RESPECTING SUNDRY PROVINCES.

In treating of the *public force* in the state of the provinces it appeared to the writer of this book, that it would be more regular to indicate exclusively the statistics of the national guard, and of the police corps of each of them, as the only forces of a provincial character; it is notwithstanding certain, that in some provinces, many corps of the line, or regular army, are stationed and perform duty, and the special mention was left for this place of the distribution of those forces which are under the exclusive dominion of the General Government of the Empire, and which is, or was, as follows and as the minister of war informed the legislative body in the year 1872.

## Table showing the receipts of the customs in the 18 months of the financial year of 1870—1871.

| Custom-houses | | Ordinary revenue | | | | | Extraordinary revenue | Deposits | Total |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Importation | Maritime clearance | Exportation | Interior | Amount | | | |
| 1st order | Rio de Janeiro | 25.505.283$208 | 244.897$880 | 6.851.571$360 | 17.034$880 | 32.618.787$328 | 27.678$045 | 55.688$773 | 32.702.154$146 |
| 2d order | Pernambuco | 7.819.607$731 | 50.600$799 | 1.365.514$319 | 20.066$577 | 9.255.789$426 | 8.492$143 | 223.423$358 | 9.487.704$927 |
| | Bahia | 7.445.644$519 | 56.731$101 | 1.568.096$273 | 1.797$780 | 9.072.269$673 | 6.096$657 | $ | 9.078.366$330 |
| 3rd order | Pará | 3.585.814$517 | 23.494$755 | 1.095.952$539 | 289.175$605 | 4.994.437$416 | 7.908$942 | 103.626$321 | 5.104.972$679 |
| | Rio-Grande | 3.216.427$522 | 17.824$750 | 624.746$972 | 172.867$082 | 4.031.866$326 | 51.623$361 | 71.177$366 | 4.154.667$053 |
| | Maranhão | 1.759.856$122 | 6.734$821 | 400.279$802 | 188.635$328 | 2.355.506$073 | 4.940$126 | 4.273$509 | 2.364.719$708 |
| 4th order | Ceará | 1.412.260$734 | 5.348$255 | 478.151$838 | 55.654$509 | 1.951.415$336 | 3.563$053 | 3.731$036 | 1.958.711$415 |
| | Santos | 800.824$588 | 17.859$860 | 1.166.377$549 | 97.533$850 | 2.082.595$847 | 3.555$286 | 20.163$404 | 2.106.314$437 |
| | Porto-Alegre | 815.905$173 | 2.560$300 | 32.137$636 | 232.104$929 | 1.082.708$038 | 12.774$020 | 4.922$878 | 1.100.404$936 |
| | Parahyba | 1.751$956 | 1.482$000 | 124.806$710 | 31.403$579 | 159.264$245 | 791$763 | 201$840 | 160.257$848 |
| | Maceió | 33.069$796 | 5.859$250 | 338.067$152 | 74.318$730 | 451.314$928 | 1.189$688 | 369$561 | 452.874$177 |
| | Paranaguá | 15.460$905 | 7.284$725 | 171.579$700 | 13.767$745 | 208.093$075 | 1.056$862 | 3.672$152 | 212.822$089 |
| 5th order | Parnahyba | 173.948$438 | 1.522$355 | 46.027$732 | 10.860$421 | 232.358$946 | 28$155 | 918$874 | 233.305$975 |
| | Uruguayana | 175.606$236 | 654$055 | 8.469$510 | 16.317$673 | 201.047$474 | 1.403$369 | 6.182$174 | 208.633$017 |
| | Santa-Catharina | 94.730$583 | 3.078$125 | 30.179$188 | 55.054$345 | 183.042$241 | 1.619$396 | 1.083$400 | 185.745$037 |
| | Rio-Grande do Norte | 73.371$570 | 2.016$000 | 103.853$339 | 12.580$464 | 191.821$373 | 340$394 | $ | 192.161$767 |
| | Aracajú | 10.718$941 | 1.787$619 | 67.121$114 | 22.875$321 | 102.502$995 | 604$268 | 1.560$045 | 104.667$308 |
| | Penêdo | 32.400$341 | 425$000 | 7.569$655 | 10.703$088 | 51.098$084 | 303$517 | 1.928$737 | 53.330$338 |
| | Manáos | 9.757$434 | 328$900 | 186$152 | 18.687$351 | 28.663$837 | 220$543 | $ | 28.884$380 |
| | Espirito-Santo | 2.995$784 | $ | 510$874 | 28.029$465 | 30.536$123 | 4.934$991 | 8.360$950 | 43.832$064 |
| | São-Francisco | 1.807$880 | 709$500 | 1.764$363 | 7.331$607 | 10.974$320 | 194$833 | $ | 11.169$153 |
| | | 52.987.063$978 | 450.265$050 | 14.482.963$747 | 1.375.800$329 | 69.396.093$104 | 139.321$412 | 511.284$368 | 69.946.698$884 |

P. 576, A.

## Table showing the receipts of the customs in 6 months of the financial year of 1871—1872.

| | Custom-houses | Ordinary revenue | | | | | Extraordinary revenue | Deposits | Total |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Importation | Maritime clearance | Exportation | Interior | Amount | | | |
| 1st order | Rio de Janeiro | 14.574.927$924 | 144.794$660 | 3.614.607$410 | 9.580$970 | 18.343.910$964 | 15.309$570 | 139.419$928 | 18.498.640$462 |
| 2d order | Pernambuco | 4.447.918$806 | 27.143$680 | 833.473$210 | 12.433$059 | 5.320.968$755 | 6.956$133 | 110.617$257 | 5.438.542$145 |
| | Bahia | 4.187.659$620 | 31.423$710 | 721.698$315 | 1.170$790 | 4.941.952$535 | 2.980$064 | 2.872$137 | 4.947.804$736 |
| 3rd order | Pará | 1.873.822$836 | 11.916$750 | 595.601$274 | 112.607$958 | 2.593.948$818 | 9.653$305 | 12.739$603 | 2.616.341$726 |
| | Rio-Grande do Sul | 648.615$191 | 3.182$250 | 136.084$989 | 22.867$634 | 810.750$065 | 9.594$779 | 12.002$960 | 832.347$804 |
| | Maranhão | 830.523$828 | 3.325$372 | 185.910$743 | 79.973$768 | 1.108.734$311 | 10.564$142 | 2.686$230 | 1.121.984$683 |
| 4th order | Ceará | 666.661$116 | 1.239$320 | 272.245$915 | 20.353$936 | 960.500$347 | 3.351$562 | 974$869 | 964.826$769 |
| | Santos | 528.818$760 | 9.287$250 | 734.714$554 | 82.340$780 | 1.355.161$344 | 2.401$262 | 15.672$933 | 1.373.235$539 |
| | Porto-Alegre | 448.629$801 | 1.196$250 | 20.250$183 | 102.571$194 | 572.647$428 | 4.768$531 | 3.312$704 | 580.728$663 |
| | Parahyba | 6.875$841 | 1.922$250 | 131.246$301 | 13.311$531 | 153.355$923 | 211$014 | 290$670 | 153.857$607 |
| | Macció | 4.436$451 | 1.441$250 | 102.983$176 | 100.149$231 | 209.010$118 | 58$177 | 180$172 | 209.248$467 |
| | Paranaguá | 6.050$643 | 1.788$150 | 55.756$837 | 5.324$830 | 68.920$520 | 127$528 | 1.593$872 | 70.641$920 |
| 5th order | Parnahyba | 14.661$615 | 316$400 | 9.896$880 | 5.260$038 | 30.143$933 | 1$663 | 4$311 | 30.149$907 |
| | Uruguayana | 71.947$124 | 298$350 | 5.780$780 | 7.533$164 | 85.559$418 | 1.051$207 | 7.079$056 | 93.689$681 |
| | Santa-Catharina | 118.314$150 | 2.076$835 | 28.403$602 | 15.942$119 | 165.336$766 | 395$014 | 8.952$411 | 174.684$191 |
| | Rio-Grande do Norte | 56.959$223 | 2.293$000 | 90.089$718 | 5.691$792 | 155.033$733 | 98$749 | 278$000 | 155.410$482 |
| | Aracajú | 17.335$790 | 795$000 | 36.239$290 | 8.670$338 | 63.040$418 | 65$836 | 360$500 | 63.466$750 |
| | Penêdo | $ | $ | $ | 419$804 | 419$804 | $ | $ | 419$804 |
| | Manáos | 2.889$385 | $ | $090 | 7.326$370 | 10.215$845 | 95$595 | $ | 10.311$440 |
| | Espirito-Santo | 1.155$540 | $ | 226$313 | 12.576$317 | 13.958$170 | 276$010 | 943$407 | 15.177$587 |
| | São-Francisco | 4.571$265 | 47$250 | 759$379 | 945$685 | 6.323$579 | 62$129 | $ | 6.386$008 |
| | | 28.521.774$310 | 245.088$887 | 7.575.969$079 | 627.060$318 | 36.969.892$794 | 68.022$570 | 319.981$011 | 37.357.896$375 |

Observation. — The revenue of the customs of Santos is for seven months, in the financial year 1870—1871, and that of Parahyba for five months in the financial year of 1871—1872, on account of there being no balances in the Treasury.

P. 576, B.

## Table of long-voyage navigation of the Empire by Provinces. Financial years of 1868 to 1871.

| Provinces | Distinctions | 1868—1869 | | 1869—1870 | | 1870—1871 | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Entries | Departures | Entries | Departures | Entries | Departures |
| Rio de Janeiro | Vessels | 1.376 | 1.091 | 1.333 | 1.079 | 1.284 | 1.075 |
| | Tons | 590.453 | 682.900 | 639.152 | 740.731 | 715.030 | 739.536 |
| | Crew | 21.063 | 18.977 | 22.874 | 21.539 | 26.842 | 25.579 |
| Bahia | Vessels | 464 | 430 | 514 | 462 | 443 | 447 |
| | Tons | 193.722 | 188.741 | 219.340 | 230.750 | 227.155 | 239.302 |
| | Crew | 9.365 | 8.973 | 10.098 | 9.442 | 10.468 | 9.059 |
| Pernambuco | Vessels | 581 | 524 | 497 | 529 | * 547 | * 512 |
| | Tons | 256.897 | 178.751 | 183.378 | 208.452 | * 236.303 | * 138.115 |
| | Crew | 13.469 | 6.297 | 8.963 | 8.459 | * 12.296 | * 6.813 |
| Maranhão | Vessels | 95 | 94 | 106 | 97 | 87 | 41 |
| | Tons | 38.455 | 39.434 | 49.755 | 48.867 | 39.101 | 19.107 |
| | Crew | 1.236 | 1.240 | 1.600 | 1.528 | 1.637 | 583 |
| Pará | Vessels | 187 | 183 | 178 | 470 | * 177 | * 177 |
| | Tons | 73.144 | 72.519 | 79.454 | 77.659 | * 67.369 | * 66.789 |
| | Crew | 2.583 | 2.524 | 2.897 | 2.799 | * 2.370 | * 2.313 |
| Rio-Grande do Sul | Vessels | 346 | 137 | 302 | 111 | 263 | 119 |
| | Tons | 69.793 | 28.046 | 61.072 | 21.834 | 49.325 | 24.233 |
| | Crew | 1.988 | 771 | 1.734 | 604 | 1.649 | 734 |
| São-José do Norte | Vessels | ..... | 97 | ..... | 72 | ..... | 75 |
| | Tons | ..... | 20.587 | ..... | 15.130 | ..... | 14.694 |
| | Crew | ..... | 430 | ..... | 435 | ..... | 437 |
| Porto-Alegre | Vessels | 59 | 56 | 47 | 41 | 32 | 23 |
| | Tons | 9.447 | 10.799 | 7.771 | 6.722 | 6.474 | 4.205 |
| | Crew | 429 | 406 | 297 | 234 | 318 | 189 |
| Uruguayana | Vessels | 114 | 30 | 65 | 65 | 196 | 98 |
| | Tons | 1.667 | 468 | 928 | 928 | 2.453 | 1.304 |
| | Crew | 381 | 110 | 270 | 270 | 786 | 578 |
| Santos | Vessels | 75 | 72 | 102 | 153 | * 96 | * 111 |
| | Tons | 30.017 | 28.745 | 62.128 | 78.606 | * 43.832 | * 49.363 |
| | Crew | 854 | 807 | 2.046 | 2.283 | * 1.297 | * 1.381 |
| Paranaguá | Vessels | 69 | 97 | 62 | 110 | 49 | 99 |
| | Tons | 21.514 | 26.421 | 16.049 | 29.196 | 14.548 | 29.293 |
| | Crew | 600 | 713 | 392 | 736 | 333 | 723 |
| Antonina | Vessels | 1 | 19 | ..... | 24 | * 1 | * 19 |
| | Tons | 222 | 4.946 | ..... | 6.379 | * 277 | * 5.065 |
| | Crew | 7 | 151 | ..... | 205 | * 9 | * 157 |
| Parahyba | Vessels | 57 | 54 | 47 | 49 | 28 | 27 |
| | Tons | 23.298 | 22.715 | 17.113 | 18.126 | 10.423 | 9.933 |
| | Crew | 658 | 612 | 482 | 518 | 318 | 303 |
| Ceará | Vessels | 53 | 53 | 59 | 59 | * 49 | * 51 |
| | Tons | 22,853 | 22.853 | 32.706 | 32.706 | * 22.823 | * 22.956 |
| | Crew | 808 | 808 | 1.148 | 1.148 | * 825 | * 736 |
| Santa-Catharina | Vessels | 68 | 42 | 82 | 59 | 54 | 39 |
| | Tons | 16.970 | 11.648 | 20.493 | 16.137 | 10.558 | 8.192 |
| | Crew | 679 | 456 | 907 | 628 | 518 | 356 |
| Alagôas | Vessels | 71 | 74 | 68 | 69 | 59 | 61 |
| | Tons | 33.975 | 36.144 | 32.773 | 33.044 | 22.307 | 23.873 |
| | Crew | 898 | 943 | 812 | 785 | 607 | 646 |
| Sergipe | Vessels | 39 | 39 | 26 | 26 | * 33 | * 34 |
| | Tons | 9.843 | 10.040 | 5.960 | 5.583 | * 8.272 | * 8.444 |
| | Crew | 217 | 281 | 163 | 165 | * 208 | * 238 |
| Espirito-Santo | Vessels | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | * 1 | * 1 |
| | Tons | 385 | 592 | 373 | 606 | * 356 | * 600 |
| | Crew | 11 | 17 | 11 | 17 | * 10 | * 17 |
| Rio-Grande do Norte | Vessels | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 36 | 40 |
| | Tons | 385 | 592 | 373 | 606 | 8.934 | 10.162 |
| | Crew | 11 | 17 | 11 | 17 | 371 | 399 |
| Piauhy | Vessels | 44 | 44 | 40 | 38 | * 42 | * 41 |
| | Tons | 8.512 | 8.512 | 7.255 | 6.950 | * 7.865 | * 7.640 |
| | Crew | 367 | 367 | 338 | 334 | 342 | 314 |
| Brasilian vessels | Vessels | 113 | 169 | 152 | 145 | 162 | 158 |
| | Tons | 37.371 | 28.733 | 28.876 | 24.521 | 31.589 | 31.054 |
| | Crew | 1.075 | 1.718 | 1.203 | 1.144 | 1.382 | 1.411 |
| Foreign vessels | Vessels | 3.588 | 2.969 | 3.388 | 3.070 | 3.285 | 2.902 |
| | Tons | 1.376.181 | 1.366.720 | 1.407.198 | 1.554.491 | 1.461.816 | 1.437.453 |
| | Crew | 54.549 | 43.182 | 53.840 | 51.002 | 60.822 | 50.044 |
| Total | Vessels | 3.701 | 3.138 | 3.540 | 3.215 | 3.447 | 3.060 |
| | Tons | 1.403.552 | 1.395.453 | 1.436.074 | 1.579.012 | 1.493.405 | 1.468.507 |
| | Crew | 55.624 | 44.900 | 55.043 | 52.146 | 62.204 | 51.455 |

Observation. — The quantities designated with an asterisk, thus *, were calculated on the mean of the 3 last financial years, as is practised, by reason of the respective custom-houses not having sent the tables up to this date.

# Table of the coasting navigation of the Empire. Financial years of 1868 to 1871.

| Provinces | Distinctions | 1868—1869 | | 1869—1870 | | 1870—1871 | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Entries | Departures | Entries | Departures | Entries | Departures |
| Rio de Janeiro | Vessels | 1.158 | 1.259 | 1.058 | 1.402 | 195 | 1.256 |
| | Tons | 214.016 | 261.857 | 212.771 | 348.005 | 234.510 | 304.013 |
| | Crew | 12.568 | 12.446 | 14.979 | 17.420 | 14.669 | 15.856 |
| Bahia | Vessels | 431 | 460 | 467 | 516 | 390 | 373 |
| | Tons | 123.783 | 152.634 | 126.112 | 158.096 | 121.505 | 120.098 |
| | Crew | 6.921 | 6.379 | 7.458 | 7.909 | 7.078 | 6.735 |
| Pernambuco | Vessels | 1.208 | 1.051 | 1.412 | 1.318 | * 1.296 | * 1.124 |
| | Tons | 124.231 | 114.488 | 175.810 | 145.782 | * 143.264 | * 128.100 |
| | Crew | 9.632 | 7.945 | 12.052 | 11.323 | * 10.626 | * 9.200 |
| Maranhão | Vessels | 99 | 99 | 115 | 122 | 110 | 123 |
| | Tons | 53.023 | 53.028 | 61.131 | 67.565 | 58.457 | 68.741 |
| | Crew | 3.106 | 3.204 | 3.763 | 3.723 | 3.779 | 3.974 |
| Pará | Vessels | 82 | 80 | 125 | 103 | * 95 | * 86 |
| | Tons | 30.577 | 29.661 | 61.517 | 56.691 | * 40.316 | * 38.164 |
| | Crew | 2.996 | 2.880 | 4.169 | 3.995 | * 3.310 | * 3.184 |
| Rio-Grande do Sul | Vessels | 191 | 218 | 163 | 251 | 219 | 921 |
| | Tons | 37.784 | 45.778 | 33.148 | 49.694 | 44.529 | 45.901 |
| | Crew | 2.028 | 1.966 | 1.329 | 2.005 | 1.786 | 1.731 |
| São-José do Norte | Vessels | 9 | 10 | 5 | 10 | ..... | 4 |
| | Tons. | 1.602 | 2.315 | 823 | 2.122 | ..... | 767 |
| | Crew | 64 | 83 | 37 | 72 | ..... | 27 |
| Porto-Alegre | Vessels | 89 | 72 | 51 | 59 | 55 | 52 |
| | Tons | 16.221 | 13.149 | 9.598 | 10.925 | 10.163 | 9.691 |
| | Crew | 969 | 794 | 470 | 523 | 589 | 550 |
| Santos | Vessels | 176 | 111 | 92 | 92 | * 151 | * 105 |
| | Tons | 40.329 | 21.672 | 36.065 | 36.394 | * 39.430 | * 25.984 |
| | Crew | 3.092 | 1.385 | 954 | 976 | * 2.477 | * 1.252 |
| Paranaguá | Vessels | 168 | 121 | 186 | 134 | 212 | 160 |
| | Tons | 29.172 | 17.757 | 20.239 | 12.195 | 33.087 | 18.571 |
| | Crew | 1.568 | 1.224 | 1.441 | 1.109 | 1.980 | 1.551 |
| Antonina | Vessels | 12 | 6 | 54 | 33 | * 30 | * 18 |
| | Tons | 2.302 | 694 | 8.793 | 3.341 | * 5.118 | * 1.928 |
| | Crew | 104 | 35 | 364 | 192 | * 209 | * 106 |
| Parahyba | Vessels | 184 | 207 | 313 | 312 | 244 | 246 |
| | Tons | 65.540 | 67.210 | 75.108 | 75.058 | 64.661 | 64.581 |
| | Crew | 4.600 | 4.701 | 5.514 | 5.514 | 4.872 | 4.848 |
| Ceará | Vessels | 118 | 118 | 125 | 125 | * 115 | * 115 |
| | Tons | 82.612 | 82.612 | 66.000 | 66.000 | * 68.497 | * 68.508 |
| | Crew | 5.158 | 5.158 | 4.618 | 4.618 | * 4.443 | * 4.446 |
| Santa-Catharina | Vessels | 69 | 78 | 86 | 88 | 109 | 106 |
| | Tons | 10.153 | 13.016 | 12.264 | 16.872 | 15.254 | 15.880 |
| | Crew | 465 | 642 | 666 | 616 | 830 | 738 |
| Alagôas | Vessels | 261 | 132 | 277 | 156 | 366 | 262 |
| | Tons | 79.916 | 53.833 | 88.335 | 65.133 | 123.389 | 96.342 |
| | Crew | 5.679 | 3.935 | 6.613 | 4.406 | 8.560 | 6.816 |
| Sergipe | Vessels | 188 | 178 | 39 | 39 | * 140 | * 133 |
| | Tons | 54.448 | 52.438 | 9.714 | 10.033 | * 38.961 | * 37.406 |
| | Crew | 3.154 | 3.068 | 247 | 276 | * 2.063 | * 1.987 |
| Espirito-Santo | Vessels | 62 | 58 | 81 | 75 | * 69 | * 64 |
| | Tons | 8.126 | 7.254 | 10.852 | 9.754 | * 9.232 | * 8.658 |
| | Crew | 732 | 673 | 1.058 | 915 | * 864 | * 777 |
| Rio-Grande do Norte | Vessels | 136 | 88 | 214 | 121 | 123 | 65 |
| | Tons | 45.712 | 41.066 | 72.428 | 57.811 | 38.293 | 24.888 |
| | Crew | 2.784 | 2.503 | 4.916 | 4.264 | 3.593 | 2.402 |
| Piauhy | Vessels | 41 | 41 | 40 | 38 | * 52 | * 51 |
| | Tons | 11.640 | 11.640 | 7.255 | 6.950 | * 10.467 | * 10.199 |
| | Crew | 350 | 350 | 338 | 334 | * 715 | * 714 |
| Total | Vessels | 4.682 | 4.387 | 4.903 | 4.994 | 4.880 | 4.564 |
| | Tons | 1.031.187 | 1.042.102 | 1.091.013 | 1.198.426 | 1.099.133 | 1.088.420 |
| | Crew | 66.470 | 58.874 | 70.986 | 70.190 | 72.443 | 66.983 |

Observation. — The quantities designated with an asterisk, thus *, were calculated on the mean of the 3 last financial years, as is practised by reason of the respective custom-houses not having sent the tables up to this date.

## Table of the army force, indicating the places in which the different corps are located and embracing the special corps.

| Arms | Corps | Officers | Men | Total | Where stationed |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Special corps | General-Staff | 29 | ..... | 29 | In the capital and province of Rio de Janeiro. |
| | Engineers | 56 | ..... | 56 | |
| | Staff 1st class | 48 | ..... | 48 | |
| | Staff 2nd class | 58 | ..... | 58 | |
| | Staff of artillery | 44 | ..... | 44 | |
| | Ecclesiastical Department | 24 | ..... | 24 | |
| | Surgeons of the army | 103 | .... . | 103 | |
| | Total | 362 | ..... | 362 | |
| Artillery | 1 battalion of engineers | 69 | 643 | 712 | In the capital of the Empire. |
| | 1 regiment of horse-artillery | 36 | 493 | 529 | In the province of Rio-Grande do Sul. |
| | 5 battalions of foot-artillery | 138 | 1.867 | 2.005 | 1st and 5th in the capital of the Empire, 2d in the province of Matto-Grosso, 3d in that of Amazonas, 4th in Paraguay. |
| | Total | 243 | 3.003 | 3.246 | |
| Cavalry | 5 regiments of light cavalry | 174 | 1.442 | 1.616 | 1st in the capital of the Empire, 3d, 4th and 5th in the province of Rio-Grande do Sul, 2d in Paraguay. |
| | 2 corps of cavalry | 42 | 541 | 583 | In the provinces of Matto-Grosso and Goyaz. |
| | 1 squadron | 5 | 68 | 73 | In the province of Paraná. |
| | 4 garrison companies | 18 | 176 | 194 | In the provinces of Bahia, Pernambuco, Minas Geraes and São-Paulo. |
| | Total | 239 | 2.227 | 2.466 | |
| Infantry | 21 battalions of infantry | 618 | 8.666 | 3.281 | 1st and 7th in the capital of the Empire, 18th in the province of Bahia, 2d and 9th in that of Pernambuco, 5th in that of Maranhão, 11th in that of Pará, 14th in that of Ceará, 19th, 20th and 21st in that of Matto-Grosso, 3d, 4th, 6th, 12th and 13th in that of Rio-Grande do Sul, 8th, 14th, 15th, 16th, and 17th in the republic of Paraguay. |
| | 8 garrison companies | 54 | 830 | 884 | In the provinces of Alagôas, Espirito-Santo, Rio-Grande do Norte, Parahyba, Sergipe, Piauhy, São-Paulo and Santa-Catharina. |
| | Total | 672 | 6.496 | 10.168 | |
| | General total | 1.516 | 14.726 | 16.242 | |

